This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project
to make the world’s books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject
to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books
are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that’s often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book’s long journey from the
publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the
public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to
prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ Make non-commercial use of the files We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for
  personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google’s system: If you are conducting research on machine
  translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the
  use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ Maintain attribution The Google “watermark” you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find
  additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ Keep it legal Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just
  because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other
  countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can’t offer guidance on whether any specific use of
  any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book’s appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner
  anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google’s mission is to organize the world’s information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers
discover the world’s books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web
A THEORETICAL AND PRACTICAL GRAMMAR OF THE FRENCH TONGUE:

IN WHICH THE PRESENT USAGE IS DISPLAYED,

AND ALL THE PRINCIPAL DIFFICULTIES EXPLAINED AGREEABLY TO THE DECISIONS OF THE FRENCH ACADEMY.

TO WHICH ARE ADDED SOME SELECT FAMILIAR PHRASES ON THE PRINCIPAL DIFFICULTIES AND NICETIES OF THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

BY M. DE LÉVIZAC.

FIRST AMERICAN, FROM THE THIRD FRENCH EDITION, CAREFULLY CORRECTED, REVISED, AND IMPROVED WITH THE ADDITION OF A TREATISE ON FRENCH VERIFICATION.

BY G. HAMONIERE.

NEW-YORK: PRINTED FOR COLLINS & CO. 139 PEARL-STREET.

1820.
ADVERTISEMENT.

A Grammar, written by an author so advantageously known as M. de LEVIZAC, could not fail of being favourably received by the public; and many considerable editions, published in England have had a rapid sale. All the principles contained in it are sanctioned by the authority of the French Academy and of the excellent Grammarians, who for a century past have laboured to give fixed rules to the French language. This advantage joined to another, which is that all the phrases given at examples, or exercises, are extracted from the Dictionary of the French Academy, or the works of the best authors, gives it a decided superiority over all the French Grammars hitherto published for the use of Englishmen. We have made no alteration in M. de Lévizac's work as to the plan; we have only made a few corrections.
which appeared to us to be necessary; and in order to render it as complete as possible, we have added a Treatise on French Versification. We have bestowed also the greatest care in correcting the text, that this edition may give perfect satisfaction, and prove far superior to all those that have preceded it, in that so important a part of an elementary work.
THE SOUNDS
OF THE
FRENCH TONGUE;
OR
A FRENCH SPELLING BOOK.

THE ALPHABET.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Roman Letters</th>
<th>Italic Letters</th>
<th>Old Pro.</th>
<th>New Pro</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>ah</td>
<td>ah</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>B</td>
<td>b</td>
<td>bay</td>
<td>be†</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C</td>
<td>c</td>
<td>say</td>
<td>ke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>D</td>
<td>d</td>
<td>day</td>
<td>de</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>E</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>F</td>
<td>f</td>
<td>esse</td>
<td>fe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G</td>
<td>g</td>
<td>jay*</td>
<td>ghe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>H</td>
<td>h</td>
<td>ash</td>
<td>ha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>J</td>
<td>j</td>
<td>jee*</td>
<td>je*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>K</td>
<td>k</td>
<td>kah</td>
<td>ke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L</td>
<td>l</td>
<td>elle</td>
<td>le</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>M</td>
<td>m</td>
<td>emme</td>
<td>me</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>N</td>
<td>n</td>
<td>enne</td>
<td>ne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>O</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>P</td>
<td>p</td>
<td>pay</td>
<td>pe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Q</td>
<td>q</td>
<td>ku†</td>
<td>ko</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>R</td>
<td>r</td>
<td>erre</td>
<td>re</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S</td>
<td>s</td>
<td>esse</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>T</td>
<td>t</td>
<td>tay</td>
<td>te</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>U</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>u†</td>
<td>u†</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>V</td>
<td>v</td>
<td>vay</td>
<td>ve</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>X</td>
<td>x</td>
<td>eekve</td>
<td>kse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Y</td>
<td>y</td>
<td>e grec</td>
<td>e grec</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Z</td>
<td>z</td>
<td>zaud</td>
<td>ze</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* The two consonants g and j are sounded in the Alphabet like s in 'pleasure' or z in 'azure'.
† See the second note, page 3.
‡ In the new pronunciation a after each consonant is sounded, as in the English word 'battery.'
GENERAL OBSERVATIONS.

The twenty-five letters of the Alphabet are divided into Vowels and Consonants. There are five vowels, a, e, i, o, u, besides y, which is sounded sometimes like one single i, and sometimes like ui. All the other letters are consonants.

A vowel is a simple sound, formed by one single emission of the voice; and consequently a vowel makes a full and perfect sound by itself.

A consonant is an articulation, or a peculiar pronunciation, which cannot be sounded without the collision of a vowel.

We distinctly hear in the French language other simple sounds than those represented by the above five signs of vowels, according as these are long or short, or marked with accents; which gives ten simple sounds represented by the five vowels. There are besides three other simple sounds represented by two vowels; and, lastly, four vowels called nasal, represented by a vowel and the consonants m or n. Those seventeen simple sounds will be found in the Table of the following page.

There are three accents in French: the acute ('), the grave ('), and the circumflex ('').

The first is only found over the vowel e; the second over a, e, u; and the third over the five vowels.

The three vowels, e, i, u, are also marked with a double dot, thus, é, è, ù, which signifies that they are pronounced distinct from the preceding vowel.

Besides the simple sounds, there are compound ones, in which two sounds are distinctly heard by a single emission of the voice: they are called dip-thongs.

The sound of one or more letters, pronounced with a single emission of the voice, is called a syllable. One or more syllables form a word.
Table I.

The seventeen simple sounds of the French Tongue.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sounds</th>
<th>Examples</th>
<th>Sounded as</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a short</td>
<td>ami</td>
<td>friend</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>à long</td>
<td>bas</td>
<td>stockings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e</td>
<td>tenir</td>
<td>to hold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>é</td>
<td>été</td>
<td>summer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>è</td>
<td>modèle</td>
<td>model</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>e (1)</td>
<td>tête</td>
<td>head</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i</td>
<td>imiter</td>
<td>to imitate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>o short</td>
<td>école</td>
<td>school</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ô long</td>
<td>côté</td>
<td>rib</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>u</td>
<td>vertu</td>
<td>virtue</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eu short</td>
<td>jeune</td>
<td>young</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eû long</td>
<td>jeûne</td>
<td>fast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ou</td>
<td>boule</td>
<td>bowl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an</td>
<td>ange</td>
<td>angel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in</td>
<td>butin</td>
<td>booty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>on</td>
<td>bonté</td>
<td>goodness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>un</td>
<td>brun</td>
<td>brown</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(1) Besides these four e's, there is one entirely mute at the end, and sometimes in the middle of words, as in the above words, modèle, tête, école, côté, &c.

(2) U has no similar sound in English, and must be learned from the master. Nevertheless its pronunciation may be rendered very easy by this observation: pronounce first e as in the English, and then, without the least change in the position of your organs, but simply closing the lips a little, you will articulate the sound u.

(3) This double vowel is pronounced by the same motion of the organs as the French u, only not closing so much the lips.

(4) The similar sounds given for the nasal vowels are not exactly alike, as the n is not sounded at all in French, but their pronunciation is effected by a simple aspiration through the nose, without the least motion of the tongue; therefore they must be heard from the master.

N. B.—The figures in the two following tables relate to the above seventeen simple sounds.
## EXERCISES UPON THE FIRST TABLE.

**Words of one Syllable, or Monosyllables.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gras</td>
<td>fat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ma</td>
<td>my</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ta</td>
<td>thy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sa</td>
<td>his, her</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la</td>
<td>the, her, it</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pas</td>
<td>step</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>un plat</td>
<td>a dish</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bac</td>
<td>ferry-boat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sac</td>
<td>sack, bag</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arc</td>
<td>arch, bow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>parc</td>
<td>park</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bal</td>
<td>ball</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cap</td>
<td>cape</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>car</td>
<td>for</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>par</td>
<td>by, through</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>part</td>
<td>share</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>art</td>
<td>art</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>char</td>
<td>chariot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dard</td>
<td>dart</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lard</td>
<td>bacon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tard</td>
<td>late</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quand</td>
<td>when</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rang</td>
<td>rank</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blain</td>
<td>white</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sans</td>
<td>without</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dans</td>
<td>in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gland</td>
<td>acorn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pan</td>
<td>lappet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cran</td>
<td>notch</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plant</td>
<td>plantation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>plan</td>
<td>plan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>flanc</td>
<td>flanc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grand</td>
<td>great</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eu</td>
<td>in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il fend</td>
<td>he splits</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gens</td>
<td>people</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>leut</td>
<td>slow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il ment</td>
<td>he lies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il pend</td>
<td>he hangs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il prend</td>
<td>he takes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il rend</td>
<td>he returns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il sent</td>
<td>he smells, feels—fils</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ja vends</td>
<td>I sell</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

*I me not thee this, that himself, &c. the, him, it breath born my. pl. thy. pl. his, her, pl. she, them meadow near ready worm towards green he loses he serves fear tears salt such which dry break chief short new East twenty horse-hair sprig pine wine son fried*
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>french</th>
<th>english</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ils</td>
<td>his</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pris</td>
<td>prise</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- prix</td>
<td>- price</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- ris</td>
<td>- rise</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- ni</td>
<td>neither, nor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- nid</td>
<td>nest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- si</td>
<td>if</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- il</td>
<td>he</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- fit</td>
<td>did</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- mis</td>
<td>put</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- plis</td>
<td>plies</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- fil</td>
<td>fold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- vil</td>
<td>vile</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- vil</td>
<td>lively</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- sol</td>
<td>soul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- têt</td>
<td>soon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- clos</td>
<td>shut up</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- nos</td>
<td>our</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- vos</td>
<td>your</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- gros</td>
<td>big</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- trop</td>
<td>too much</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- trot</td>
<td>trot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- croc</td>
<td>hook</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- or</td>
<td>gold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- bord</td>
<td>edge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- fort</td>
<td>very</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- fort</td>
<td>strong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- fort</td>
<td>wrong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- je sors</td>
<td>go out</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- il sort</td>
<td>he goes out</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- port</td>
<td>port</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- il mord</td>
<td>he bites</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- voi</td>
<td>thief</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- echoc</td>
<td>shock</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- roe</td>
<td>rock</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- bloc</td>
<td>block</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- troc</td>
<td>exchange</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- dot</td>
<td>dowry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- on</td>
<td>one, people, they cou</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- bon</td>
<td>good</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- ton</td>
<td>thy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- son</td>
<td>his, her</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- ils sont</td>
<td>they are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- mon</td>
<td>my</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- don</td>
<td>gift</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- dont</td>
<td>of which, &amp;c.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- done</td>
<td>therefore</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- front</td>
<td>forehead</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>french</th>
<th>pronunciation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>- road</td>
<td>round</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- right (hair)</td>
<td>bridge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- long</td>
<td>long</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- bottom</td>
<td>they do</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- rush</td>
<td>no</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- hinge</td>
<td>name</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- lead</td>
<td>naked</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- of the, ring.</td>
<td>he owed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- daughter-in-law</td>
<td>rough</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- he drank</td>
<td>raw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- he believed</td>
<td>I was</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- juice</td>
<td>read</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- he read</td>
<td>more</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- thou</td>
<td>seen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- seen</td>
<td>flux</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- bird-lime</td>
<td>duke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- juice</td>
<td>upon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- wall</td>
<td>no, none</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- end</td>
<td>you</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- we, us</td>
<td>you</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- nail</td>
<td>neck</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- blow, stroke</td>
<td>hole</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- hole</td>
<td>soft</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- all</td>
<td>louse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- yard</td>
<td>it rains</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>- little, few</td>
<td>he is willing</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Sounds

**TABLE II.**

**Coalition of Letters representing several of the Seventeen simple sounds.**

| Simple sounds represented by examples. |  
|--------------------------------------|----------------|
| 1 a                                   | eau            |
| 1 e                                   | il gagea       |
| 2 a                                   | aigu           |
| 2 e                                   | aiggi          |
| 3 ai                                  | année          |
| 3 è                                   | essophago      |
| 4 aie                                 | aide           |
| 4 e                                   | asophagus      |
| 5 ai                                  | bois           |
| 5 e                                   | bay            |
| 5 eoi                                 | baleine        |
| 6 ai                                  | je nageais     |
| 6 e                                   | I did swim     |
| 6 eoi                                 | foible         |
| 6 eio                                 | weak           |
| 7 i                                   | monnöie        |
| 7 i                                    | money          |
| 7 j                                    | aîné           |
| 7 je                                   | eldest         |
| 7 jeo                                 | paroître       |
| 7 jeo                                  | to appear      |
| 8 o                                    | sole           |
| 8 o                                    | folly          |
| 8 ou                                  | aurore         |
| 8 ou                                   | dawn           |
| 9 a                                    | marteau        |
| 9 e                                    | flageole       |
| 9 eau                                 | auteur         |
| 9 eau                                  | author         |
| 9 eo                                  | geole          |
| 9 eoe                                 | goal           |
| 10 u                                   | gageure        |
| 10 u                                   | wager          |
| 10 uoe                                | eue f.         |
| 10 uoe                                 | had            |
| 11 eu                                   | laitue         |
| 11 eu                                  | lettuce        |
| 12 eù                                   | eue            |
| 12 eù                                  | queue          |
| 13 ou                                   | eue            |
| 13 ou                                   | il joue        |
| 13 ou                                   | he plays       |
| 13 oue                                 | aou            |
| 13 oue                                 | August         |
| 14 an                                   | jambe          |
| 14 an                                  | leg            |
| 14 em                                   | affligeant     |
| 14 en                                   | afflicting     |
| 14 en                                   | membre         |
| 14 en                                   | member         |
| 15 an                                   | entendre       |
| 15 ain                                  | to hear        |
| 15 ain                                  | esaim          |
| 15 ain                                  | swarm          |
| 16 on                                   | crainte        |
| 16 on                                   | fear           |
| 16 on                                   | peinture       |
| 16 on                                   | picture        |
| 17 un                                   | impoli         |
| 17 un                                   | unpoltie       |
| 17 un                                   | symbole        |
| 17 un                                   | symbol         |
| 17 un                                   | syntaxe        |
| 17 un                                   | syntax         |
| 17 un                                   | pigeon         |
| 17 un                                   | pigeon         |
| 17 un                                   | ombre          |
| 17 un                                   | shade          |
| 17 un                                   | à jeun         |
| 17 un                                   | fasting        |
| 17 un                                   | parfum         |
| 17 un                                   | perfume        |
Of the French Tongue.

Words of two Syllables.

| A-bus | abuse | black pudding |
| A-cord | agreement | nosegay |
| A-chat | purchase | bud |
| Ac-te | act | hangman |
| Ac-teur | actor | surly |
| Ac-tif | active | burning coals |
| Â-ge | age | brewer |
| A-gent | agent | brave, gallant |
| Ai-greur | acidity | bridle |
| Ai-le | wing | robber |
| Ai-se | glad | brick |
| Â-me | soul | brush |
| An-neau | ring | blunt |
| Ar-dent | ardent | brute |
| Ar-deur | arduur | cupboard |
| Ar-gent | money | office |
| Ar-me | arm | bust |
| As-tre | star | cable |
| Au-cun | none | present |
| Av-ru | confession | sun-dial |
| A-vis | advice | frame |
| Au-ne | ell | coffee |
| An-tel | altar | cage |
| Au-tre | other | jolt |
| Ba-laï | broom | case |
| Bal-oëna | balcony | crab-fish |
| Ban-de | band | cane |
| Ban-que | bank | cannon |
| Bar-re | cap-tif | captive |
| Bar-que | great boat | carp |
| Ba-teau | boat | cellar |
| Bâ-ton | stick | cause |
| Bau-det | jack-ass | centre |
| Beau-té | beauty | cle |
| Bê-gue | stammerer | truly |
| Ber-ger | shepherd | cider |
| Bê-te | beast | cement |
| Beur-re | butter | chisel |
| Bi-bie | bible | city |
| Bi-bo | ble | class |
| Biâ-me | blame | element |
| Bon-heur | happiness | clergy |
| Bon-té | goodness | climate |
| Bor-ne | boundary | partition |
| Bos-quet | thicket | crowd |
| col-le | paste | dis cours | speech |
| com-mun | common | dor-meur | sleeper |
| compas | compasses | dou-ble | double |
| com-plot | plot | dou-ceur | mildness |
| com-te | earl | dou-lenr | pain |
| con-cert | concert | du-ché | dukeedom |
| con-gé | holiday | écrit | writing |
| con-te | tale | é-en | crown |
| con-trat | contract | ef-fet | effect |
| co-pie | copy | en-clin | inclined |
| co-quim | rogue | en-faut | child |
| cor-de | rope | en-vie | envy |
| cor-deau | line | é-pi | ear of corn |
| cor-don | string | é-poux | spouse |
| cô-té | side | es-pion | spy |
| cou-ple | couple | es-poir | hope |
| cou-rant | current | es-sal | trial |
| cou-reur | runner | é-tain | pester |
| cou-sin | cushion | é-tat | state |
| cou-vent | convent | ex-rés | excess |
| cram pe | cramp | fa-ble | fable |
| cra-paud | toad | fa-ce | face |
| cré-dit | credit | far-ce | farce |
| cré-me | cream | far-til | fatal |
| cri-me | crime | fa-veur | favour |
| cris-tal | crystal | fau-te | fault |
| cro-té | dirt | fer-me | furm |
| cro-té | dirty | fes-tin | feast |
| crou-te | crust | fê-te | festival day |
| da-me | lady | fi-lou | net |
| dan-ger | danger | fla-con | pickpocket |
| dan-seur | dancer | flam-beau | decanter |
| da-te | date | flat-leur | flatterer |
| dé-bat | contest | fleu-ve | river |
| dé-bit | sale | flo-té | fleet |
| de-bout | upright | flûte- | flute |
| dé-lai | delay | for-ce | strength |
| dé-lit | crime | fo-rét | forest |
| de-mi | half | for-me | form |
| dé-pit | spite | fos-se | pit |
| dé-pot | deposit | fou-dre | thunderbolt |
| dé-sert | wilderness | fou-le | erode |
| dé-sir | wish | four-mi | ani |
| des-sein | intent | frau-de | fraud |
| des-sert | desert | frè-re | brother |
| det-te | debt | fri-pon | knave |
| dé-vot | godly | fra-ment | wheat |
Of the French Tongue.

- fur-reur  fury  hor-reur  horror
- gai-te  cheerfulness  ho-te  landlord
- gal-ne  sheath  ho-tel  hotel
- gar-con  boy  hu-main  human
- gar-de  guard  im-pie  impious
- gat-tean  sake  jam-bon  ham
- gau-fré  wafer  jar-din  garden
- ge-zon  turf  jar-gon  giberish
- gen-dre  son-in-law  jas-min  jasmine
- gê-nie  genius  jour-nal  newspaper
- gen-re  gender  ju-go  judge
- ges-te  gesture  jour-née  day
- gi-bet  gallows  lai-deur  ugliness
- gi-got  leg of mutton  lai-ua  wool
- gla-ce  ice  lai-neux  woolly
- gla-con  piece of ice  lai-teux  milky
- glo-be  globe  lam-pe  lamp
- gom-me  gum  lan-ce  spear
- gou-té  luncheon  la-quais  foostman
- gout-te  drop  lar-cin  theft
- grâ-ce  favour  lar-guer  breadth
- gra-de  degree  lar-me  tear
- gran-deur  greatness  li-queur  liquor
- gran-ge  born  lis-te  list
- grap-pe  bunch of grapes  lo-cal  local
g-veal  grave  lo-gis  dwelling
- gron-deur  grumbler  lon-gueur  length
- gros-seur  bigness  mai-tre  master
- grou-pe  group  ma-le  male
- gru-au  oatmeal  mai-hom  misfortune
- guê-re  little  ma-le  mail, trunk
- guer-re  war  ma-rais  marsh
- gueu-le  mouth of a beast  mar-bre  marble
- gui-de  guide  mar-chand  tradesman
- thai-ne  hatred  ma-ri  husband
- the-le  market-hall  men-teur  bar
- thar-pe  harp  mé-pris  contempt
- thâ-te  haste  mè-re  mother
- than-teur  height  meu-ble  furniture
- tha-sard  chance  mi-ne  look
- her-be  herb  mo-de  fashion
- the-tre  beech  mon-de  world
- hom-me  man  mons-tre  monster
- hon-neur  honour  mot-te  colt
- thon-te  shame  mou-le  mould

† This mark placed before words beginning with a indicates that it is aspirated.
The Sounds

moulin  mill  po-tee
mois  moss  po-teeau
na-tif  native  pour-pre
mi-gaud  silly fellow  present
nom-bre  number  prince
nouveau  new  prison
odeur  smell  scheme
oeuvre  work  prime
efre  offer  pu-ce
en-ce  ounce  race
en-guent  ointment  ragout
ordre  order  reason
or-ge  barley  real
or-me  elm-tree  refusal
ou-bli  oblivion  look
seul  hem  rule
pege  page  reign
oze  pair  regret
pour  bundle  queen
pa-ren  pardon  annuity
par-fait  relation  meal
par-rain  perfect  rest
pat-te  godfather  spring
pate  dough  rest
pate  pie  delay
pavement  paw  dream
pere  dancing  laughing
peche  fishing  rival
pedant  sin  rose
pecheur  fisherman  road
pecheur  sinner  rough
pe-dant  pedant  stick
pe-ne  trouble  brave
peintre  painter  parlour
per-le  father  salute
peste  pearl  deal
pes-te  plague  satin
peu-ple  people  sauce
peu-reux  fearful  salmon
pin-te  pint  tumbler
place  place  soap
plaisir  pleasure  residence
plaisir  jouir  oath
plante  plant  sermon
plume  feather  snake
po-lis  polite  signal
por-de  door  sign
por-te  picture  soldier
Of the French Tongue.

- som-bre  
- som-me  
- son-ge  
- son-die  
- sou-hait  
- sou-pe  
- sou-per  
- sou-pir  
- sour-ce  
- sou-ris  
- splen-deur  
- su-cre  
- sujet  
- sus-pect  
- ta-bleau  
- ta-che  
- tâ-che  
- tam-bour  
- tan-te  
- tar-te  
- tas-se  
- temple  
- ten-te  
- tom-be  

dark  
sun  
dream  
breath  
wish  
soup  
supper  
sigh  
spring  
smile  
splendour  
sugar  
subject  
suspicious  
picture  
spot  
task  
drum  
avnt  
tart  
cup  
temple  
tent  
tomb  
tom-beau  
to-me  
ton-neau  
ton-pie  
tour-ment  
tour-neur  
tra-cas  
tra-ce  
tra-fic  
tra-nil  
tra-pe  
trö-oe  
trou-pe  
tron-peau  
ty-ran  
veu-ve  
vi-de  
vi-gne  
vil-le  
vi-te  
vi-lre  
vo-let  
zè-le  
zè-lé  
tom-beau  
tom-beau  
to-me  
ton-neau  
ton-pie  
tour-ment  
tour-neur  
tra-cas  
tra-ce  
tra-fic  
tra-nil  
tra-pe  
trö-oe  
trou-pe  
tron-peau  
ty-ran  
veu-ve  
vi-de  
vi-gne  
vil-le  
vi-te  
vi-lre  
vo-let  
zè-le  
zè-lé  
grave  
volume  
tum  
top  
tortment  
turner  
bustle  
footstep  
trade  
sledge  
trap-door  
trons  
troop  
flock  
tyrant  
widow  
empty  
vine  
tomm  
fast  
pane of glass  
shutter  
seal  
sealous

OBSERVATIONS

Upon the two first Tables.

Am, an, do not take the nasal sound when m or n are doubled, as in constamment, année. Am is not nasal at the end of some foreign names, as Abraham, Roboam; except Adam, which has the nasal sound.

Em and en are articulated, as in to hem, men:

1st. In the words taken from foreign languages; as Jerusalem, item, hymen, &c. and also in décemvirat, décemvir, empené, (the first syllable is nasal) étrenner, ennemi, moyennant, and pennage.

2dly. In the verbs venir, and tenir, and their compounds, que je vienne, qu’il tienne.

3dly. In words ending in éne or enne; as arène, qu’il prenne.
The Sounds

En takes the sound of the nasal vowels im, in, &c. in examen, in adjectives ending in éen, as européen, galiléen, and in some proper names, as Mentor, Ruben, Benjamin.

Em and en are sounded like a short in femme, hon- nir, solennel, and their derivatives, and in adverbs in emment; as différemment.

Aen is sounded like an in Caen, a town of Normandy.

Aon has the same sound in Laon, a town in France, faon, fawn, and paon, peacock.

N' in en preposition, and in en pronoun placed before the verb, is always sounded when the following word begins with a vowel, or h mute; as en Italie, je n'en ai point. It is the same with the adverbs bien and rien; as il est bien élevé, il n'a rien oublié.

Im and in are sounded without a nasal sound.

1st. In proper names taken from foreign languages; as Selim, Ephraim. However, the nasal sound is preserved in Benjamin, Joachim, and practice alone can here direct.

2dly. In the middle of words where m or n is followed by a vowel or h mute; as inanimé, inhumain.

3dly. Whenever m and n are doubled; as immoler, innocent, and then only one m or n is sounded.

The nasal sound is not preserved in the pronoun on placed before a verb, and in the adjectives placed before substantives, beginning with a vowel or h mute; as, on arrive, mon ami, bon homme.

Aon is sounded like on in taon, ox-fly, which must not be confounded with thou, tonny, a sort of fish.

Un preserves the sound of a short, when n is followed by e mute, or connected with the following vowel; as une, unième, un homme, un esprit, aucun ami.

Um is pronounced as om, without nasal sound, in some words derivated from the Latin; as centumoirs, géranium, laudanum.
### TABLE III.

#### The Diphthongs.

Simple sounds represented by examples.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>7</th>
<th>i</th>
<th>ia</th>
<th>fisere</th>
<th>hackney-coach</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 or 2</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>ia</td>
<td>galmatics</td>
<td>nonsense</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>iai</td>
<td>je défini</td>
<td>I challenged</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>ié</td>
<td>amitié</td>
<td>friendship</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>iai</td>
<td>bisai</td>
<td>slope</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>ié</td>
<td>bière</td>
<td>beer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>ciel</td>
<td>heaven</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>iau</td>
<td>mialer</td>
<td>to mean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 or 9</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>io</td>
<td>violon</td>
<td>violin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>iu</td>
<td>reliure</td>
<td>binding</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>ieu</td>
<td>relieur</td>
<td>bookbinder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 or 12</td>
<td>ou</td>
<td>iou</td>
<td>mieux</td>
<td>better</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>ou</td>
<td>chiourme</td>
<td>galley's crew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>ou</td>
<td>ian</td>
<td>viande</td>
<td>meat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>en</td>
<td>ien</td>
<td>audience</td>
<td>audience</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>i</td>
<td>len</td>
<td>chrétien</td>
<td>christian</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>te</td>
<td>len</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>on</td>
<td>ion</td>
<td>passion</td>
<td>passion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>oi</td>
<td>bois</td>
<td>wood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>e</td>
<td>oie</td>
<td>botte</td>
<td>box</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>oe</td>
<td>foie</td>
<td>liver</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>oei</td>
<td>moelle</td>
<td>marrow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>o</td>
<td>oel</td>
<td>voisin</td>
<td>neighbour</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>in</td>
<td>oin</td>
<td>nageoire</td>
<td>fin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>u</td>
<td>uin</td>
<td>besoin</td>
<td>want</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>a</td>
<td>ua</td>
<td>nuage</td>
<td>cloud</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>uai</td>
<td>je remuai</td>
<td>I moved</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>è</td>
<td>uè</td>
<td>deme</td>
<td>struck</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>mèes</td>
<td>cloud</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Sounds

TABLE III. continued.

Simple sounds represented by examples.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Sound</th>
<th>Example 1</th>
<th>Example 2</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ ue }</td>
<td>menuet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 è</td>
<td>{ uol }</td>
<td>il suoit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ ui }</td>
<td>buisson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 i</td>
<td>{ uie }</td>
<td>paraplui</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ uo }</td>
<td>impétuosité</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 o</td>
<td></td>
<td>impétuosité</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ ueu }</td>
<td>lueur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 e</td>
<td>{ eu }</td>
<td>glimmering</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12 e</td>
<td>{ eau }</td>
<td>majestic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ uan }</td>
<td>nuance</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14 a</td>
<td>{ uen }</td>
<td>influence</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ uin }</td>
<td>Juin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>June</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 u</td>
<td>{ uon }</td>
<td>nous tuons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16 o</td>
<td></td>
<td>we kill</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ oua }</td>
<td>rouage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1 s</td>
<td></td>
<td>wheel-work</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ oué }</td>
<td>dénouer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 e</td>
<td>{ onée }</td>
<td>déjoué.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ oue }</td>
<td>file enjouée</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 e</td>
<td>{ ouoi }</td>
<td>je jouai</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouai }</td>
<td>I played</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>je dénouais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouai }</td>
<td>fouetter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>je dénouais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouai }</td>
<td>je jouai</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>I played</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouie }</td>
<td>joué</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>hearing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ oueu }</td>
<td>boueure</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>dustman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ oueu }</td>
<td>nouveaux</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>knotty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouan }</td>
<td>louange</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14 a</td>
<td>{ ouen }</td>
<td>Rouen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouin }</td>
<td>babouin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16 o</td>
<td></td>
<td>baboon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 o</td>
<td>{ ouon }</td>
<td>nous jouons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16 e</td>
<td></td>
<td>we play</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Of the French Tongue.

**Words of three Syllables.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>a-bi-me</th>
<th>abyss</th>
<th>bor-du-re</th>
<th>edging</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a-bré-gé</td>
<td>abridgement</td>
<td>bou-lan-ger</td>
<td>baker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-bri-cot</td>
<td>apricot</td>
<td>bou-ta-dè</td>
<td>whim</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ab-so-lu</td>
<td>absolute</td>
<td>bou-ti-que</td>
<td>shop</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ab-sir-de</td>
<td>absurd</td>
<td>bras-se-rie</td>
<td>brewhouse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>â-cre-té</td>
<td>acrimony</td>
<td>bra-vou-re</td>
<td>colour</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ac-tri-ce</td>
<td>actress</td>
<td>breu-va-ge</td>
<td>drink</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>af-fa-re</td>
<td>business</td>
<td>bro-de-rie</td>
<td>embroidery</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-gré-ment</td>
<td>consent</td>
<td>brou-et-te</td>
<td>wheelbarrow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ai-sé-ment</td>
<td>easily</td>
<td>brù-lu-re</td>
<td>burning</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>am-pou-le</td>
<td>blister</td>
<td>brus-que-ment</td>
<td>blumity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an-gois-se</td>
<td>anguish</td>
<td>ca-ba-ne</td>
<td>cottage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ap-pé-tit</td>
<td>appetite</td>
<td>ca-ba-ret</td>
<td>public-house</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>â-pre-té</td>
<td>asperity</td>
<td>ca-de-nas</td>
<td>padlock</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-rai-gnée</td>
<td>spider</td>
<td>cam-pa-gnard</td>
<td>countryman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ar-dem-ment</td>
<td>ardently</td>
<td>cam-pa-gne</td>
<td>country</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ar-doi-se</td>
<td>slate</td>
<td>cam-ti-que</td>
<td>spiritual song</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ar-moi-re</td>
<td>cabinet</td>
<td>ca-po-te</td>
<td>riding-hood</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ar-tis-te</td>
<td>artist</td>
<td>ca-ré-me</td>
<td>lent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>as-si-du</td>
<td>asidious</td>
<td>car-ros-se</td>
<td>coach</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-tro-ce</td>
<td>atrocious</td>
<td>ca-vi-té</td>
<td>cavity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au-ber-ge</td>
<td>inn</td>
<td>cein-tu-re</td>
<td>girdle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au-da-ce</td>
<td>audacity</td>
<td>cein-tu-ron</td>
<td>waist-belt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au-mô-ne</td>
<td>alms</td>
<td>sé-lè-bre</td>
<td>celebrated</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-vocat</td>
<td>advocate</td>
<td>cé-les-te</td>
<td>celestial</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a-voi-ne</td>
<td>oats</td>
<td>ce-peu-dant</td>
<td>however</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aus-tè-re</td>
<td>austere</td>
<td>cer-vel-le</td>
<td>brain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au-tre-fois</td>
<td>formerly</td>
<td>cham-pê-tre</td>
<td>rural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au-tre-ment</td>
<td>otherwise</td>
<td>cham-pi-gnon</td>
<td>mushroom</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ba-bio-le</td>
<td>bawble</td>
<td>cham-ge-ment</td>
<td>change</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ban-niè-re</td>
<td>banner</td>
<td>cha-noi-ne</td>
<td>canoon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bar-rié-re</td>
<td>gate</td>
<td>cha-po-lain</td>
<td>chaplain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bar-ri-que</td>
<td>hog-head</td>
<td>cha-pe-lier</td>
<td>hotter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ba-ses-se</td>
<td>baseness</td>
<td>cha-pel-le</td>
<td>chapel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bâ-ri-ment</td>
<td>building</td>
<td>cha-pi-tre</td>
<td>chapter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bê-le-meut</td>
<td>bleating</td>
<td>cha-rê-té</td>
<td>charity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ber-gê-re</td>
<td>shepherdess</td>
<td>char-la-tan</td>
<td>quack</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bé-ter-se</td>
<td>stupidity</td>
<td>char-ret-te</td>
<td>cart</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bien-fai-teur</td>
<td>benefactor</td>
<td>cha-te-té</td>
<td>chastity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bien-fai-sant</td>
<td>obliging</td>
<td>châ-î-ment</td>
<td>chastisement</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bien-sé-ant</td>
<td>bee-ning</td>
<td>chan-de-ment</td>
<td>warmly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bien-ve-ru</td>
<td>welcome</td>
<td>chaui-li-re</td>
<td>copper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>blai-châ-tre</td>
<td>whitish</td>
<td>chaui-dron-nier</td>
<td>brassier</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bles-tu-re</td>
<td>wound</td>
<td>chauf-le ge</td>
<td>fuel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>boi-se-rie</td>
<td>vaisseau</td>
<td>chauss-su-re</td>
<td>shoes, stockings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bon ne-ment</td>
<td>ingeniously</td>
<td>che-va-lier</td>
<td>knight</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>French</td>
<td>English</td>
<td>French</td>
<td>English</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>--------------------------</td>
<td>--------------</td>
<td>--------------------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cho-pl-ne</td>
<td>half pint</td>
<td>cui-ras-se</td>
<td>cuirass</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ci-vi-ère</td>
<td>hand-barrow</td>
<td>cui-si-ne</td>
<td>kitchen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clas-si-que</td>
<td>classic</td>
<td>cul-bu-te</td>
<td>tumble</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cha-ve-ciu</td>
<td>harpsicord</td>
<td>cu-re-dent</td>
<td>tooth-picker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clé-men-ce</td>
<td>elemeney</td>
<td>dé-ci-aif</td>
<td>decisive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clo-a-que</td>
<td>sever</td>
<td>dé-com-bres</td>
<td>rubbish</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>clo-chet-te</td>
<td>hand-bell</td>
<td>dé-fai-te</td>
<td>defeat</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-le-re</td>
<td>anger</td>
<td>dé-fen-seur</td>
<td>defender</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-li-que</td>
<td>cholic</td>
<td>dé-god-tant</td>
<td>disgusting</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>col-le-ge</td>
<td>college</td>
<td>dé-jeu-ner</td>
<td>breakfast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>col-li-ne</td>
<td>hill</td>
<td>de-man-do</td>
<td>demand</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-lon-ne</td>
<td>column</td>
<td>de-men-ti</td>
<td>the lie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-lo-ris</td>
<td>colouring</td>
<td>de-men-u-re</td>
<td>abode</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-mé-die</td>
<td>comedy</td>
<td>den-tel-le</td>
<td>lace</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-mé-dien</td>
<td>comedian</td>
<td>den-tis-te</td>
<td>dentist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-mi-que</td>
<td>comical</td>
<td>dé-pen-se</td>
<td>expense</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-man-dant</td>
<td>commander</td>
<td>dé-ses-poi-r</td>
<td>despair</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-mer-cant</td>
<td>merchant</td>
<td>dés-hon-neur</td>
<td>dishonour</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-mè-re</td>
<td>gossip</td>
<td>[mion des-po-te</td>
<td>depot</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-pa-gne</td>
<td>female compa-</td>
<td>dé-ri-do</td>
<td>rei</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-pa-grate</td>
<td></td>
<td>di-ple</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-pa-quet</td>
<td>companion</td>
<td>dis-set-le</td>
<td>disgrace</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>com-po-le</td>
<td>stemmed fruit</td>
<td>dis-gra-ce</td>
<td>gilding</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-cor-de</td>
<td>concord</td>
<td>du-ru-re</td>
<td>gentry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-dui-te</td>
<td>behaviour</td>
<td>dou-ble-mant</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-qué-rant</td>
<td>conqueror</td>
<td>dou-ce-mant</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-que-tte</td>
<td>conquest</td>
<td>dro-guis-te</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cons-tam-ment</td>
<td>constantly</td>
<td>droi-tu-re</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-ti-gu</td>
<td>contiguous</td>
<td>du-re-té</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-trai-re</td>
<td>contrary</td>
<td>6-cha-faud</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>con-vi-ve</td>
<td>guest</td>
<td>6-char-pe</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cor-don-nier</td>
<td>shoemaker</td>
<td>6-chel-le</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-ri-aee</td>
<td>tough</td>
<td>6-che-lon</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cor-ni-chon</td>
<td>girkin</td>
<td>6-che-veau</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>co-ton-nier</td>
<td>cotton-tree</td>
<td>6-cla-tant</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-chet-te</td>
<td>couch</td>
<td>6-clip-se</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-ra-gue</td>
<td>courageous</td>
<td>6-cor-ce</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-ron-ne</td>
<td>crown</td>
<td>6-cu-mee</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-ri-san</td>
<td>courtier</td>
<td>6 cu-rue</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-te las</td>
<td>hanger</td>
<td>ef-fi-gie</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-te-lier</td>
<td>cutter</td>
<td>ef fron-té</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-tu-me</td>
<td>custom</td>
<td>6-le-gant</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cou-lu-le</td>
<td>seam</td>
<td>6-le-ment</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cra-moi-si</td>
<td>crimson</td>
<td>6-lè-ve</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cré-du-le</td>
<td>credulous</td>
<td>6-li-te</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cri-mi-nel</td>
<td>criminal</td>
<td>6-mi-nent</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cri-ti-que</td>
<td>critic</td>
<td>em-pe-reur</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cru-an-té</td>
<td>cruelty</td>
<td>em pié-tre</td>
<td>druggist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>English</td>
<td>French</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>-------------</td>
<td>-------------</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ample</td>
<td>fa-ca-de</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-cu-me</td>
<td>fa-ri-té</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-nor-gie</td>
<td>fa-mon-e</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-fau-tin</td>
<td>fa-ri-ne</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-flu-re</td>
<td>fa-ro-rhe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-ga-geant</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-ne-mi</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-nor-me</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-sei-gne</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-seem-bie</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-sui-te</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-tre-vue</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-vi-ron</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pa-negul</td>
<td>fa-ti-gant</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pais-seur</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pie-ron</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pii-cier</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pi-neuy</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pou-ga</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-pou-se</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>en-qui-té</td>
<td>fer-mo-ment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-ca-beau</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-ca-lier</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-car-pia</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-cla-ve</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-pa-ce</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-pi-ee</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-pi-gle</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-quai-se</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-tam-pe</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-ti-me</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>es-tra-gon</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-ta-bie</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-la-ge</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-tei-gneir</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-tu-due</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-tu-due</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-tu-due</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-ve-clé</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et-ve-clé</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ex-co-p-té</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ex-co-sif</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ex-en-plo</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ex-tré-me</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fa-bu-leux</td>
<td>fii-la-fe</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The French tongue is filled with words that reflect the rich cultural heritage and language diversity of France, including words that denote emotions, actions, and physical properties. This table provides a glimpse into the vocabulary that one might encounter in a French-speaking environment, highlighting the complexity and beauty of the language.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Pronunciation</th>
<th>Definition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>go-belet</td>
<td>in-veu-teur</td>
<td>soubrier, goblet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gou-i-nent</td>
<td>i-voi-ra</td>
<td>greedily</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gou-ti-e-re</td>
<td>i-vres-se</td>
<td>gutter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gou-ver-noir</td>
<td>i-vro-gne</td>
<td>gravely</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gra-e-ment</td>
<td>ja-lou-rie</td>
<td>jaune</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gre-na-de</td>
<td>ja-quet-te</td>
<td>pomegranate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gri-ma-ce</td>
<td>jor-na-lier</td>
<td>faces</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gu-e-ri-sou</td>
<td>jor-di-nier</td>
<td>guitar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gui-man-ve</td>
<td>ju-ge-ment</td>
<td>healing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gui-ta-re</td>
<td>jus-te-ment</td>
<td>marsh-mallow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ha-bi-tant</td>
<td>la-che-te</td>
<td>guitar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ha-lei-ne</td>
<td>lai-ta-ge</td>
<td>inhabitant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Thar-di-ment</td>
<td>lai-ti-e-re</td>
<td>birth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tha-ri-cot</td>
<td>lan-gou-reux</td>
<td>French bean</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>har-mo-nie</td>
<td>lan-ter-ne</td>
<td>harmony</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>he-bé-té</td>
<td>lan-ga-ga</td>
<td>stupi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>her-ba-ge</td>
<td>lar-ga-mont</td>
<td>grazing field</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>his-toi-re</td>
<td>lar-ges-se</td>
<td>history</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ho-pi-tal</td>
<td>lec-tu-re</td>
<td>hospital</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hor-lo-gé</td>
<td>len-de-main</td>
<td>clock</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hor-lo-gar</td>
<td>len-til-le</td>
<td>clock-maker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hor-ri-bé</td>
<td>li-ber-té</td>
<td>horrid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hou-tas-se</td>
<td>li-bra-re</td>
<td>landlord</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hou-mble-ment</td>
<td>li-ren-ce</td>
<td>humbly</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>t-do-le</td>
<td>li-ma-son</td>
<td>idol</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i-gau-rant</td>
<td>li-ma-gon</td>
<td>ignorant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il-lus-trre</td>
<td>li-gre-re</td>
<td>illustrious</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-men-se</td>
<td>li-qui-de</td>
<td>immense</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-mor-tel</td>
<td>li-si-bile</td>
<td>inmortal</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-pos-teur</td>
<td>li-ti-e-re</td>
<td>impostor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-pré-vu</td>
<td>lo-ga-mont</td>
<td>unforeseen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-pris-mé</td>
<td>lu-ne-tier</td>
<td>printed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-pro-pre</td>
<td>ma-ga-liul</td>
<td>improper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>im-pu-nil</td>
<td>ma-gis-trat</td>
<td>unpunished</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-ceu-die</td>
<td>ma-jes-té</td>
<td>conflagration</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-cer-tain</td>
<td>ma-tres-se</td>
<td>uncertain</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-cou-nu</td>
<td>ma-a-droit</td>
<td>unknown</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-di-ent</td>
<td>ma-ni-e-re</td>
<td>needy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-dis-crett</td>
<td>ma-nae-ve</td>
<td>indiscriminate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-do-lent</td>
<td>man-que-ment</td>
<td>careless</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>i-nep-te</td>
<td>mar-ri-ne</td>
<td>simple</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-fi-ni</td>
<td>mar-mi-te</td>
<td>infinite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-gé-nu</td>
<td>mar-ui-ton</td>
<td>ingenious</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-hu-main</td>
<td>mar-ro-quin</td>
<td>inhuman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-ju-re</td>
<td>mas-en-lin</td>
<td>injury</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-sec-te</td>
<td>ma-te-lot</td>
<td>insect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-so-lent</td>
<td>ma-ter-nul</td>
<td>saucy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ins-true-tif</td>
<td>ma-ti-ner</td>
<td>instructive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in-su-lie</td>
<td>ma-ti-neux</td>
<td>insult</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inventor</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ivory</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>intoxication</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>drankard</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jealously</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jacket</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gardener</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prettily</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>labourer</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>judgment</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>justly</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cowardice</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>milk-meas</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>milk-woman</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>languishing</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lantern</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>copiously</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liberality</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reading</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>next day</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lentil</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>freedom</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bookseller</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>licentiousness</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>snail</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>seamstress</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liquid</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>legible</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>litter</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lodging</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spectacles-maker</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>warehouse</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>magistrate</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>majesty</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mistress</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>awkward</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>manner [ship</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tackling of a</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fault</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>navy</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a kettle</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>scullion</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>morocco</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>masculine</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>seaman</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>maternal</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>matter</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>early riser</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
mè-con-tent  discontented  o-pé-ra  opera
mè-di-sant  slanderer  op-pro-bre  disgrace
mè-lan-ge  mixture  o-pa-lent  wealthy
mè-moi-re  memory  o-ra-gen  stormy
me-na-ce  threat  o-ru-gar  orange-tree
me-na-gé  household  o-ra-teur  orator
mé-na-ger  saving  or-du-re  fitch
men-so-né  lie  or-tè-re  golden smith
mé-pri-sant  despising  or-ne-ment  ornament
mé-pris  mistake  or-niè-re  rust
me-su-re  measure  or-phe-lin  orphan
mé-tho-de  method  ou-vra-ge  work
meur-tri-er  murderer  pa-moi-so  fainting fit
mi-gra-ne  head ache  pa-na-che  bunch of feathers
mi-ist-re  minister  pan-ta-los  pantaloons
mi-sè-re  distress  pan-tou-fle  slipper
mo-dé-ré  moderate  pa-pe-tier  stationer
mo-des-tie  modesty  pa-que-hot  packet boat
mo-nar-que  monarch  pa-ra-vest  folding screen
monta-guard  highlander  pa-ren-te  kings woman
mon-ta-gneux  mountainous  pa-res-se  idleness
mo-que-rie  mockery  par-fu-meur  perfumer
mo-ra-le  morals  par-le-ment  parliament
mor-su-re  bite  pa-rois-se  parish
mou-che-ron  gnat  pa-ro-le  word
mou-chu-re  sniffings  par-tér-re  pit
mou-tar-de  mustard  pas-sa-bis  tolerable
mou-tar-dier  mustard pot  pas-sa-ger  passenger
murmur  murmur  pa-ta-te  potato
mù-ca-de  nutmeg  pa-ter-nel  paternal
mu-set-te  bagpipe  pau-vre-té  poverty
nai-nu-rel  natural  pe-lo-ton  clew of thread
nau-fragé  shipwreck  pen-du-le  clock
né-an-mois  nevertheless  pé-né-trant  penetrating
né-gl-gent  negligent  pé-ni-ble  painful
né-gres-ee  black woman  pe-san-teur  weight
no-bie-ment  nobly  pis-to-le  pistol
no-bles-se  nobility  plei-ne-ment  fully
noi-ré-tre  blackish  pois-sar-de  fishwoman
nome-mé-ment  namely  poi-tri-ne  breast
non-cha-lant  supine  po-li-ment  politely
noy-rel-le  news  poi-li-son  solely
nul-le-mart  by no means  pom-ma-de  boy
nu-mé-ro  number  po-ntif  pontiff
o-bil-geant  obliging  po-rliè-re  coach door
of-fen-se  offence  po-so-mant  softly
of-fran-de  offering  po-si-tif  positive
em-bra-ge  shade  pos-tu-re  posture
The Sounds

po-ta-ge  porridge  ré-ve-rie  meditation
po-ta-ger  kitchen-garden  ré-vol-te  revolt
po-te-rie  earthen-ware  riche-ment  richly
pous-niér-e  dust  ri-si-bie  roughly
pra-ri-que  practice  ri-vu-go  shore
pré-cep-te  precept  ro-ma-rin  laughable
pré-cep-teur  tutor  rou-grâtre  reddish
pré-co-ce  precocious  rou-ti-ne  rose
pré-fa-ce  preface  ru-de-ment  roughly
pré-sen-ce  presence  ru-di-ment  rudiment
pré-texte  pretense  ru-des-se  rudeness
prin-ci-se  princess  rus-qi-que  rural
prin-ci-pe  principle  sa-cré-ment  sacrament
pro-bi-té  honesty  sa-gem-ent  wisely
pro-fesseur  professor  sa-ges-se  wisdom
pro-mes-se  promise  sai-ne-ment  soundly
pro-pre-ment  cleanly  sain-te-té  holiness
pro-pre-té  cleanliness  sa-la-de  salad
pro-tec-teur  protector  sa-vam-ment  learnedly
pro-ver-be  proverb  sa-re-tier  cober
pru-dem-ment  prudently  scan-da-le  scandal
pru-nel-le  eyeball  scan-da-leux  scandalous
pu-é-til  childish  scé-ié-rat  villain
puis-sam-ment  powerfully  acru-pu-leux  scrupulous
puis-san-ce  power  sé-an-ce  sole
puai-se  bug  se-me-le  seed
pu-re-té  purity  se-men-ce  rationally
que-ral  quarrel  sen-sé-mant  separated
quit-tan-ce  receipt  sé-pa-ré  sepulchre
ra-ci-ne  root  sé-pul-cré  lock
ra-do-teur  rotard  ser-ru-re  locksmith
ra-mo-neur  chimney sweeper  ser-rui-rier  servant maid
ra-pi-de  rapid  ser-van-te  servant
ra-piè-re  rapier  ser-vi-teur  servant
ra-re-ment  seldom  sé-vë-re  severe
ra-re-té  rarity  si-fle-ment  whistling
ra-ti-re  rat-trap  sim-pile-mant  plainly
re-bel-le  rebel  so-bre-ment  soberly
re-cet-te  receipt  so-bri-quet  nick-name
ré-col-te  crop  so-len-nel  solemn
ré-gis-se  liquorice  so-li-de  solid
re-marque  remark  sol-va-ble  soluble
ré-mé-de  remedy  sou-ne-rie  saucer
re-que-te  request, petition  sou-net-te  little bell
ré-ser-vé  reserved  so-no-re  sonorous
ré-so-ru  determined  sou-cou-pe  saucer
res-sour-ce  resource  sou-frau-ce  suffering
re-traiti  retirement  souf-con-neux  suspicious
Of the French Tongue.

son-ve-raim       sovereign       tou-te-fois       nevertheless
spee-ta-cle       sight           tru-duc-teur       translator
splen-di-de       splendid       trai-ta-blo       tractable
stu-pé-fait       amazed         tra-ver-si         bolster
suo-cee-seur      successor       tri-che-vie        cheat
suffi-sant        sufficient     tri-om-phe         triumph
su-per-be         magnificent    tris-te-ment        sadly
su-per-fin        superfine      tris-tes-se         sorrow
sup-pli-oe         torment        trom-pet-te         trumpet
su-pré-me         supreme        tu-mul-te           tumult
so-re-ment        surely         u-ni-que           only
so-re-té          safety         u-sa-gé            use
symp-tô-me         symptom        va-can-cos         holidays
sys-ta-me          system         va-car-me          uproer
ta-bou-ret         stool          vais-ne-ment       in vain
na-ulè-re          den            va-ni-té           vanity
tau-piè-re         mole-trap       ver-di-trê           greenish
tein-ta-re         dying          ver-get-te         brush
sam-pé-ment        abominous     ver-mi-ne           vermin
tem-po-rel          temporal     ver-mis-eau       small worms
ten-dre-ment        tenderly      vê-te-ment         clothing
ten-dres-se         tenderness    vic-ti-mo           victim
ten-ta-tour         dark          vic-tol-re         victory
ter-ras-se          tempter       vi-gou-reux        vigorous
théâ-tre           theatre        vil-la-geois       countryman
thé-à-tre           tea-pot        vi-nai-gre         vinegar
ti-mi-de            timid         vi-tri-er           visit
toi-le-tet           toilet        vol-tu-re           glasier
tour-ne-veis       turnscrew      vo-lon-té           carriage

Of the Y.

This letter, when it stands alone, or is preceded or followed by a consonant, is pronounced like i, except in pays and its derivatives, which are pronounced pa-i-is, &c. Y between two vowels is pronounced like two ii's and if it be preceded by a, it gives to this letter the sound of the compound vowel æ, if by o or u, it gives to them the sound of the diphthongs ai or ei. The vowel which follows the y is pronounced like one of the diphthongs ia, ie, &c. and for this reason we have differed to speak of the y after the diphthongs.
The Sounds

Ab-ba-ye  Abbey  nous  é-ga-yons  to  eighteen
a-bo yer  to  bark  es-su-yer  to  wipe
ap-pu- yer  to  support  mo-yen  means
ba-la- yer  to  sweep  net-to-yer  to  clean
bé-ga- yer  to  stammer  je  pay- ois  I  was  paying
éra- yon  pencil  je  ra-ye-rois  I  would  streak
cro-ya-ble  credible  ro-yau-me  kingdom
cu-yer  esquire  vo-ya-ge  voyage
il  ef-ira-ya  he  frightened  vo-ya-geur  traveller

OF CONSONANTS.

The French language has nineteen consonants: they are, b, c, d, f, g, h, j, k, l, m, n, p, q, r, s, t, v, x, z.

It is acknowledged as a principle, that a consonant has no sound of itself: to be heard, it must be accompanied by a vowel.

B, b, sounded as in English.

Bac  long  boat  beur  re  butter
bale  bay  bros-se  brush
bal  ball  ba-lan-cé  balanced
has  stocking  blas-phè-me  blasphemy
bouf  ox  bleu-à-tre  bluish
bois  wood  bou-lan-ger  baker
bou  end  bro-de-quin  buskin
hu  drunk  bur-les-que  burlesque
ha-bil  prattling  ba-ga-tel-le  trifle
ba-bou-in  baboon  bar-ba- ris-me  barbarism
ba-din  war-gish  bê- nê-ô-ce  benefit
hai-sor  to  kiss  bru-ta-li-té  brutality
ber-ceau  cradle  bo-ta-nis-te  botanist
boe-quet  grave  bê-nê-dic-tion  blessing
boe-se  bunch  bi-bli-o-thè-que  library

This letter is always pronounced in the middle of a word; as, ab-di-quer, sub-ve-nir; and at the end of proper names, as, Job, Caleb; also in the words radeub, the refitting of a ship, rumb, point of the compass; but in plumb, lead, it is never pronounced. When double, which only happens in abbê, abbot, rabin, rabbin, sabbat, sabbath, and their derivatives, one only is sounded.
Of the French Tongue.

C, e,  

que, proper sound before a, o, u, i, n, r, s, as c in cart.
so, accidental sound before e, i, as c in cider.

Proper sound.

Cal callosity  cou-leur  colouir
camp camp  crou-te  crust
car for  cu-ve  large tub
cas case  ca-la-le  cabal
clos close  ca-bi-net  closet
clou nail  ca-de-nas  padlock
cœur heart  can-ti-que  canticle
cor car-ros-se  coach
cou neck  co-lom-be  dove
cour yard  com-mer-ce  commerce
creux hollow  ci-o-tu-re  enclosure
cri cry  cri-ti-que  criticism
cru raw  cru-di-té  crudeness
cuit cooked  Cu-pi-don  Cupid
cu-dran dial  ca-ui-cu-le  dog-days
cas-que helmet  ca-du-ci-té  decay
cau-se cause  con-nois-san-ce  knowledge
cél-ment merciful  cu-pi-di-té  cupidity

Accidental sound.

Ce This  cinq  five
cenat girded  cé-tè-bre  famous
cent hundred  ci-trouil-le  gourd
ces these  cé-tè-bri-té  celebrity
ciel heaven  cir-cu-lai-re  circular

This letter is not sounded in the middle of words, before q, ca, co, cu, cl, cr, as ac-quéirir, ac-cabler, ac-complir, ac-clamation, ac-créditer, which are pronounced a-quéirir, &c. It is sounded with its proper sound before ce and ci; as, suc-cès, ac-cident, and takes its accidental sound before, a, o, u, when there is a cédilla under the c; as fa-ça-de, fa-çon, re-cu.

It is sounded gue in the word second and derivatives.

At the end of words, it is generally pronounced, as Cognac, avec, &c. but is not sounded in accroc, arc-boutant, banc, broc, clerc, cric, estomac, flanc, jone, lace, marc, tabac, tronc, and vaine, not in donc,
followed by a consonant. It is sounded in franc étourdi, and du blanc au noir. In porc-épic, the first, but not the last is sounded. In échec, check, it is pronounced, but not in the plural, échecs, chess.

In words ending in ct, neither of these consonants are pronounced, in amicit, instinct, respect.

D, d. Sounded as in English.

Daim dis-cours discourse
dais doc-teur doctor
dans dou-ble double
de dou-ceil sweetness
dé dur-cir to harden
déux dan-ge-reux dangerous
dix dé-bi-teur debtor
dos dé-ga-gé disengaged
du dé-pè-che dispatch
da-mas damask
dar-daou-reux painful
dan-gar driot-tu-re uprightness
dé-çu du-re-té hardness
dé-cret da-van-tage more
dé-jà dé-li-ci-eux delicious
dé-sir dis-si-mu-lé dissembled
di-re dé-sa-gré-a-ble disagreeable

This letter is sounded in the middle of words: as ad-jec-tif, ad-verbe.

It is sounded also at the end of proper names; as Da-vid, O-bed; at the end of other words, it is sounded only before a vowel, and then it takes the sound of t, quand il viendra, grand homme. It is never sounded in genêt, nid, naud, muid, and pied. When doubled, both are pronounced.

F, f. Sounded as in English.

Faim fois time
fard fa-ce face
fau faige mire
far far-deau burden
feu fes-tin feast
fry flam-beau torch
Ger foi-ble weak
Sour frugal
Of the French Tongue.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>fu-ret</td>
<td>ferret</td>
<td>fon-da-teur</td>
<td>founder</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fa-bri-que</td>
<td>fabric</td>
<td>fa-ci-li-te</td>
<td>easiness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fa-bu-leux</td>
<td>fabulous</td>
<td>fe-con-di-te</td>
<td>fecundity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fan-fa-ron</td>
<td>boaster</td>
<td>for-ma-li-te</td>
<td>formality</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fi-gu-re</td>
<td>figure</td>
<td>fru-ga-le-ment</td>
<td>frugally</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Final *f* is pronounced in words ending in *if*, and in *nef, nerf, soif, serf, chef, œuf, bœuf, neuf* (new, and *veuf*; but not in *cief, cerc, chef-d’œuvre, étuef, nerf de bœuf, un œuf frais*. It is not sounded in the plural of *nerf, neuf* (new, *œuf* and *bœuf*. In *neuf* (nine,) when placed before a word to which it relates, it is sounded *v* before a vowel or *h* mute, and entirely mute before a consonant or *h* aspirated.

When double, only one is sounded.

**G, g.** Proper sound *gue* before *a, o, u,* as *g* in *go*

Accidental sound *je* before *e, i,* as *s* in *pleasure.*

**Proper Sound.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gai</td>
<td>Gay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gant</td>
<td>glove</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gland</td>
<td>acorn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gond</td>
<td>hinge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gué</td>
<td>ford</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>garçon</td>
<td>boy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gauche</td>
<td>left</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gla-ce</td>
<td>ire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gloi-re</td>
<td>glory</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Accidental Sound.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Geai</td>
<td>Jackdaw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gens</td>
<td>people</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gé-ne</td>
<td>rack</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gen-re</td>
<td>gender</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gé-mir</td>
<td>to groan</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*G* has the accidental sound *ke* in *rang, long,* and *sang,* followed by a vowel, and also in *bourg.*

*G* final, sounds *gue* in proper names; as *Agag, Deog,* and in *fouj,* even before a consonant.

It is not pronounced in *doigt, legs, poing, vingt, hareng, étang, sangsue, seing* (signature,) and *fou-bourg,* nor in *rang, sang,* and *long,* before a consonant: *bourgmeister* is pronounced *bourgmeester.*

*Gu* is pronounced at one and the same time, though sounding the *u,* in *aiguille* and its deriv-
The Sounds

tives; in aiguisement, aigiser, and in these proper names, Aguillon, Guise, le Guide; but u is not sounded in guider, guidon, anguille, vivre à sa guise.

When double, only one is pronounced, except before ge and gi, and then the first has the proper sound, and the second the accidental one.

H, h. This letter is sometimes mute, and then it has no value, and sometimes aspirated, and then it is pronounced with a guttural and strong impulse of the voice.

H mute.

**Hi-er**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hi-er</th>
<th>yesterday</th>
<th>hor-reur</th>
<th>horror</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ha-bit</td>
<td>coat</td>
<td>hé-di-ter</td>
<td>to inherit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>her-be</td>
<td>grass</td>
<td>his-toi-re</td>
<td>history</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heu-re</td>
<td>hour</td>
<td>bom-ma-ge</td>
<td>hommage</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heu-reux</td>
<td>happy</td>
<td>bon-né-te-té</td>
<td>honesty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hi-ver</td>
<td>winter</td>
<td>ba-bi-tu-de</td>
<td>habit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hom-me</td>
<td>man</td>
<td>hu-ma-ni-té</td>
<td>humanity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bon-neur</td>
<td>honour</td>
<td>hu-mi-li-té</td>
<td>humility</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

H. aspirated.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Haut</th>
<th>High</th>
<th>hi-deux</th>
<th>hideous</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ha-che</td>
<td>axe</td>
<td>hé-di-son</td>
<td>hedge-hog</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ha-ir</td>
<td>to hate</td>
<td>hur-le-ment</td>
<td>howling</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hai-ne</td>
<td>hatred</td>
<td>ba-ix-sa-ble</td>
<td>hateful</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bar-pe</td>
<td>harp</td>
<td>hi-deu-se-ment</td>
<td>hideously</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

J, j. Proper sound je, as z in azure, or s in pleasure.

The sound of this letter never changes.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Jus</th>
<th>Gravy</th>
<th>jus-te</th>
<th>just</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ja-loux</td>
<td>jealous</td>
<td>jeu-nes-se</td>
<td>youth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ja-mais</td>
<td>never</td>
<td>jon-qui-il-le</td>
<td>jonesil</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jar-din</td>
<td>garden</td>
<td>ju-gement</td>
<td>judgment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jau-ne</td>
<td>yellow</td>
<td>jau-sie</td>
<td>jealousy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jea-di</td>
<td>Thursday</td>
<td>jou-s-sain-ce</td>
<td>enjoyment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jon-jou</td>
<td>toy</td>
<td>jour-na-lis-te</td>
<td>journalist</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ju-meant</td>
<td>twin</td>
<td>ju-di-cl-eux</td>
<td>judicious</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

K, k. Proper sound, que very hard, as k in kit.

This letter may be considered as not properly belonging to the French alphabet, as it is never used but in a few words, all borrowed from foreign languages, for which see the dictionary.
Of the French Tongue.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>lin</td>
<td>Flax</td>
<td>lu-eur</td>
<td>light</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lit</td>
<td>bed</td>
<td>ly-re</td>
<td>tyre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>loi</td>
<td>law</td>
<td>la-bou-reur</td>
<td>ploughman</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lot</td>
<td>lot</td>
<td>là-che-té</td>
<td>cowardice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lun</td>
<td>kim</td>
<td>lai-ta-ge</td>
<td>milk-food</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lâce</td>
<td>lace</td>
<td>lan-ge</td>
<td>language</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lai-deur</td>
<td>ugliness</td>
<td>li-ber-té</td>
<td>liberty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lam-bis</td>
<td>mainscot</td>
<td>lo-ge-ment</td>
<td>lodging</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jar-me</td>
<td>tear</td>
<td>lu-éra-tif</td>
<td>lucrative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>le-con</td>
<td>lesson</td>
<td>lu-miè-re</td>
<td>light</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lin-ge</td>
<td>linen</td>
<td>la-si-tu-de</td>
<td>weariness</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to-ge</td>
<td>lodge</td>
<td>lu-ne-ti-que</td>
<td>lunatic</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This letter in the middle or at the end of words, has sometimes a liquid sound, which we shall mention hereafter.

L final is not sounded in the following words, baril, chemil, coutil, fenil, fournil, fusil, outil, persil, pouls, sohil, and sourcil. In genitil it is only pronounced in the singular, when placed before a noun beginning with a vowel. It is also mute in fils.

When double, we sound but one, except in allégorie, allusion, alluvion, appelatif, appellation, belligerent, belliqueux, cavillation, collation des bénéfices, collocation, constellation, ébullition, Gallican, Gallicisme, instillation, instiller; intellect, intelligence, intelligent, intelligibilité, intelligible, malléabilité, malléable, maillère, milléniaire, millésime, oscillation, palliatif, pälliation, pallier, pelliculo, pusillanime, pusillanimité, scintillation, scintiller, titilant, titillation, titiller, vacillant, vacillaion, vaciller; in all words beginning with ill, as illustre, illuminer, &c. and in proper names, as Apollon, Bellone, Dolabella, Pallas, Sylla, &c.

M, m. Sounded as in English.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ma</td>
<td>My</td>
<td>man-chon</td>
<td>muff</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mais</td>
<td>but</td>
<td>men-ton</td>
<td>chin</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mat</td>
<td>mast</td>
<td>mi-roir</td>
<td>looking-glass</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mal</td>
<td>evil</td>
<td>mon-de</td>
<td>world</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mer</td>
<td>sea</td>
<td>mou-lin</td>
<td>mill</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>moi</td>
<td>me</td>
<td>mu-et</td>
<td>dumb</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mur</td>
<td>wall</td>
<td>ma-ga-sin</td>
<td>magazine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mai-son</td>
<td>house</td>
<td>ma-jés-té</td>
<td>majesty</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Sounds

\begin{align*}
\text{men-son-ge} & \quad \text{lie} & \quad \text{mor-ta-li-té} & \quad \text{mortality} \\
\text{mur-mu-re} & \quad \text{murmur} & \quad \text{mul-ti-tu-de} & \quad \text{multitude} \\
\text{men-di-ci-té} & \quad \text{beggary} & \quad \text{mul-ti-pli-ci-té} & \quad \text{multiplicity}
\end{align*}

\(M\), in the middle of words, is not sounded in \textit{automne} and \textit{damner}, and its derivates; but in \textit{automnal}, and the other words, it is sounded before \(n\), as \textit{amnistie, calomnie}, &c.

When double, we generally sound but one, except 1st. In proper names, as \textit{Emmanuel}. 2dly. In the words beginning with \textit{imm}, as \textit{immortal}.

In the words in which \textit{em} is followed by \(m\), as \textit{emmancer}, it takes the nasal sound \(an\).

\textbf{N, n.} Sounded as in English.

\begin{align*}
\text{Ne} & \quad \text{Not} & \quad \text{No-él} & \quad \text{Christmas} \\
\text{nain} & \quad \text{dwarf} & \quad \text{nou-veau} & \quad \text{new} \\
\text{net} & \quad \text{clear} & \quad \text{na-tu-rel} & \quad \text{natural} \\
\text{nés} & \quad \text{nose} & \quad \text{né-bu-leux} & \quad \text{cloudy} \\
\text{ni} & \quad \text{nor} & \quad \text{no-ble-ment} & \quad \text{noble} \\
\text{nom} & \quad \text{name} & \quad \text{nul-si-ble} & \quad \text{curious} \\
\text{na-ger} & \quad \text{to swim} & \quad \text{na-ti-o-nal} & \quad \text{national} \\
\text{nei-ge} & \quad \text{snow} & \quad \text{né-ces-sai-re} & \quad \text{necessary} \\
\text{ni-veau} & \quad \text{level} & \quad \text{né-gli-gen-ce} & \quad \text{negligence} \\
\text{no-ces} & \quad \text{wedding} & \quad \text{nou-vel-le-ment} & \quad \text{newly}
\end{align*}

When \(n\) is double, we generally sound but one, except in \textit{annexe, annal, annuel, annotation, annuler, immé, innover, innovation}, and perhaps a few others.

\textbf{P, p.} Sounded as in English.

\begin{align*}
\text{Pi} & \quad \text{Plait} & \quad \text{po-che} & \quad \text{pocket} \\
\text{plus} & \quad \text{more} & \quad \text{pou-dre} & \quad \text{powder} \\
\text{poids} & \quad \text{weight} & \quad \text{pru-dent} & \quad \text{prudent} \\
\text{pont} & \quad \text{bridge} & \quad \text{pa-res-seux} & \quad \text{idle} \\
\text{port} & \quad \text{harbour} & \quad \text{pen-du-le} & \quad \text{clock} \\
\text{pot} & \quad \text{pot} & \quad \text{prin-ci-pe} & \quad \text{principle} \\
\text{prix} & \quad \text{price} & \quad \text{puis-san-ce} & \quad \text{power} \\
\text{pa-lais} & \quad \text{palace} & \quad \text{pré-ju-di-ce} & \quad \text{prejudice} \\
\text{par-fum} & \quad \text{parfume} & \quad \text{pro-pri-6-té} & \quad \text{property} \\
\text{pei-gne} & \quad \text{comb} & \quad \text{pro-tec-tion} & \quad \text{protection}
\end{align*}

\(P\), followed by \(h\), is sounded \(f\), as \textit{philosophe, pharmacie}, &c.

\(P\), in the middle of words, is never sounded in
Of the French Tongue.

baptême, baptiser, baptistère, compté and its derivatives, corps, exempt, exempter, prompt and its derivatives, sculpter and its derivatives, temps, printemps, and in the verb rompre and its derivatives, when it is followed by s or t, as je romps, il corrumpit. But it is sounded in baptismal and exemption.

It is not pronounced in sept, septième, and septièmement, but it is heard in all the other derivatives of sept.

In laps both p and s are sounded.

Final p is always sounded in Alep, cap, Gap, cep, jalap, and also in trop, beaucoup, and coup before a vowel.

When double, we never pronounce but one.

Q, q. Proper sound, que, commonly as k in kiss.

But sometimes it presents the hard pronunciation of the Latin in qua, que qui, which in this case are sounded coua, cuë, cuë, as qua in equator.

First sound.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Quai</th>
<th>Key</th>
<th>quin-te</th>
<th>a, fifth</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>quand</td>
<td>when</td>
<td>quin-zë</td>
<td>fifteen</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que</td>
<td>that</td>
<td>qua-ran-te</td>
<td>forty</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qui</td>
<td>who</td>
<td>quan-ti-të</td>
<td>quantity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qua-dë</td>
<td>almost</td>
<td>que-nouil-le</td>
<td>distaff</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qua-tre</td>
<td>four</td>
<td>que-rel-le</td>
<td>quarrel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quel-qué</td>
<td>some</td>
<td>qui-con-que</td>
<td>whenever</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que-rir</td>
<td>to fetch</td>
<td>ques-tion-n-er</td>
<td>in question</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qué-ter</td>
<td>to beg</td>
<td>quo-ti-di-en</td>
<td>daily</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Second sound.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A-qua-të-le</th>
<th>Aquatiles</th>
<th>qua-dri-gë</th>
<th>a cart of the ancients</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6-qua-tëur</td>
<td>equator</td>
<td>qua-dru-pe-de</td>
<td>quadruped</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-qua-ti-on</td>
<td>equation</td>
<td>qua-dru-plë</td>
<td>quadruple</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-ques-tëre</td>
<td>equestrian</td>
<td>in-quar-to</td>
<td>quarto</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6-qui-la-të-ral</td>
<td>equilateral</td>
<td>ques-tëur</td>
<td>questor</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>li-qua-ti-on</td>
<td>liquidation</td>
<td>Quin-qua-gë-ri-me</td>
<td>Shrove Sunday</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>li-qué-tacti-on</td>
<td>liquidation</td>
<td>quaker</td>
<td>experience</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qua-cre</td>
<td>quadrature</td>
<td>quem-tu-plë</td>
<td>five-fold</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qua-dra-të-re</td>
<td>quadrature</td>
<td>quin-tu-plë</td>
<td>five-fold</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This letter is never doubled.
The Sounds

R, r. Sounded as in English.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rat</th>
<th>rat</th>
<th>ruis-seau</th>
<th>brook</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>roi</td>
<td>king</td>
<td>ra-ci-ne</td>
<td>root</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ra-ce</td>
<td>race</td>
<td>ra-pi-de</td>
<td>rapid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ra-de</td>
<td>road</td>
<td>re-bel-le</td>
<td>rebel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ra-ge</td>
<td>rage</td>
<td>ré-col-te</td>
<td>harvest</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rai-sin</td>
<td>grape</td>
<td>ré-gle-ment</td>
<td>regulation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rai-son</td>
<td>reason</td>
<td>re-nom-mée</td>
<td>sense</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ra-me</td>
<td>oar</td>
<td>ré-a-li-té</td>
<td>reality</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ran-con</td>
<td>ransom</td>
<td>ré-cep-tion</td>
<td>reception</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ra-soir</td>
<td>razor</td>
<td>ré-fle-xion</td>
<td>reflection</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ra-teau</td>
<td>rake</td>
<td>rhu-ma-tis-me</td>
<td>rheumatism</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rel-ne</td>
<td>queen</td>
<td>ro-ma-nes-que</td>
<td>romantic</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ren-te</td>
<td>rent</td>
<td>re-pré-sen-ta-</td>
<td>representation</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ru-ban</td>
<td>ribbon</td>
<td>ti-on</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Final r is always sounded after the vowels a, o, i, u, except in Monsieur. In nouns ending in er, it is sounded only in monosyllables as well as in amer, belveder, cancer, la cuiller, enfer, éther, frater, gaster, hier, hiver, magister, pater, and in proper names, Jupiter, Esther, Munster, le Niger, &c.

In adjectives ending in er, it is only sounded when they precede the noun to which they relate, if it begin with a vowel.

In the infinite of verbs in er, it is sounded before a vowel in the same member of a phrase, but never if only a comma intervene.

In words ending in er, when r is sounded, e has the sound of é open short; when it is not, it has the sound of é close, or acute.

When double, we pronounce but one, except, 1st. In aberration, abhorrer, errer, horreur, terreur, and their derivatives. 2dly. In words beginning with irr, as, irriger, irréconciliable, &c. 3dly. In the future and conditional of the verbs acquérir, sourir, mourir, and their derivatives, j’acquerrai, je mourrai, nous courrions, &c.

S, s. { Proper sound as s in salute.

Accidental sound as z in zone.}
Of the French Tongue.

Proper sound.

| Sa  | Her | sim-ple | simple |
| Sac | bag | sol-dat | soldier |
| sain | wholesome | sou-dain | suddenly |
| sang | blood | suc-cès | success |
| sauf | safe | sain-te-té | holiness |
| sec | dry | saî-pêtre | saltpetre |
| sein | bosom | sar-cas-me | sarcasm |
| si | y' | sin-cé-re | sincere |
| soin | care | som-meil-ler | to slumber |
| soif | thirst | su-bli-me | sublime |
| soir | evening | su-prê-me | supreme |
| sa-ble | sand | sa-crit-ice | sacrifice |
| sai-son | season | sa-ga-ci-té | safety |
| san-glot | sob | so-bri-fé-té | sobriety |
| sau-ce | sauce | so-li-tu-de | solitude |
| ser-pent | serpent | suf-fi-san-ce | sufficiency |

*S preserves always its proper sound at the beginning of a word, except before *che* and *chi*, where it is mute, as in *schelling*, *schisme*, &c.

It also preserves the same sound in the middle of a word, when preceded or followed by a consonant, except in the following words, in which it takes the sound of *z*, *Alsace*, *balsamine*, *balsamique*. *intransitif*, *transaction*, *transiger*, *transitif*, *transition*, and *transitoire*.

*S* takes the accidental sound when it stands between two vowels, except in the following words, where it preserves its natural sound: *désuétude*, *entresol*, *monosyllabe*, *parasol*, * polysyllabe*, *préséance*, *présupposer*, *présupposition*, *tournesol*, *vraisemblable*, and its derivatives.

*S* as well as *t* is always heard in *Christ*, but never in *Jesus-Christ*, *l'antéchrist*, in which *t* is only sounded before a vowel.

When *s* is followed by *ce* and *ci*, the sound of *s* is only heard, as in *scène*, *science*, which are pronounced *sène*, *sience*; but *c* is sounded in all other combinations, *scapulaire*, *scolarité*, *scrupule*, &c.

Final *s* is sounded in *as*, *aloès*, *amadis*, *Argus*, *Atlas*, *bébus*, *bis*, *blocus*, *bolus*, *calus*, *cens*, *judex*, *lu-
The Sounds

pis, le lis (flower,) la lis (river) mâis, mars, métis,
ours, pathos, tournevis, virus, vis, and in proper names
derived from the Greek or Latin, as Minos, Délos,
Brutus, Regulus, &c.: it is mute in fleur de lis.

Though there is no s in quatre, yet before yeux it is
pronounced as if ending in that letter.

When double, pronounce only one, but with its
proper sound.

T, t  Proper sound, te, as t in tart.
     { Accidental sound, ce, as c in cider.
     
Proper sound.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Word</th>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Toi</td>
<td>Thée</td>
<td>temple</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>toit</td>
<td>roof</td>
<td>tiger</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tort</td>
<td>wrong</td>
<td>tri-hut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tôt</td>
<td>soon</td>
<td>ten-dres-sè</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tour</td>
<td>turn</td>
<td>ton-ner-re</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>toux</td>
<td>cough</td>
<td>ton-om-phe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>très</td>
<td>very</td>
<td>triumph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trop</td>
<td>too much</td>
<td>turbulent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trou</td>
<td>hole</td>
<td>ta-bur-na-cle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ta-bou</td>
<td>tobacco</td>
<td>tran-quil-le-ment</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ta-lon</td>
<td>heel</td>
<td>tu-mul-tu-eux</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

T at the beginning of a word always preserves its
proper sound.

It assumes the accidental sound, 1st. In adjectives
ending in tial, tiel, tient, and tieux, and their deri-
 natives: as abbatial, pariel, patient, captieux. 2dly:
In the following words ending in tie, aristocratie,
Béotie, facétie, démocratie, diplomatie, impératie, ine-
tie, inertié, minutie, primatie, prophétique, and supréma-
tie. 3dly. In the verbs initiier and bulbutter, and
their inflexions. 4thly. In the names of nations or
persons ending in tien; as Vénitien, Dioclétien, &c.
5thly. In the nouns ending in tion, not preceded by
s or x, and their derivatives; as ambition.

T final is always sounded in apt; bruit, comput, dot,
fat, induit, lest, matt, mat, opiat, rapt, rit, le zénith, and
in this proverbial expression, entre le zist et le zist.

T is never sounded in the conjunction et; and;
Of the French Tongue.

which is pronounced like a simple é acute, nor in chat-huant.

Th has no particular sound as in English, but is always pronounced like t.

In sept and huit, t is always sounded, except these words stand before a noun beginning with a consonant, or another numeral adjective.

In vingt, it is sounded before a vowel, and through the whole series, from twenty-one to thirty; but it is never heard in quatre-vingts, six-vingts, nor even in quatre-vingt-un.

In all other words, it is sounded, when followed by a vowel with which it unites; as, je suis tout à vous.

When double, we pronounce but one, except in atticisme, attique, guttural, pittoresque.

V, v. Sounded as in English.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Val</th>
<th>Dale</th>
<th>ver-tu</th>
<th>virtue</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>van</td>
<td>van</td>
<td>vi-ce</td>
<td>vice</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>veut</td>
<td>wind</td>
<td>vi-zir</td>
<td>visiter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ver</td>
<td>norm</td>
<td>voi-ci</td>
<td>here is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vieux</td>
<td>old</td>
<td>va-ga-bond</td>
<td>vagrant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>va-che</td>
<td>corv</td>
<td>va-ni-teux</td>
<td>full of vanity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>va-leur</td>
<td>valour</td>
<td>vi-tra-ge</td>
<td>glazing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>va-peur</td>
<td>vapour</td>
<td>vi-va-ci-té</td>
<td>vivacity</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ve-lin</td>
<td>velum</td>
<td>vi-si-bi-li-té</td>
<td>visibility</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ven-dre</td>
<td>to sell</td>
<td>vo-la-bi-li-té</td>
<td>volatility</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This letter preserves always its proper sound, and is never double.

W, w, is sometimes met with in some foreign words, wig, wisk, whiski, wolfram, and is sounded as in English.

X, x, has no proper sound.

1. Accidental sound, ks, as x in axiome.
2. Accidental sound, gz, as gs in eggs.
3. Accidental sound, k, as xe in excellent.
4. Accidental sound, s, as s in salad.
5. Accidental sound, z, as z in zone.

The first sound, ks, is the more general, and takes place in all cases not mentioned hereafter.
The Sounds

The second sound, gz, takes place in all words beginning with ex, followed by a vowel or a mute, as
examen, exemple, exhumer, exhorter, &c.

The third sound, k, is met with in all words beginning with acc, followed by e or i, as exceller, ex-
citer, excentrique, &c.

The fourth sound, s, is found only in soixante and the following names of towns, Aix, Aix-la-Chapelle,
Awerre, Auxone, Bruxelles, Luxeuil.

The fifth sound, x, takes place at the end of words when followed by a vowel, and in the derivatives
of deux, six, and dix, as deuxième, sixième, dixième-
ment, &c.

X is never sounded in dixme and its derivatives.

In six and dix before a noun beginning with a
consonant, it is entirely mute: if the noun begin-
with a vowel, it is sounded like z, and in all other
cases it is sounded like s of the fourth rule.

At the end of words, x is always pronounced ks in
styx, phénix, index, borax, storax, onix, préfix, Ajax,
Pollux, and other proper names.

Z, z. Proper sound, ze, as z in zone.

Za-im Turkish soldier zo-ne zone
| zé-bre | sebra | zé-la-teur | secolot |
| zé-le | zéal | zi-be-li-nè | sable |
| zé-nih | xenikh | zi-zá-nie | dissention |
| zé-phyr | zéphyr | zo-dia-que | sodiáé |
| zé-ro | nought | zo-i-le | zoílus |
| zig-zag | zigzag | zo-o-go-gie | zoology |

Final x sounds s in Metz and Rhodes. It is not
pronounced in the second person plural of verbs, vous
aimez, vous venez, nor in words terminated in ez, as
assez, chez, nez, when followed by a consonant.

We never double this letter.

Besides the above consonants, there are three
others, for which we have no simple character.

CH, ch, { 1st sound, che, as sh in shake.

2d sound, que, as ch in chimera.

1st Sound.

Chat Cât cha-pan hat
chate Chair chair cha-érir to cherish.
Of the French Tongue.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>eber</th>
<th>dear</th>
<th>chu-te</th>
<th>faïl</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ebaud</td>
<td>hot</td>
<td>cha-cum</td>
<td>each</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chez</td>
<td>at</td>
<td>cha-lu-meau</td>
<td>pipe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chef</td>
<td>chief</td>
<td>chaum-pêtre</td>
<td>rural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chai-ne</td>
<td>chain</td>
<td>chan-ge-ment</td>
<td>change</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chai-re</td>
<td>pulpit</td>
<td>chauf-la-ge</td>
<td>fuel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chai-se</td>
<td>chair</td>
<td>chi-ca-ne</td>
<td>chicane</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cho-se</td>
<td>thing</td>
<td>chi-rur-gien</td>
<td>surgeon</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This consonant takes the second sound, 1st. When it is followed by l, n, or r, as Chrétien, Arachné, Chloris. 2dly. In several proper names taken from foreign languages, as Achat, Nabuchodonosor, Michel-Ange, Machiavel, Civito-Vecchia, Aché, &c. but in this last case there are so many exceptions, that we must refer the learner to practice alone; for we pronounce soft, Zaché, Joachim, &c. 3dly. In the following words, anchoreète, archange, archiépiscopal, cathéchumène, chaos, chœur, écho, eucharistie, and orchestra.

In drachme, ch is pronounced like g. In vermicelle and violoncelle, c is pronounced like sh in English. Almanach is pronounced almana.

GN, gn, \{ Liquid sound, gne as gn in poignant. \\
Hard sound, as gn in magnificent. \\

When this consonant begins the word, it always has the hard sound; as Gnaphalium, Gnome, Gnomide, Gnomique, Gnomon, Gnomonique, Gnostiques.

The liquid sound takes place only in the middle of words, where it is always preserved, except in Progné, agnat, agnation, diagnostique, stagnation, stagnant, cognat, cognition, régnicole, inexpugnable, impregnation, ignée, magnésie, and perhaps a few others.

In the word signet, it is pronounced as if written sinet.

L, single or doubled, has in many words a liquid sound, which greatly resembles that of the ll in the English word brilliant, or of gl in seraglio.

This sound takes place without exception after the compound vowels ai, ei, eui, æi, oui, uæ, both in the
The Sounds

middle and at the end of words. *Euil, œil, veil,* have in these cases the same sound.

| A-beil-le  | Bee          | œil | eye  |
| ac-cneil   | reception    | o-reil-le | ear  |
| ba-tail-lon| battalion   | or-gueil-le | proud |
| cer-feuil  | chervil      | so-leil | sun  |
| feuil-le   | leaf         | souil-lu-re | filth |
| fouil-ler  | to trench    | tra-vail | work |
| fu-tail-le | cask         | vail-lant | valiant |
| maill      | mail         | veil-ler | to watch |
| meil-leur  | better       | ver-rouil-ler | to bolt |

*Il* takes the liquid sound in the middle and at the end of words, except in *armillaire, cavillation, imbécille, instiller, maxillaire, mille, oscillation, pupille, pusillanime, scintiller, titiller, tranquille, vaciller, ville,* and their derivatives; we except also all words beginning with *ill,* as *illégal, illégitime,* &c.

*Il* is liquid at the end of the following words: *Avril, babil, Brésil, cil, grésil,* and *péril.*

**OF GENDER.**

Gender in all languages marks the distinction of sex, and as there are only two of these, the French agreeably to this view have but two genders, the masculine and feminine: the neuter they do not admit.

The masculine gender expresses the male kind, as *un homme,* a man; *un lion,* a lion.

The feminine gender denotes the female kind, as *une femme,* a woman; *une lionne,* a lioness.

The gender of nouns, in inanimate objects, is generally expressed by their termination; thus, final *e* mute is the distinctive mark of the feminine gender, every other final letter is the sign of the masculine. This would be an excellent rule, were it universal; but foreigners, who wish to be thoroughly acquainted with the French language, experience great difficulty from the number of exceptions to this general principle. It is with the intention of throwing some light on this obscure and intricate subject, and of affording the learner a tolerable clew, that some few concise *rules will be here laid down,* the knowledge of which *will prove very useful.*
### A TABLE OF SUBSTANTIVES

**That are masculine in one signification, and feminine in another.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Masculine</th>
<th>Feminine</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Assistant, helper</td>
<td>Aide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eagle; a great genius</td>
<td>aigle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an angel</td>
<td>ange</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an alder-tree</td>
<td>aune</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>barb, a Barbary horse</td>
<td>barbe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bard, a poet</td>
<td>barde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>red-breast</td>
<td>berce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a sort of privateer</td>
<td>capre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a scroll, or ornament</td>
<td>cartouche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>in painting</td>
<td>coche</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a caravan, a hoy</td>
<td>cornette</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cornet, a standard-bearer</td>
<td>couple</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a couple, a man and wife</td>
<td>cravate</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Croat, a Croatian soldier</td>
<td>echo</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an echo, the return of</td>
<td>enseigne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sound</td>
<td>exemple</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ensign, an officer who</td>
<td>forêt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>carries a flag</td>
<td>fouët</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>example, model, instance</td>
<td>foudre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a drill, a piercer</td>
<td>garde</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>un foudre de guerre</td>
<td>givre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>foudre d'éloquence</td>
<td>greffe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>keeper, warden</td>
<td>gueule</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hoar-frost</td>
<td>guide</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>the rolls, a register</td>
<td>heliotrope</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gules in heraldry</td>
<td>iris</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>guide, director</td>
<td>livre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>heliotrope, sunflower</td>
<td>loutre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>iris, the rainbow; iris of</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>the eye.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a book</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a hat of otter’s hair</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

N. B. Of this table it is to be remarked, that the French word stands in the middle column, and its signification on the right hand and on the left. When it has the meaning which stands on the left, it is the masculine; when that which stands to the right is feminine.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th><strong>Masculine</strong></th>
<th><strong>Feminine</strong></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>handle of a tool</td>
<td>manche, English</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a labourer</td>
<td>a sleeve, English</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mémoire; a bill</td>
<td>manœuvre, channel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>thanks</td>
<td>the working of a ship</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mood; mode</td>
<td>mémoire, memory</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a pier, or mound</td>
<td>merci, pity, mercy</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mould, cast, form</td>
<td>mode, fashion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a ship-boy</td>
<td>mole, mole, moon-calf</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>the philosopher's stone</td>
<td>muscle, a shell fish</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>office, business; prayers</td>
<td>œuvre, action, an author’s works</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ombre, a game at cards</td>
<td>office, pantry larder, buttery</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>page of a prince, etc.</td>
<td>ombre, shade, shadow</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a hand's breadth</td>
<td>palme, the branch of a palm-tree</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>easter, easter-day</td>
<td>pâque, victory</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a comparison</td>
<td>parallèle, a parallel line</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pendulum</td>
<td>pendule, a clock</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>le Perche, in France</td>
<td>perche, pole, perch, a fish</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>summit, highest-pitch</td>
<td>période, period, epocha</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spade, at cards</td>
<td>piqued, a pike</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gnatsnapper, a bird</td>
<td>pivoine, peony, a flower</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a plane-tree</td>
<td>plane, a flying-pan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a stove, a canopy</td>
<td>poêle, the post for letters</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>post; a military station</td>
<td>poste, the laying of eggs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>punto at cards</td>
<td>pourpre, purple fish; purple die</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>purple colour; purples</td>
<td>quadrille, party of horse in a tourney</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(a distemper)</td>
<td>réclame, a catch-word (in printing)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>quadril at cards</td>
<td>relâche, harbour</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>the calling back a hawk</td>
<td>remise, a coach-house; a delay</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rest, relaxation</td>
<td>sans-œuf, a sort of pear</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a glass coach</td>
<td>satyre, a satire, a lampoon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a sort of pear-tree</td>
<td>serpentera, make-root, dragon's wort</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>satyr, a sylvan god</td>
<td>somme, sum; load; name of a river</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>serpantarius</td>
<td>souris, a mouse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nap, slumber</td>
<td>tour, tower; rook at chess</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a smile</td>
<td>triomphe, a trump</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a tour; turn; trick</td>
<td>trompette, trumpet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>triumph</td>
<td>vague, a wave, surge</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>trumpeter</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>the airy plains</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Of the French Nouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Masculine</th>
<th>Feminine</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>a vase, vessel</td>
<td>vase</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a hat of vigon's wool</td>
<td>vigogne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>a veil</td>
<td>voile</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\{ the slime in ponds, lakes, etc. \}
\{ a vigon, or llama \}
\{ a sail \}

SUBSTANTIVES DENOTING SPECIES,

WHICH HAVE A FIXED GENDER INDEPENDENTLY OF TERMINATION.

1 God, his angels, cherubim and seraphim, are of the masculine gender.

2 *All* terms seeming to constitute an appellation, and all proper names of men and women are of the gender of the sex to which they respectively belong, as are likewise all names of animals, when the male is distinguished from the female by a different denomination; but when the same name is used for both male and female, as un éléphant, un zèbre, une panthère, un vautour, un cygne, une caille, une perdrix, un barbeau, une truite, un congre, its gender must then, like that of any inanimate object, be determined by its termination. Here the only difficulty respects substantives ending in e mute, all the rest being of the masculine gender, with such exceptions as will be seen page 43.

3 All diminutives of animals, when there is but one common denomination for both sexes, are of the masculine gender, whatever may be the gender of the original form from which they are derived, as un linceau, un souriceau, un perdreau, un corvillas, un carpillon, un couleuvreau, un vipereau, un bécasseau, etc. except une bécassine; but these two latter, although derived from the word bécasse, and belonging to the genus, are not of the same species. In other cases, the diminutives follow the gender their sex indicates, as un poulain, une pouliche, un cochet, une poulette.
4. Diminutives of inanimate objects generally follow the gender of their roots, as **batelet**, **maisonnette**, **globule**, from **bateau**, **maison**, **globe**, etc. except, however, **corbillon**, **solvant**, **cruchon**, **savonnette**, **trousseau**, from **corbeille**, **solive**, **cruche**, **sason**, and **trousse**, and more than thirty others.

5. All the names of the days, months, and seasons of the year, are of the **masculine gender**, except **automne**, which is of both genders; when, however, the diminutive **mi** (half) is prefixed to the name of a month, the compound word then takes the feminine gender, as **la mi-mai**, **la mi-aout**, etc. except also **la mi-carême** and saint-days, as **la Saint-Jean**, **la Toussaint**, etc.

6. All names of **trees**, except **yeuse**, a sort of oak; of **shrubs**, with some exceptions; of **metals**, without excepting **platine**, formerly feminine; of **minerals**, a few excepted; of **colours**, without excepting **l’Isabelle**, **l’Ecuille-mort**, etc. though they have a feminine termination, are all masculine.

7. All names of **mountains**, except those chains which have no singular; of **winds**, except **la bise**, **la tramontane**, **la brise**, and **les moussons**; of **towns**, except those which necessarily take the article **la** before them, as **la Rochelle**, **la Ferté-sur-Aube**, etc. and some others, are masculine.

8. **Ordinal**, **distributive**, and **proportional numbers**, **adjectives** and **infinitives** of verbs, **prepositions** and **adverbs**, all these, when used substantively, are masculine, as **le tiers**, **le quart**, **un cinquième**, **le quadruple**, **le beau**, **le sublime**, **le boire**, **le manger**, **le mieux**, **le pour**, **le contre**, **un parallèle**, (a comparison), etc. except **la moitié** and the elliptical forms of speech, **une courbe**, **une tangente**, **une perpendiculaire**, **une parallèle**, **une antique**, used for **une ligne courbe**, **une ligne tangente**, etc. **insigne** is feminine, for the same reason; the word **médaille**, or **statue** appearing to be understood.
Of the French Nouns.

9 All names of virtues are of the feminine gender, except courage, mérite.

GENDERS OF NOUNS MOSTLY DEPENDING ON THEIR TERMINATION.

10 It will be recollected that final e mute constitutes the feminine gender, and every other final letter the masculine.

11 All names of states, empires, kingdoms, and provinces, are of the gender which their terminations indicate; except le Bengale, le Mexique, le Péloponèse, le Maine, le Perche, le Rouergue, le Bigorre, le Vallage, la Franche-Comté, and perhaps a few more.

12 The names of fruits, grain, plants, and flowers, follow pretty generally the gender of their terminations, but there are too many exceptions to be introduced here.

---

TABLE.

SHEWING THE GENDER OF ALL WORDS THAT DO NOT END IN e MUTE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Masculine</th>
<th>Feminine</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>0</td>
<td>-tie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aparté, arrêté, bénéédicité, comité.</td>
<td>muté, muttié, petité, infinitié.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>-té</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>côté, été, pâté, traité, té, thé, Léthé...</td>
<td>absurtité, beauté, charité, cité, dignité, fidélité, générosité, etc. etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alibi, biribi, mundi, guil, grand merci, etc.</td>
<td>500</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40</td>
<td>-i</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fourmi, merci, ga-gui, après midi...</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>-oi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>convoi, effroi, etc.</td>
<td>loi, loi, paroi...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>-o</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ergo, vertigo, indigo, etc.</td>
<td>albugo, virago...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>-u</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fichu, cru, écu, tissu, etc.</td>
<td>bru, glu, tribu, vertu...</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>-au</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aloyau, anneau, etc.</td>
<td>eau, peau, sur-peau, sau-peau...</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NOUNS</th>
<th>FEMALE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>breuil, chevel, chevel, grief, relief</td>
<td>-é</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chant, cernin, etc.</td>
<td>-in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>an, ban, cran, etc.</td>
<td>-an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bain, gain, frein, main, nonnaise</td>
<td>-in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>secon, bastion, baston, ixion, etc.</td>
<td>-ion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>gabion, taudion, million, fion, caisson, lampion, septentrion, borbiorion, gavion, etc.</td>
<td>-ion</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>alcyon, clayon, crayon, sayon, trayon, lamproyon, Amphictyon</td>
<td>-yon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>person, bison, grison, groison, horizon, dission, tison, oison, poison, contrepoison, buson</td>
<td>-ison</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>basson, caisson, caisson, tasson, poisson, casson, housson, frisson, hérisson, manquisson, nourisson, palisson, pousson, paisson, naisson, saucisson, arcason, échanson, teison, pinson</td>
<td>-sson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>charagon, cavegon, pinson, sgon, etc.</td>
<td>-gon</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>etc.</td>
<td>etc.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The above table lists nouns and their corresponding feminine forms in French, with a focus on the suffixes that indicate gender. The table includes a variety of words, with some entries repeated to show patterns in the endings.
Of the French Nouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>MASCULINE</th>
<th>FEMININE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>brûlou, guéridou, etc.</td>
<td>doun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tendron, jeune tendron, droe, varon, etc.</td>
<td>laideron, souillon, ren</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>abatti, appentis, iris, etc.</td>
<td>brebis, souirs, chaus - souris, vis, iris</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bois, mois, carquois, harcois, etc.</td>
<td>fois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cure-dent, occident, trident, etc.</td>
<td>dent, randent, gent.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>acharnement, assortiment, etc.</td>
<td>jument</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ballet, billet, bouquet, minuit, conduit, réduit, etc. bil</td>
<td>-et</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let, brûlot, complet, etc. bout, goût, rage, etc.</td>
<td>-eit, nuit, dot, -ot glout</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>laix, choix, crucifix, prix, etc. taux, houx, courroux, époux, etc.</td>
<td>-ix, -aux, -eux, paix, croix, poix, voix, per, drix, chaus, faux, poix, voir, per</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>art, départ, champart, rompart, ef</td>
<td>-art</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fort, port, fort, tort, etc.</td>
<td>-ort</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fer, ver, hiver, etc.</td>
<td>-eit, -eir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>air, éclair, etc. tour, contour, four, etc.</td>
<td>-er, -eir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bonheur, malheur, labor, honneur, déshonneur, cœur, cheur, choufreur, pleur, équeur, secteur, etc.</td>
<td>-eir, -eur, -eir, -eur</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>fadeur, défaveur, serveur, fleur, passe-fleur, sans-fleur, frailleur, frayeur, froideur, furie, grandeur, grosseur, haineur, horreur, humeur, laideur, langueur, largeur, lenteur, liqueur, longueur, lourdure, lueur, maigreur, moiteur, noirceur, odeur, pâleur, pesanteur, peur, primeur, profondeur, quanteur, pudeur, impudeur, rigueur, roideur, rondeur, rougeur, rumeur, rumeur, saveur, senteur, soeur, souleur, splendeur, sueur, teneur, terreur, tieur, torpeur, tumeur, valeur, non-valeur, vepeur, verder, vigueur, and mours.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
There are a great many proper names of females, which, though they may not have the feminine termination, are of that gender, as the learner, from their nature, will easily comprehend; such are, among the heathens, Pallide, Cérès Thétis, Vénus, Junon, Didon, etc.; among Christian names, Sara, Délbora, Elizabeth, Agnès, etc. and many of these are contractions, as Fanchon, Louison, Manon, Jeanneton, Madelon, Margot, Babet, etc. [See Article 2 page 39.]

As this list of exceptions will be found pretty accurate, all other nouns that belong to this termination, must be strictly considered as being of the masculine gender, since they are not enumerated in this Table.

**EXPLANATION**

**OF THE ABBREVIATIONS USED IN THE EXERCISES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>m.</td>
<td>stands for masculine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>f.</td>
<td>feminine</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pl.</td>
<td>plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>s. or sing.</td>
<td>singular</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h m.</td>
<td>h mute</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>h asp.</td>
<td>h aspirated</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pr.</td>
<td>preposition</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>art.</td>
<td>article</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pr-art.</td>
<td>article contracted</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pron.</td>
<td>pronoun</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inf-1</td>
<td>present of the infinitive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inf-2</td>
<td>the past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inf-3</td>
<td>participle present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>inf-4</td>
<td>participle past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-1</td>
<td>present of the indicative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-2</td>
<td>imperfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-3</td>
<td>preterit definite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-4</td>
<td>preterit indefinite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-5</td>
<td>preterit anterior</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-6</td>
<td>pluperfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-7</td>
<td>future absolute</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ind-8</td>
<td>future anterior</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cond-1</td>
<td>present of the conditional</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cond-2</td>
<td>first conditional past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cond-3</td>
<td>second conditional past</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>imp.</td>
<td>imperative</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subj-1</td>
<td>present of the subjunctive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subj-2</td>
<td>imperfect</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subj-3</td>
<td>preterit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>subj-4</td>
<td>pluperfect</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Introduction to the Exercises.

* in the exercises denotes that the word under which it is placed, is not expressed in French.
— denotes that the English word (see page 48) is spelt alike in French, or at least the part under which this sign is placed.
≡ denotes that the French word differs from the English only by its termination, as directed page 49.

Those French words which are followed by the above signs, are to take the form which they point out.

In the Third Part, the * is no longer placed under the word, but after it.

In filling the exercises, the order of the figures placed sometimes in the phrases after the French words, is to be observed.

In the exercises, when several English words are included between a parenthesis they must be translated by the only words placed under.

INTRODUCTION

TO THE

EXERCISES.

OF THE APOSTROPHE AND ELISION IN THE FRENCH LANGUAGE.

The Apostrophe (') marks, the suppression of a vowel before another vowel, or h mute, as in l'église for la église, etc.

This suppression is called elision: a, e, i, are the only vowels liable thus to be cut off, and even of the suppression of the last of these, only two instances occur, viz. in the conjunction si before the pronoun, singular and plural, il, ils.

The a is suppressed only in la feminine, both when an article and pronoun.

But the elision of e occurs, not only in the masculine article and pronoun le, but also in many other monosyllables, such as je, me, te, se, de, ce, ne, que, and in the compound of que, such as parceque, quoi-
que, puisque, jusque, vü que, etc.
Introduction

Examples:

of la  in l’amitié  for la amitié  the friendship
la l’herbe  la berbe  the grass
le l’oiseau  le oiseau  the bird
la l’honneur  le bonheur  the honour
je j’ai  je ai  I have
me il m’oublie  il me oublie  he forgets me
te je t’aime  je te aime  I love thee
se il s’habille  il se habille  he dresses
sa vous l’aidez  vous le aidez  you help him
la vous l’obligez  vous le obligez  you oblige her
ce c’est vrai  ce est vrai  it is true
de un coup d’œil  un coup de œil a glance
ne n’oubliez pas  ne oubliez pas do not forget
que qu’attendez vous?  que attendez vous?  what do you expect?
si s’il arrive  si il arriva  if it happened
si s’ils pouvoient  si ils pouvoient  if they could
parce que parce qu’il faut  parce que  because it is
quoique quoiqu’il fasse  quoique il  whatever he
puisque puisqu’on  puisqu’on  since they tell
vous dit vous dit  you
jusqu’à demain  jusque à demain  till to-morrow
vù que vù qu’il obtiendra  vù que il obtiendra  since he will
dès que dès qu’on saura  dès que on  as soon as it
quelque quelque vient  quelque un  somebody

It is allowable either to retrench or retain the final e of the preposition entre, between, among, when it is placed before the pronouns eux, elles, and autres; but it is always rescinded in the following compound words:

Entra’cte  an entrelude
s’entra’dier  to help one another
entra’dier  to hear imperfectly
entra’ouvrir  to half open

And a few others; but it is indifferent to say:

entre eux  entre’eux  between them
entre elles  entre’elles  between them
entre autres choses  entre’autres choses  among other things
To the Exercises.

EXERCISE.

The soul; the heroine; the mind; he loves him; she
âme f.  heroine f.  esprit m. il aime 2 le 1; elle
loves her; I love this man; you do not understand
2 la 1 je aime  homme m. vous  ne entendez 2 pas 3
me; he esteem thee; he goes away; it was the golden age;
me 1; il estime 2 te 1; se en-va  ce était de or 2 âge 1;
do not go there; if he comes; if they please; what has he
* ne alles pas là  si vient  ils veulent; qu'e-t-il
said? till night; though he says; since he knows;
dit?  jusque au soir m. quelque dis; puisque sait;
when he saw; between them; somebody is come.
forsque vit; entre eux; quelque un est venu.

N. B. In the following French negative modes of
speech, which answer to the accompanying English
translation, the caret points out the place which the
French verb must occupy, whenever it is not in the
indefinite mood.

Not  ne pas  ne point  as je ne suis pas, etc.  I am not, etc.
never  ne jamais  il ne joue jamais  he never plays
nothing  ne rien  vous ne dites  you say nothing
nobody  ne personne  je ne vois personne  I see nobody
not a jot  ne goutte  je ne vois goutte  I do not see, or
no where  ne nulle  je ne vais nulle part  I go no where

But in compound tenses, it is the auxiliary verb
that parts the negative ne from the pas or point, etc.
that accompany it, as nous n'avons point parlé, we
have not spoken; on n'aurait jamais cru, one could
never have believed.

N. B. The addition of pas, or point, to the negative particle
ne, must not be considered as a second negation; but only as a
complementary part of it. For in such cases, pas, point, goutte,
are mere restrictive terms, nearly resembling the English
words, jot, bit, tittle, sometimes added to not, with this diffe-
rence, that pas and point in French have nothing trivial in
them.
Introduction.

EXERCISE.

I do not say; I have not said; I have never seen; I never

dis

ai

dit

ai

vu

(tell a falsehood); I do nothing; I have done nothing; is he

men

fais

fait

est-il

not arrived? does not he come? I see nothing; has he never seen?

arrivé

2 viens 1 vois

à

vu

be never loses his time; that (is worth) nothing. I met nobody

perd

temps

m.

cela

va

rencontré.

There are many words which are alike in both languages, and others which differ only in their termina-

tion.

The expressions, which are perfectly alike, are par-


ticularly those that have the following terminations:

-al as animal, cardinal, fatal, général, local, moral

-ble natal, original, principal, etc.

capable, fait, etc. bible, éligible, etc. noble,

double, soluble, insoluble, etc.

-ace face, grimace, grace, place, préface, race, sur-

face, trace, etc.

-ance chance, complaisance, extravagance, igno-

rance, lance, tempérance, etc.

-ence abstinence, conférence, continence, diligence,

éloquence, patience, etc.

-ice artifice, ansipes, édifice, justice, injustice,

office, orifice, précipice, solstice, etc.

-acle miracle, oracle, obstacle, receptacle, tabernac-

le, spectacle, etc.

-ade ambassade, cavalcade, brigade, esplanade, sé-

rénade, rétrograde, etc.

-age âge, adage, bandage, cage, cordage, image

page, plumage, rage, etc.

-ège collège, privilège, sacrilège, siège, sortilège,

etc.

-ge vestige, doge, barge, charge, orange, forge,

rouge, refuge, délude, etc.

-ule globule, ridicule, animalcule, corpuscule, for-

mule, module, mule, pustule, valvule, etc.

-bile débile, agile, docile, ductile, facile, fragile,

noble, reptile, versatile, etc.

-ine carabine, fascine, doctrine, héroïne, machine,

marine, famine, mine, rapine, etc.

-son action, fraction, légion, nation, opinion, pas-

sion, question, religion, etc.
To the Exercises.

-ant as arrogant, constant, élégant, éléphant, pétulant, piquant, poignant, vigilant, etc.
-ent absent, accident, compliment, augment, content, élément, fréquent, serpent, etc.

Many other English words require only the change of termination, in the following manner:

-ary into -aire as military militaire
-ory -oire glory gloire
-ey -ée clémency clémence
-ly -été beauty beauté
-ous -eux dangerous dangereux
-our -eurlour favour faveur
-or -eurl or error erreur
-ins -in clandestine clandestin
-ive -if expressive expressif
-ry -rie fury furie

N. B. Adjectives in { -eux -ive } make their feminine in { -ewe -ive }

EXERCISE.

The beauty of that fable; the horror of vice; the utility of science; the atrocity of this action; the violence of his passions; the simplicity of that machine; an audacious conspirator; the absurdity of that opinion; the military evolutions; an industrious nation; an important victory; an alimentary pension; a dangerous animal; a figurative expression; a famous general; his constant generosity; he is incapable of attention; his impudence is visible; his fidelity is indubitable, she is very attentive; your clemency is admirable; the destruction of his fortune was the consequence of his temerity; she is very scrupulous; his condition is horrible to his parents; this history is incontestable; your facility is prodigious; his perfidy is odious; it was an honor to...
Of the Substantive.

The substantivity of his sentiments is still preferable to the energy of his expressions; it was a decisive action; the carnage was terrible; that obstacle is invincible; this instrument is not harmonious; the prosperity of the wicked is not durable; your insidious presents are not acceptable; his memory is truly extraordinary; that is his principal occupation; a central position; his extravagance is visible; these arguments are insoluble.

PART I.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR NATURE AND INFLECTIONS.

There are, in French, nine sorts of words, or parts of speech, namely,

1. Substantive, or Noun | 4. Pronoun, | 7. Preposition
2. Article | 5. Verb, | 8. Conjunction,

CHAP. I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE, OR NOUN.

The substantive is a word, which serves to name a person, or thing, as Pierre, Peter; livre, book, etc.

There are two sorts of substantives, the substantive proper, or proper name, and the substantive common, also called appellative.

The proper name is that which is applied to a particular person, or thing, as César, Cesar, la Tamise, the Thames.

The substantive common is that which belongs to a whole class of objects. The word homme, man, is a substantive common, as it is applicable to any individual, as Peter, Paul, John, etc.
Of the Substantive.

Of these nouns, some are collective, and others abstract. Collectives express either a whole mass, as une armée, an army; une forêt, a forest; or a partial assemblage, as une quantité de, etc. a certain quantity of; la plupart, most part, etc.

Abstract nouns are the names of qualities abstracted from their subjects, as surface, rondeur, science, sagesse; surface, roundness, knowledge, wisdom, etc.

In substantives are to be considered Gender and Number.

OF GENDER.

There are only two genders, the masculine and feminine.

The masculine belongs to the male kind, as un homme, a man; un lion, a lion, etc.

The feminine belongs to the female kind, as une femme, a woman; une lionne, a lioness, etc.

This distinction has, through imitation, been extended to all substantives, as un livre, a book, is masculine; une table, a table, is feminine, etc. (see p. 36, 39, etc.)

OF NUMBER.

There are two numbers; the singular and the plural.

The singular expresses one single object, as un homme, un livre.

The plural announces more objects than one, as des hommes, des livres.

Proper names have no plural, as Londres, Paris, Milton, etc.
Of the Substantive.

Of the Formation of the Plural of French Substantives.

General Rule.

The singular is generally changed into a plural by adding an *s*.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>le roi the king</td>
<td>les rois the kings</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>la reine the queen</td>
<td>les reines the queens</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Exceptions.

First Exception.

Sing.     | Plural          | Singular          | Plural          |
---       | ---             | ---               | ---             |
-s       | remain un-      | -s               | as le fils, the son; | les fils, the sons. |
-x       | alterable       | -x               | la voix, the voice; | les voix, the voices |
          |                 | -x               | le nez, the nose;  | les nez, the noses. |

Second Exception.

Sing.     | Plural          | Singular          | Plural          |
---       | ---             | ---               | ---             |
-ou       | take an *x*     | -aux             | as bateau, boat; | bateaux, boats. |
            | and make        | -aux             | feu, fire;       | feux, fires.     |
-ou*      |                 | -aux             | bijou, jewel;    | bijoux, jewels.  |

Third Exception.

Sing.     | Plural          | Singular          | Plural          |
---       | ---             | ---               | ---             |
-atif     | are changed     | -aux             | as cheval, horse; | chevaux, horses. |
-atif†    | into            | -aux             | travail, work;   | travaux, works.  |

Fourth Exception.

Sing.     | Plural          | Singular          | Plural          |
---       | ---             | ---               | ---             |
-ent†     | now drop their *t* | -aux     | enfant, child;   | enfants, children. |
-ent†     | in polysyllables | -ens             | moment, moment; | moments, moments. |

* Those in -ou, that take *x* in their plural, are chou, caillou, bijou, genou, hibou, joujou, gou; the others now follow the general rule and take *s*, as clou, clous; verrou, verrous, etc.

† Several nouns in -al, as bal, cal, pal, régal, carnaval, local, etc. follow however the general rule, simply taking *s*.

‡ Those in -ail, making their plural in aux, are particularly bail, sous-bail, corail, émail, soupirail, travail, vail, vail; the rest, as attrail, détail, éventail, gouvernail, portail, sérail, etc. follow the general rule.

‡ Only polysyllables in -nt drop the *t*, but monosyllables retain it, as chant, chants; gant, gants; dent, dents; etc. except, however, gent, gens.
### Of the Article.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ail</td>
<td>aux</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bétail</td>
<td>beast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arceul</td>
<td>aieux</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ciel</td>
<td>cieux</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>œil</td>
<td>yeux</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>berceau</td>
<td>has no plural</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sheepfold</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Exercise.

The flowers of the gardens; the niceties of the languages; fleur jardins délicatesse langue
the palaces of the kings; the woods of those countries; palais rois bois pays
the walnuts of their orchards; the pictures of those painters; noix verger tableau peintre
the feathers of these birds; the melody of their voices; the plumes oiseaux voix
the gods of the pagans; the jewels of my sisters; the rabbages dieu bijou soeur chou
of our gardens; these charming places; the horses of my jardin charmains 2 lieu 1 cheval
mahal; the fans of these ladies; the (front gates) of those écurie éventail dame portail
churches; the actions of my ancestors; the evils of this église aieul mal
life, the victories of those generals; the works of those vie travail
architects; the corals of those seas; the (learned men) of — tecte corail mer savant
those times; the presents of my parents; the teeth of your temps-là — — dent
combs; the playthings of our children; the heads of these peigne joujou enfant tête
nails, clove.

### Chap. II.

**Of the Article.**

The *Article* is a small word prefixed to substantives, to determine the extent of their signification.

The French substantive article is

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>The French substantive article is</th>
<th>the plural is <em>les</em> for both genders.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><em>le</em> before a masc.</td>
<td><strong>la</strong> before a femin.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>la</strong> before a masc.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Of the Article.

EXAMPLE.

Sing. | le jour the day | la nuit the night | plur. | les jours the days | les nuits the nights

EXERCISE.

The sun, the moon, and the stars, are the glory of nature. The king, the queen, and the princes are well pleased. The rose, the violet, the tulip, the narcissus, the hyacinth, the gillyflower, the jasmine, the lily, the honeysuckle, the ranunculus, are the delight of the sight.

Poetry, painting, and music, are sister arts. The day and the night are equally necessary.

The article is subject to elision and contraction. (See p. 45 and 46.) Elision of the article is the omitting of the e in le, or the a in la, when these articles precede a noun beginning with a vowel, or h mute.

EXAMPLE.

l'argent | le argent the money
l'histoire | la histoire the history

But in this case the place of the letter thus omitted is supplied by an apostrophe.

EXERCISE.

The soul of man without cultivation is like a diamond (in the rough.) The history of Spain is sometimes very interesting. (Look at) the amaranth and the anemone; the offspring of a weak mind. Honesty, pride are always the offspring of a weak mind. Honesty, virtue are (very — art. honneur, art. vertu f. très-
Of the Article.

much) esteemed. Summer, autumn, and winter, estimes m. été art. automne art. hiver art. m.
are very changeable. France is separated from Italy by the variables art. — séparée de art. Italie par Alpes, and from Spain by the Pyrenees. Alpes, pl. art. — pl.

Contraction in grammar is the reducing of two syllables into one, and takes place when the preposition a or de precedes the article; in which case, instead of putting de le before a masculine singular, beginning with a consonant, or h aspirated, du must be employed; instead of à le, au must be used; and before the plural substantives of both genders, de les is changed into des, and à les into aux.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Du roi</th>
<th>is instead of de le roi</th>
<th>of the king</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>du héros</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>de le héros</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au roi</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>à le roi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>au héros</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>à le héros</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>des rois</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>de les rois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>des reines</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>de les reines</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aux rois</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>à les rois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aux reines</td>
<td>— —</td>
<td>à les reines</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

EXERCISE.

The top of the mountains, and the bottom of the valleys sommet m. montagne fond m. vallée are equally agreeable. Silk is soft to the touch. The également agréables art. soie f. douce tunique m. happiness of a feeling man is to relieve the wants of the bonheur m. sensible 2 l de subvenir à besoin poor. A man given to pleasure was never a great man. plaisir m. fut grand

He obeyed the orders of the king. The warbling of birds, Il obéit à ordres art. gazouillement m. art. oiseau the murmuring of streams, the enamel of meadows, the —re m. art. ruisseau émail m. art. prairie coolness of woods, the fragrance of flowers, and the sweet fraîcheur f. art. bois parfum m. art. fleur douce smell of plants, contribute greatly to the pleasure of the odeur f. art. plantes contribuent beaucoup mud and to the health of the body.

esprit santé f. corps m.

De and à are never contracted with le.
EXAMPLES.

De la reine of the queen | à la reine to the queen
Nur are de and à contracted with le, before a masculine substantive singular, beginning with a vowel or a mute.

EXAMPLES.

De l'esprit of the mind | de l'homme of man
A l'esprit to the mind | à l'homme to man

Contraction likewise does not take place, when the adjective tout, all, every, intervenes between de, or à, and the article.

EXAMPLES.

De tout le monde, of every body.
De tous les hommes, of all men.
A tout le monde. to every body.
A tous les hommes, to all men.
De toutes les vertus, of all virtues.
A toutes les maisons, to all houses.

EXERCISE.

The hope of success strengthened the cause of
espérance f. art. réussite f. fortifiée. — f.
virtue, and weakened the audaciousness of
art. vertu f. affaiblie audacieuse f. art. — f.
Fire of imagination, strength of mind, and
art. Esprit m. art. — f. art. force f. art. esprit art.
fruits of soul, are gifts of nature. We saw
fermé f. art. éne des dons m. pl. art. — f. Nous vimes
with horror that man given up to
avarice and voluptuousness. Good cultivation is that which contributes
l'âme f. art. bonne culture f. ce qui contribue
most to the fertility of the soil. More or less pain
le plus = terref. Plus ou moins de peine
is the lot of every body. The history of man under
partage m. tout art. monde m. = art. sous
all the circumstances of life, is the study of the
écoles f. art. circonstance f. art. vie f. étude
wise. Playful, does not become all ages
sage m. art. Enfance m. * ne sied ni à art. — m. pl.
nor all characters.
ni à art. enfant m. pl.

1. GENERAL RULE. In French, the article always
agrees in gender and number with the substantive to
which it relates.
EXAMPLES.

e livre que je cherche,  |  The book which I am looking for.
La femme que je vois,  |  The woman whom I see.
Les hommes qui étudient,  |  The men that study.

EXERCISE.

The father, mother, brothers, sisters, père m. art. mère f. art. frère m. pl. art. sœurs f. pl.
uncles, aunts, and several other relations art. oncles m. pl. art. tantes f. pl. plusieurs autres parents m. pl.
were present. What we value is health, frugality, étaient présents. Ce que nous estimons c’est art. santé f. art. = f.
liberty, vigour of mind and body; it is the love of art. = f. art. vigueur f. art. art. corps m. ce = amour m.
virtue, reverence for the gods, fidelity to all art. f. art. craindre f. de art. = f. envers
mankind, moderation in prosperity, for-
art. monde m. art. = f. dans art. = f. art. fortitude in adversity, courage, good morals, and the ce f. art. = f. art. = m. art. bonnes mœurs f. pl.
abhorrence of flattery.
horreur f. m. art. = f.

II. General Rule. The article and the prepositions à and de, whether contracted or not, are invariably to be repeated before every substantive.

EXAMPLES.

L’esprit, les grâces, et la beauté nous captivent.
Je vis hier le roi, la reine, et les princes.
L’ignorance est la mère de l’erreur, de l’admiration, et des préventions de toute espèce.

EXERCISE.

Innocence of manners, sincerity, obedience, art. = f. art. mœurs, pl. art. = f. art. obéissance f.
and abhorrence of vice, inhabit this happy region. art. honneur, h m. art. = m. habitez = heureuse = f.
The plants of the garden, the animals of the forests, the minerals plants jardins m. — forêt f.
of the earth, the meteors of the sky, must all concur terre f. météore — ciel, m. doivent tous concourir
to store the mind with an inexhaustible variety. Neither d’enrichir par inépuisable 2 = f.,
Of the Article.

suffering, punishment nor kindness make any
art. peine f. art. châtiment m. * art. caresse f. pl. ne font nulle
impression on those minds. The lily is the emblem of
— sur âme pl. lis m. symbole m.
virginity, candour, innocence and
art. = f. de art. = f. de art. — f. de art.
purity,
pureté f.

Deu, de la, de l', des, answering to the English par-
titive some expressed, or understood, have by way of
ellipsis passed into habitual use.

EXAMPLES.

Je mange du pain. I eat bread.
Il prend de la peine. He takes some trouble.
Nous mangeons du hachis. We eat some hash.
Elle connaît de la haine. She conceives a hatred.
Vous avez de l'amitié. You have some friendship.
Vous prenez de l'humeur. You go into an ill humour.
Nous cueillons des pommes. We gather apples.
 Ils vendent des oranges. They sell oranges.

EXERCISE.

Give me some bread and butter. Offer him some
Donnez-moi pain m. pr. art. beurre m. Offrez-lui
meat. Take some salt. (There is) mustard. We
viande f. Prenez sel m. Voië pr. art moutarde f. Nous
have some girkel. Shall I offer you some fowl? Shall
avons cornichons pl. Vous offrirai-je poulet m. Vous
I help you to some fruit? I will take (with pleasure) some
servirai-je * — m. Je prendrai volontiers
broth. Bring me some bread. Pour me out some beer,
bouillon m. Appartenez-moi Verssez-moi * bière f.
Drink some wine. Take some tea. Put (in it) some sugar
Buvez vin m. Preniez thé m. Mettez-y sucre m.
and milk. I hear some noise. There falls some hail
and m. Je entends bruit m. Il tombe grêle f. s.
pr. art. lait m. Elle a pr. art. orgueil m. Avez-vous pr. art. encore f. pr. art.
She has some pride. Have you any ink and
pens? Put some oil and vinegar to the salad.
pr. orgueil m. Étes-vous pr. art. encore f. pr. art.
pr. art. pens? Put some oil and vinegar to the salad.
plumes pl. Mettez huile, à m. pr. art. vinaigre m. dans salade.
Eat some lobster. He has received some gold and
pr. art. homard m. à. ap. Il a veçu or m.
Mangez pr. art. argent m.

silver.
pr. orgueil m.
CHAP. III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE

The adjective is a word which is added to a substantive to express its quality, as

bon père  good father  bonne mère  good mother
beau livre  fine book  belle image  fine image

These words bon, bonne, beau, belle, are adjectives, as they express the qualities of père, mère, livre, image.

A word is known to be an adjective, when it can be properly joined with the word personne, or the word chose. Thus, habile, skilful, and agréable, agreeable, are adjectives, because we can say personne habile, skilful person; chose agréable, agreeable thing.

In French the adjective takes the gender and number of the substantive to which it relates. This difference of gender and number is generally marked by the termination.

OF THE FORMATION OF THE FEMININE OF FRENCH ADJECTIVES.

RULE I. All adjectives ending in the singular in e mute, are of both genders.

EXAMPLES.

Un homme aimable,  An amiable man
Une femme aimable,  An amiable woman

RULE II. Whenever the adjective does not end in e mute, the e mute is added to form its feminine.

EXAMPLES.

m. prudent  prudent  sensé  sensible
tortu  tortue  instruit  instructed

f. prudente  sensible  polie  polite
tortue  tortue  instruite  instructed

RULE III. Adjectives in -el, -eil, -ien, -on, and -et, to form their feminine double their last consonant and take e mute.
Of the Adjective.

EXAMPLES.

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
\text{cruel} & \text{cruelle} & \text{cruel} \\
\text{pareil} & \text{pareille} & \text{like} \\
\text{ancien} & \text{ancienne} & \text{ancient} \\
\text{bon} & \text{bonne} & \text{good} \\
\text{net*} & \text{nette} & \text{clean} \\
\end{array}
\]

\[
\text{= 50} \\
\text{= 3} \\
\text{= 80} \\
\text{= 18} \\
\text{= 34}
\]

of each termination.

RULE IV. Adjectives ending in \(j\) change this letter into \(e\), and take \(e\) mute.

EXAMPLES.

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
\text{bref} & \text{brève} & \text{short} \\
\text{actif} & \text{active} & \text{active} \\
\text{naïf} & \text{naïve} & \text{ingenous} \\
\text{neuf} & \text{neuve} & \text{new}
\end{array}
\]

RULE V. Adjectives ending in \(-x\) change \(-x\) into \(s\), and take \(e\) mute.

EXAMPLES.

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
\text{honteux} & \text{honteuse} & \text{ashamed} \\
\text{vertueux} & \text{vertueuse} & \text{virtuous} \\
\text{jalous} & \text{jalous} & \text{jalous}
\end{array}
\]

RULE VI. Adjectives, or rather substantives, ending in \(-eur\), derived from verbs. Generally change the \(r\) into \(s\), and take \(e\) mute; but several, mostly of Latin origin, require \(-eur\) to be changed into \(-rice\); in others \(-eur\) is transformed into \(-resse\), and about twelve, as \(antérieur\), \(critère\), \(extérieur\), \(intérieur\), \(inférieur\), \(meilleur\), \(mineur\), \(majeur\), \(postérieur\), \(supérieur\), \(ultrière\), \(prieur\), take only an \(e\) mute, and follow the Second Rule.

EXAMPLES.

\[
\begin{array}{ccc}
\text{trompeur} & \text{trompée} & \text{deceitful} \\
\text{mentreur} & \text{menteuse} & \text{lying} \\
\text{parlier} & \text{parleuse} & \text{talkative} \\
\text{acteur} & \text{actrice} & \text{actor, actress} \\
\text{accusateur} & \text{accusatrice} & \text{accuser} \\
\text{admirateur} & \text{admiratrice} & \text{admirer} \\
\text{enchanteur} & \text{enchanteuse} & \text{enchanting} \\
\text{peché} & \text{pecheresse} & \text{sinful} \\
\text{venger} & \text{vengeresse} & \text{avenging}
\end{array}
\]

EXERCISE.

She is decent. This house is well situated. This pear

\[
\text{Elle} \quad \text{Cette maison f. bien situé} \quad \text{poire f.}
\]
Of the Adjective.

is too ripe. She is tall and well formed. This story is
trop mûr grand bien fait histoire f.
very entertaining. This person is very volatile. This moun-
très-amusant personne f. bien léger mon-
tain is steep. This road is not very safe. The door is not
tagne f. escarpé route f. stir porte f.
open. This room is dark. This street is too narrow. It is
ouvert chambre f. obscur rue f. étroit Ce
an ancient custom. She has carnatión lips.
His coutumes t. a art. vermeil 2 lever t. pl. 1 Sa
memory will be immortal. His manners are natural. The
= f. serv - tel. Ses manières f. pl. naif
engagement was warm. (That is) an original thought. This
action f. fut vif void neuf 2 pensée f. 1.
cloth is the best of all. They are delusive pro-
étoff f. meilleur f. pl. Ce des tromper 2 prom-
ises. He seduces by his fawning manners. The
messe f. pl. 1. réduit par flattère 2 manières f. pl. 1.
delightful valley of Tempe is in. Thessaly.
delicieux vallée f. Tempe dans art. = f.

EXCEPTIONS TO THE SECOND RULE.

The following adjectives double the last consonant
in forming the feminine:

m. f. m. f.
bas - base low épais épaisse thick
gras - grasse fat métis métisse mongrel
las - lasso tired gros gross big
exprés express express not 1 sotte silly
profès - professé - professé or nul nulle no

OTHER EXCEPTIONS TO THE SECOND AND FIFTH RULES.

The following adjectives form their feminine by
doubling the l in the masculine before a vowel.

m. f. m. f.
bel beau belle fine fou fol folle mad
nouveau nouvel nouvelle new mou mol molle soft
vieux vieil vieille old mol molle soft

The following are entirely irregular.

G
Of the Adjective.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>m.</th>
<th>f.</th>
<th>m.</th>
<th>f.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>blanc</td>
<td>blanche</td>
<td>faux</td>
<td>fausse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>franc</td>
<td>fraîche</td>
<td>roux</td>
<td>rousse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>frais</td>
<td>fraîche</td>
<td>doux</td>
<td>douce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Grec</td>
<td>Grecque</td>
<td>aigre-doux</td>
<td>aigre-douce tariish sweet</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>public</td>
<td>publique</td>
<td>tiers</td>
<td>tierce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>caduc</td>
<td>caduque</td>
<td>tars</td>
<td>tors, or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Turc</td>
<td>Turque</td>
<td>coi</td>
<td>coite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>long</td>
<td>longue</td>
<td>favori</td>
<td>favorite</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>benin</td>
<td>benigne</td>
<td>jumeau</td>
<td>jumelle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>malin</td>
<td>malignant</td>
<td>traître</td>
<td>traîtresse</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Prefix m. makes préfixe f. and is the only adjective in -x, which preserves this letter and follows the second rule.

Some adjectives have no feminine, as bischê, dispos, fat, paillet, etc.; others have no masculine, as blette, etc.

EXERCISE.

The grass is very thick. That soup is very good, but too fat.

herbe f. soupe f. mais trop

It is a foolish undertaking. There is no truth in all that.

soit entreprise f. Il n'y a nul vérité f. dans tout cela

This water is not clean. It is a very silly history. It is in the

eau f. net. Ce 2 fol 3 = f. 1 à

newest fashion. It is a fine statue. The law is express upon

nouveau mode f. beau—f. lot f. sur that point. He lives in a state of luxurious idleness. This wax

—m. Il vit dans * * mou. osiuieté f. cire f.

is not very white. She is as fresh as a rose. The paint

comme — f. peinture f.

on that wainscot is not dry. His answer is a mere evasion.

de lambris m. réponse f. franc défaite f.

The thing is public. That plant possesses a pernicious

chose f. herbe f. a malin 2

property. She is of a benevolent character. The avenging

qualité f. 1 a * benin 2 humeur f. vengeur 2
Of the Adjective.

thunderbolt smote that impious wretch. He extended to
foudre f. 1 frappe impie m. tendu 2 us a protecting hand. This woman is jealous and deceit-
sous 1 leur 2 main f. 1 femme f. jalous faux
ful. His temper is mild. This colour is too red. These old
Son humeur f. doux couleur l. troyous
clothes are good for nothing.
hardes f. pl. ne d rien.

OF THE FORMATION OF THE PLURAL FRENCH

ADJECTIVES.

GENERAL RULE. Every adjective forms its plural by
the simple addition of s, as bon, bons, bonne, bonnes, po-
it, polis, polie, polies. This rule is without exception,
as it regards the feminine termination; but the mas-
culine has the four following exceptions.

EXCEPTIONS.

1. Adjectives ending in -s, or -x, do not change their
termination in the plural, as gros, gras, hideux.

2. Those ending in -au, take x in the plural, as beau,
beaux, nouveau, nouveaux.

3. Some adjectives in -al, change this termination
into aux, as égal, equal, égaux; général, généaux;
but most of these have no plural masculine, as amical,
austral, boréal, canonial, conjugal, diaméral, fatal, fil-
ial, final, frugal, jovial, lustral, matinal, naval, pastoral,
péctoral, special, vénal, and some others.

4. Polysyllables ending in -nt, according to the most
general practice, drop the t in the plural, as excellent,
excellens; but monosyllables retain it, as lent, slow,
lents. The adjective tout, all, makes tous.

EXERCISE.

They are envious and jealous. Those fowls are big and
Its poulet m. pl.

fat. Owls are frightful birds. (There
art. aïbou m. pl. des hideux 2 oiseau m. pl. 1. Voici
are) some beautiful jewels. The two new operas
de beau bijou m. pl. deux nouveau — m. pl.
have succeeded. Men are only equal in the
ont réussi art. 2 ne 1 que 4 3 par
Of the Adjective.

Infirmities of nature. The general officers are
art — f. — 2 officiers m. pl. 1
assembled. This fruit is excellent. His proficiency
— bist — m. pl. sont — Ses progrès m. pl.
is slow, but solid. All his friends have been very glad to
son solide ami m. pl. ont été bien aise de
see him. Those ladies are tired with walking. You
voir 2 le 1 dame f. pl. las de marcher Vous
have powerful enemies, but their efforts will be vain
avex-de ennemi m. pl. mais leurs m. pl. seront —
and useless. The four cardinal points are the east,
inutile quatre point m. pl. 1. orient m.
west, south, and north.
art. occident m. art. midi m. art. nord m.

Of the degrees of signification of the adjective.

Grammarians commonly reckon three degrees of
comparison; the positive, the comparative, and the
superlative.

The positive is the adjective expressing the quality
of an object, without any increase or diminution, as
beau, belle.

Exercise.
A child gentle, amiable, and docile, is beloved by every
enfant m. doux, aimable — aime de tout
body. An ingenuous candour, an amiable simplicity and a
le monde. — un 2 = f. 1
lively artlessness are the charm of youth. The
piqué 2 naïveté f. 1 charme m. art. jeunesse f.
sight of an agreeable landscape is a varied and rapid source
vue f. agréable paysage m. variété 2 rapide 3 — f. 1
do delightf ul sensations.
déliciieux 2 — f. pl. 1.

The comparative is so called, because it draws a com-
parison between two or many objects. When two
things are compared, the one is either superior, infer-
ior, or equal to the other; hence three sorts of com-
parison, that of superiority, inferiority, and equality.

N. B. The adverbs plus, moins, and aussi, which mark
these three kinds of comparison, are to be repeated
before every adjective, when several are joined to the
same substantive, and are followed by the conjunction
que, rendered in English by than, or as.

The comparative of superiority is formed by putting
plus, more, before the adjective, and que, than, after
it.


Of the Adjective.

EXAMPLE.

La rose est plus belle que la violette, The rose is more beautiful than the violet.

EXERCISE.

The republic of Athens was more illustrious than that of Lacedemon. Homer was, perhaps, a greater genius than Virgil; but Virgil had a more delicate and refined taste than Homer. Milton appears (to me) more sublime than all the other epic poets.

autre 1 épique 3 poète m. pl. 2.

The comparative of inferiority is formed by prefixing moins, less, to the adjective, and adding que, than, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La violette est moins belle que la rose.

EXERCISE.

Shipwreck and death are less fatal than the pleasures which attack virtue. The violet is less brilliant to the eye than the lily, a true emblem of modesty and pride. Autumn is less varied than spring, but it is richer.

The comparative of equality is formed by placing aussi, as, before the adjective, and que, as, after it.

EXAMPLE.

La tulipe est aussi belle que la rose.

EXERCISE.

Pope's images are as perfect as his style is harmonious. Delicacy of taste is a gift of nature.
Of the Adjective.

ture as scarce as true genius. The love of our neighbour
rare art. vrai génie m. amour du prochain
is as necessary in society for the happiness of
= dans art. =l. pour bonheur m. art. vie l.
as in Christianity for eternal salvation. It is as easy
art. même m. art. même 2 salut m. 1 aisé
to do good as to do evil.
de faire art. bien m. de art. mal m.

The three following adjectives, meilleur, better, pire, worse, moindre, less, are comparatives in themselves.

N. B. As most beginners are apt to confound these comparatives adjectives with the comparative adverbs, mieux, pis, and moins, because they are generally rendered by the same English words better, worse, and less, it may be advisable to subjoin here these comparative adverbs with their positives, that the difference of meaning may serve as a distinction.

Adjectives.

Meilleur, better, is the comparative of bon, good, and is used instead of plus bon, which is never said.

Pire signifies plus mauvais, worse, or more wicked, and is used instead of this.

Moindre means plus petit, less, or smaller, and is used instead of these terms.

Mieux, better, is the comparative of bien, well, and is used instead of plus bien, more well, which is said in neither language.

Pis* is the comparative of mal, badly, and is used for plus mal, worse, which is likewise employed.

Moins is the comparative of peu, little, and is used for plus peu, which is never heard.

Adverbs.

Ce fruit-là est bon, mais celui-ci est meilleur.
Sa condition est mauvaise, mais elle a été pire.
Ma dépense est petite mais la vôtre est moindre.
Il se conduit bien, mais elle se conduit encore mieux.
Il se portait mal, mais il est pis que jamais.
Je parle peu, vous parlez encore moins.

EXAMPEES.

Ce fruit-là est bon, mais celui-ci est meilleur.
Sa condition est mauvaise, mais elle a été pire.
Ma dépense est petite mais la vôtre est moindre.
Il se conduit bien, mais elle se conduit encore mieux.
Il se portait mal, mais il est pis que jamais.
Je parle peu, vous parlez encore moins.

That fruit is good, but this is better.
His condition is bad, but it has been worse.
My expense is small, but yours is smaller.
He behaves well, but she behaves still better.
He was badly, but he is worse than ever.
I speak little, you speak still less.

* There are some instances of pis and mieux used adjectively, but this is not the place to notice them.
EXERCISE.

His reasoning is not better than yours. Your style is Son raisonnement m. le vôtre Vôtre m.
(a great deal) better than that of his brother. The thickness of de beaucoup celui son épaisseur f.
this wall is less than that of the next wall. This column. mur m. celle voisin 2 1 colonne f.
is less than the other in height and thickness. The remedy autre en hauteur f. en grosseur f. remède m.
is worse than the disease. Your horse is worse than mine. mal m. cheval m. le mien.

The adjective is in the superlative degree, when it expresses the quality in a very high, or in its highest state: hence there are two sorts of superlatives, the absolute and the relative.

The superlative absolute is formed by putting très, fort, bien, very, before the adjective; it is called absolute, because it does not express any relation to other objects.

EXAMPLE.

Londres est une très-belle ville. | London is a very fine city.

REMARK. The adverbs extrêmement, extremely, infiniment, infinitely, are likewise marks of the superlative absolute.

EXAMPLES.

Cet homme est extrêmement savant. | That man is extremely learned.

Dieu est infiniment heureux. | God is infinitely blessed.

EXERCISE.

That landscape is very diversified, very extensive, and indefinite agreeable on every side. The Alps are very high and agréable de tout côté m. f. pl. haut very steep. The style of Fénelon is very rich, and very escarpe. —m. — harmonious, but it is sometimes prolix; that of Bossuet it — il quelquefois prolix; celui extremely sublime, but it is sometimes harsh and unpolished. élevé dur rude

The superlative relative is formed by prefixing the article le to the comparatives meilleur, moindre, pire, and to the adverbs plus and moins; it is called relative, as it expresses a relation to other objects.
Of the Adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Londres est la plus belle des villes. London is the finest of cities.

Je préfère une maison de campagne au plus beau palais. I prefer a country-house to the finest palace.

Plus and moins with the article are repeated before every adjective.

EXERCISE.

The most beautiful comparison que il y ait peut-être dans any language, is that which Pope has drawn from the Alps, au vallon langue f. celle que tiré f. de in his Essay on Criticism. The most able men are dans son Essai sur l'art. Critique f. habile gens m. pl. not always the most virtuous. The most ancient and most toujours vertueux f. general of all kinds of idolatry, was the worship rendu art. espèce f. pl. = étoit culte m. rendu to the sun. The least excusable of all errors is du soleil m. art. = f. that which is wilful.

celle qui volontaire.

AGREEMENT OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE SUBSTANTIVE.

Rule I. The adjective always agrees in gender and number with the substantive to which it relates.

EXAMPLES.

Le bon père, The good father.

La bonne mère, The good mother.

De beaux jardins, Fine gardens.

De belles promenades, Fine walks.

Bon is masculine singular, because père is masculine, and in the singular; bonne is feminine singular, because mère is feminine, and in the singular; beaux is in the masculine plural, because jardins is masculine, and plural, etc.

EXERCISE.

These bills are covered with trees. loaded with coteau m. pl. fruit already ripe. A pure stream rolls its limpid couvert de arbres m. pl. chargé de — m. pl. déjà mûr. clair ruisseau m. roule son limpide 2 water through the midst of meadows. enroulé with cristal m. 1 d. — milieu m. prairie f. pl. émaillé de flowers. (Every thing) interests the heart in this abode fleur f. pl. bout interresse cœur m. séjour m.
Of the Adjective.

which is full of charms. Fly, inconsiderate youth,
* * * plein attrait m. pl. Fugez, —déré 2 jeunesse f. 1
fly from the enchanting allurements of a vain world:
* — leur 2 attrait 1 — 2 monde m. 1
its pernicious sweets are a slow poison which (would
see — de 2 douceur f. pl. 1 lent 2 — m. qui dé-
destroy) in your soul the noble enthusiasm of goodness,
truirot dans âme — enthousiasme m. art. bien m.
and the precious seeds of sublime virtues.
— germe m. art. — 2 vertu 1.

RULE II. When the adjective relates to two substantives singular of the same gender, it must be put in the plural, and agree with them in gender.

EXAMPLE.

Le roi et le berger sont égaux | The king and the shepherd are
après la mort. | equal after death.

EXERCISE.

Uprightness and piety are much esteemed, even by
art. droiture f. art. piété f. très estimé même de
the wicked. A man in the most elevated
méchant pl. * art. dans élevé 2 art. etat 1
and a man in the most obscure situation, are equally
* art. élevé 2 art. etat m. 1 également
precious in the eyes of God. Pilpay and Confucius are very
d premiums in the eyes of God. Pilpay and Confucius are very
célébrés parmi peuples m. pl. art.
célébrés parmi peuples m. pl. art.

RULE III. When the two substantives, to which the adjective relates, are of different genders, the adjective is to be put in the masculine plural.

EXAMPLE.

Mon père et ma mère sont contents, | My father and mother are contented.

EXERCISE.

His probity and disinterestedness are known (every where).
— f. son désintéressement m. connu partout
The love of life, and the fear of death, are
amour m. art. vie f. crainte art. mort f.
natural to man. Ignorance and self-love are
— rel. art. art. — f. art. amour-propre m.
equally presumptuous. My sister and brother were very
précieux f. mon m. ont été
attentive to the instructions of their masters.
— mère m. pl.
Nouns and Adjectives of Number.
Numbers are divided into five classes, viz. cardinal, ordinal, collective, distributive, and proportional.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Cardinal Number</th>
<th>Ordinal Number</th>
<th>Numerical Collective Noun</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1 un, une</td>
<td>premier</td>
<td>first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2 deux</td>
<td>deuxième</td>
<td>2d</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3 trois</td>
<td>troisième</td>
<td>3rd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4 quatre</td>
<td>quatrième</td>
<td>4th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5 cinq</td>
<td>cinquième</td>
<td>5th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6 six</td>
<td>sixième</td>
<td>6th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 sept</td>
<td>septième</td>
<td>7th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8 huit</td>
<td>huitième</td>
<td>8th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 neuf</td>
<td>neuvième</td>
<td>9th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10 dix</td>
<td>dixième</td>
<td>10th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11 onze</td>
<td>onzième</td>
<td>11th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12 douze</td>
<td>douzième</td>
<td>12th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13 treize</td>
<td>treizième</td>
<td>13th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14 quatorze</td>
<td>quatorzième</td>
<td>14th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15quinze</td>
<td>quinzième</td>
<td>15th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16 seize</td>
<td>seizième</td>
<td>16th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17 dix-sept</td>
<td>dix-septième</td>
<td>17th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18 dix-huit</td>
<td>dix-huitième</td>
<td>18th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19 dix-neuf</td>
<td>dix-neuvième</td>
<td>19th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20 vingt</td>
<td>vingtième</td>
<td>20th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21 vingt-et-un</td>
<td>vingt-et-unième</td>
<td>21st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22 vingt-deux</td>
<td>vingt-deuxième, etc.</td>
<td>22nd</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30 trente</td>
<td>trentième</td>
<td>30th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31 trente-et-un, etc.</td>
<td>trente-unième</td>
<td>31st</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>40 quarante</td>
<td>quarantième</td>
<td>40th</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41 quarante-et-un</td>
<td>quarantième</td>
<td>41st</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

unité couple, paire
unite couple
trio deux couples
demi-douzaine half a dozen
week nine days of prayer
neuvaine dixaine half a score
quinsaine fortnight, etc.
### Of the Adjective.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CARDINAL NUMBER</th>
<th>ORDINAL NUMBER</th>
<th>NUMERAL COLLECTIVE NOUNS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>50</td>
<td>cinquante</td>
<td>cinquantième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>51</td>
<td>cinquante-</td>
<td>cinquante-unième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60</td>
<td>soixante</td>
<td>soixantième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>61</td>
<td>soixante-</td>
<td>soixante-unième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>70</td>
<td>soixante-dix</td>
<td>soixante-dixième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>71</td>
<td>soixante-onze</td>
<td>soixante-onzième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>72</td>
<td>soixante-</td>
<td>soixante-douzième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>80</td>
<td>quatre-vingts</td>
<td>quatre-vingtième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>81</td>
<td>quatre-vingt</td>
<td>quatre-vingtième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>90</td>
<td>quatre-vingts</td>
<td>quatre-vingtième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>91</td>
<td>quatre-vingt</td>
<td>quatre-vingtième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>100</td>
<td>cent</td>
<td>centième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>101</td>
<td>cent-un,</td>
<td>cent-un-ième, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>200</td>
<td>deux cents</td>
<td>deux-centième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,000</td>
<td>mille</td>
<td>millième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2,000</td>
<td>deux mille, etc.</td>
<td>deux-millième, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10,000</td>
<td>dix mille</td>
<td>dix-millième</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1,000,000</td>
<td>mille fois mille</td>
<td>millionième</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Un milliard, or billion, a thousand millions, un trillion, etc.*

**Note:** The table lists cardinal numbers, ordinal numbers, and their corresponding collective nouns. The numbers range from 50 to 1,000,000, and the collective nouns vary from millionth to millions.
The formation of the ordinal number from the cardinal does not require any explanation, except that -ième is only found in compound numbers, where premier and second are inadmissible.

When mentioning the days of the month, the French make use of the cardinal instead of the ordinal number, and say, le onze d’avril, not le onzième, etc. le vingt-cinq du mois prochain, and not le vingt-cinquième, etc. except, however, that instead of l’un du mois, they say, le premier, the first day of, etc. and sometimes le second, though not so well, for le deux; but this proceeds no farther.

Mille never takes s in the plural; thus vingt mille is twenty thousand, and not vingt milles, which would mean twenty miles; and when mentioning the Christian era, it is customary to curtail this word into mil, and to write, for example, l’an mil huit cent dix-huit, and never l’an mille, etc.

There are many other numerical expressions used in poetry, music, games, etc. as distique, tercet, quatrain, sixain, huitain, etc. solo, duo, trio, quatuor, quinte, quinte, octave, etc. bise, sonnez, etc.

Un millier is very often employed for one thousand weight, but quintal is never used except in the sense of one hundred weight.

The distributive numbers are those which express the different parts of a whole; as la moitié, the half; le quart, the quarter; un cinquième, a fifth, etc.

The proportional denote the progressive increase of things; as le double, the double; le triple, the treble; le centuple, a hundred-fold, etc.
Of the Pronoun.

CHAP. IV.

OF THE PRONOUN.

A pronoun is a word substituted in the place of a noun.

There are several kinds of pronouns, as the personal, possessive, relative, absolute, demonstrative, and indefinite.

§ 1.

OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Personal pronouns are used for the names of persons, or things.

There are three persons: the first who speaks; the second who is spoken to; and the third is the person or thing spoken of.

PRONOUNS OF THE FIRST PERSON.

Singular.

Subject. je I
me à moi to me
moi for

Object. me il me donne
moi il me blesse

Je l’ouvre Dieu I praise God
me donne he gives me
me blesse he hurts me
me help me

Plural.

Subj. nous we
nous à nous to us
nous il nous donne he gives us

Obj.

nous for
nous us
nous il nous blesse he hurts us

They are both masculine and feminine, that is, of the same gender as the person or persons they represent.

In general, je and me are put before the verb; moi after it; and nous before, but sometimes likewise after it.

EXERCISE.

I cast my eyes upon the objects which surrounded me, portai vue l. s. sur objet qui environnait me and saw with pleasure that all was calm and tranquil. Do je vis avec que était calme tranquilles *
you not see in all the features of my father that he is 3 14 voyes 2 dans trait m. pl. que
Of the Personal Pronouns.

satisfied with me? We have told the truth. What were content de moi avons dit vérité. Que they saying of us? If we desire to be happy, we must on 2 disoit 1 Si détrons de devons 2 not déviate from the path of virtue. 1 3 nous écartes de sentier m. art.

PRONOUNS OF THE SECOND PERSON.

Singular.

Subj. tu | . . . . . . . thou | tu crains Dieu | thou fearest God
t | à toi | to thee | i te parle he speaks to thee
t | toi | thee | il te voit he sees thee
t | toi | thee | donne-toi la give thyself the trouble
Obj. te | for | to thee | peine dress thyself

toi | à toi | to thee | habille-toi

Plural.

Subj. vous | . . . . . . . ye, or you | vous saluez Dieu | you praise God
Obj. vous | for | à vous | il vous parle he speaks to you
vous | vous | you | il vous respecte he respects you

In general tu and te are put before the verb, toi after, and vous before, but sometimes after it.

Remark. Politeness has led to the use of the plural vous, instead of the singular tu; as vous êtes bien bon, you are very good, for tu es bien bon.

Exercise.

Thou art greater than I; and from thee I have (at once) es moi toi ai en même temps 2 appris 1 art. = f. art. sagesse f. disois thee that dancing is to the body what taste is to the mind. te que art. danse f. m. ce que art. m.

You have shown us great talents; when (will you show) avez 2 montré 3 1 de — m. quand montrerez-vous 2 us great virtues? How amiable you are! How good you are 1 de f. pl. Que 3 1 êtes 2 3 1 2
to have thought of us! (It was said) of you the other day, de vous être occupé. On disoit autre jour m. that you intended to spend a winter in London (in order to) vous vous proposez de passer m. à — dres pour see every thing curious which that city presents.

voir tout ce = 6 que 1 cette 2 ville 3 offre 4 de 5.
Of the Personal Pronouns.

Pronouns of the Third Person.

| Singular | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| il m. | . . . . . . | he | il perd son temps | he loses his time |
| elle f. | . . . . . . | she | elle travaille toujours | she is always at work |
| lui m. | à lui | to him | dites-lui que je lui parlerai | I will speak to him |
| lui f. | à elle | to her | dites-lui que vous lui donnerez | tell her that you will give her |

Singular.

| Obj. | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| lui m. | for | le | him | je ne connais que lui de capable | I know but him capable |
| le m. | or | lui | him | je le méprise | I despise him |
| la f. | — | elle | her | je la respecte | I respect her |
| elle f. | elle | her | il ne connait qu'elle | he knows but her |
| le m. | for | cela | it | je ne le savois pas | I did not know it |

Plural.

| Subject. | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| ils m. | — | — | they | ils chantent | they sing |
| elles f. | — | — | they | elles rient | they laugh |
| leur m. | for | à eux | to them | payez-leur ce que vous leur devez | pay them what you owe to them (men) |
| leur f. | for | à elles | to them | dites-leur que je désire leur parler | tell them that I wish to speak to them (to ladies) |

| Object. | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|
| les m. | or | eux | them | vous les trouverez | you will find them (men) |
| les f. | or | elles | them | il les admire | he admires them (ladies) |
| eux m. | — | — | them | je ne vois qu'eux | I see but them (gentlemen) |
| elles f. | — | — | them | il ne connait qu'elles | he knows but them (ladies) |

All the personal pronouns je, tu, il, nous, vous, ils, and elle, elles, when subjects, are put after the verb in interrogations, as,
Of the Personal Pronouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th></th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je</td>
<td>I</td>
<td>nous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu</td>
<td>thou</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il</td>
<td>he</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elle</td>
<td>she</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Subject</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>does-je payer?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>as-tu dit?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>chante-t-il bien?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>travaille-t-elle?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>nous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils m.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elles f.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Il, le, ils, eux, are always masculine; elle, la, elles, feminine; and les, leur, of both genders, as well as lui, when meaning to him, or to her; in other cases, lui exclusively belongs to the masculine.

All personal pronouns, when subjects, are placed before their verbs, except in interrogative sentences, and most of them likewise, when objects precede them, except in the imperative affirmative. But the objective eux, elles, lui for le, and moi, toi, soi, with one exception of this last, in soi-disant, styling himself, are invariably placed after the verbs by which they are governed.

EXERCISE.

He loved them, because they were mild, attentive, and aïmoit m. parce que doux gradeful. He (was saying) (to them), do you not know reconnoissant. disoit * 3 14 savet 2 that the property of merit is to excite envy? She que propre m. art. mérite m. de exciter art. envie f. often exhorted me to the study the most useful, that of souvent 2 exhortoit 1 étude f. utile celle the human heart. They make us love virtue, more by 2 m. 1 font aimer art. f. par their examples than by their words. What has been leurs exemple pl. parole f. pl. Que 1 on 3 a-t-2 * said of them? Did they speak of them? Do you not see dit eux * on 2 parloit 1 elle * 4 15 voyez 3 her? With what pleasure she plays!

2 quel joue!
Of the Personal Pronouns.

REFLECTED AND RECIPROCAL PRONOUNS OF THE THIRD PERSON.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular.</th>
<th>EXAMPLES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>S</strong></td>
<td><strong>O</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>soi</em> with a preposition</td>
<td><em>chacun tire à soi</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>soi</em> governed by the verb</td>
<td><em>l'égoïsme fait qu'on ne voit que soi</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>à soi, à lui-même</em></td>
<td><em>il se donne des louanges</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>à elle-même</em></td>
<td><em>elle se fait illusion</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>soi, or lui-même</em></td>
<td><em>il se perd</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>soi, or elle-même</em></td>
<td><em>elle se flatte</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>EXAMPLES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Plural.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>à eux-mêmes</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>à elles-mêmes</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>l'un à l'autre</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>se for eux-mêmes</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>elles-mêmes</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>l'un l'autre</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><em>les uns les autres</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Remark. _Se_ is placed before a verb, and _soi_ after a preposition, and sometimes after a verb.
EXERCISE.

In a thousand instances we do not watch sufficiently over ourselves. The glory of the world (passes away) in an instant. He gives himself (a great deal) of trouble. She tires herself. People should (very seldom) speak of themselves. Virtue is amiable in itself. We must take upon ourselves the care of our own affairs.

ses propres affaires s. pl.

OF THE PRONOUN RELATIVE en.

de lui of him

de lui of him

de leur of her

de leur of her

de leurs of them

de leurs of them

de leur of that

de leur of that

d'ici hence

d'ici hence

de là thence

de là thence

cet homme vous plait, vous en parlez souvent.

je ne crois pas cette femme sincère, je m'en méfie.

toutes ces fruits paroissent bons, j'en mangerai volontiers.

voilà de belles oranges, voulez-vous m'en donner ?

on ne m'a pas trompé, j'en suis sûr.

il arriva ici, comme j'en partais.

vous allez à Paris, et monsieur en vient.

that man pleases you, you speak of him often.

I do not believe that woman sincere, I distrust her.

these fruits look good, I should like to eat some of them.

these are beautiful oranges, will you give me some ?

I have not been imposed upon, I am sure of it.

he arrived here, as I was setting off from hence.

you are going to Paris, this gentleman comes from thence.
Of the Personal Pronouns.

OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUN, OR ADVERB, y.

à lui to him  
à elle to her  
à eux to them  
à elle to them

C'est un honnête homme, je vous y rends.  
Cette raison est solide, je m'y rends.  
Ces arguments sont pressants, je m'y vois point de réponse.  
Accablé de vos civilités, je ne sais comment y répondre.

j'ai éprouvé cette perte quand j'y pensais le moins.

Nous partons de Londres, quand vous y venez.

C'est un endroit charmant, je compte m'y fixer.

He is an honest man, trust to him.  
That reason is good. I yield to it.

These arguments are cogent, I see, no reply to them.

Loaded with your civilities, I do not know how to acknowledge them.

I experienced that loss, when I least thought of it.

We set off from London, when you come hither.

It is a fine place, I intend to settle there.

Remark. Y and en are always put before the verb, except with the imperative affirmative.

Exercise.

They speak (a great deal) of it. You like French authors, you are always speaking of them. That is a delicate affair; the success of it is doubtful. See them; I consent to it, but do not trust them. That is a fine appoint-ment: he had long aspired to it. He has done it; but he will get nothing by it.

Ce délicit 2

aimez art. François 2

2 * 2

1 * 2

1

2 * 1 5 vous 2 fies 4 y 3.

Ce fait

depuis long-temps 3—voit 2 1

ne 1 gagner 3 rien 4 y 2.
Of Possessive Pronouns.

§ II.

Of Possessive Pronouns.

These pronouns are adjectives, which denote the possession of things. When we say, mon habit, my coat; votre maison, your house; son jardin, his, or her garden; it is the same as saying l’habit qui est à moi, the coat which belongs to me; la maison qui est à vous, the house which belongs to you; le jardin qui est à lui, or à elle, the garden which belongs to him, or to her.

Of these pronominal adjectives, some always agree with a noun expressed, and the others with a noun understood; hence there are two sorts of possessive pronouns.

Of those that always agree with a noun expressed, some relate to one person, and others to several.

**Pronominal Adjectives relating to One Person.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>mon, m.</td>
<td>ma, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d</td>
<td>ton, m.</td>
<td>ta, f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d</td>
<td>son, m.</td>
<td>sa, f.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Pronominal Adjectives relating to Many Persons.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Person</th>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>notre, m.f.</td>
<td>nos, m.f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2d</td>
<td>votre, m.f.</td>
<td>vos, m.f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3d</td>
<td>leur, m.f.</td>
<td>leurs, m.f.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

N. B. These possessive pronouns in French always agree in gender and number with the object possessed, and not with the possessor, as in English, for which reason they must be repeated before every noun.

**Examples.**

Mon père, ma mère et mes frères sont à la campagne avec vos amis et leurs enfants.

Mon cousin est allé consoler sa sœur, qui a perdu son fils.

My father, mother, and brothers are in the country, with your friends and their children.

My cousin is gone to visit and console his sister, who has lost her son.
Of Possessive Pronouns.

Mon, ton, son, are also used before a noun feminine, when beginning with a vowel, or h mute; thus, mon âme, my soul; ton humeur, thy humour; son amitié, his friendship; must be said instead of ma âme, la humeur, sa amitié.

EXERCISE.

My principles, my love of retirement, my taste —pe goût m. pour art. retraite f. amour m:
for (every thing) that (is connected) with learning, and tout ce qui tient à art. instruction
my detestation of all spirit of party, (every thing) has haine f. A. asp. pour esprit parti tout a
induced me to prefer a life passed in the closet to the porté préférer * art. vie f. * de * cabinet
active life of the world. Do not think, my daughter, that thy
=2 f. 1 m. * pense que
candour, thy ingenuousness, thy taste, so delicate and so
= f. ingénuité f. m. —cat
refined, and even thy graces, can shelter thee from fin même — puissent mettre à l’abri de
censure. His wit, his talents, his honesty,
art. —f. esprit m. —m. honnêteté f. h. m.
and even his (good nature) make him beloved by every body.
même bonhomie f. font aimer de tout le monde
Our constancy and our efforts will (at last) surmount all
= f. —m. * enfin 2 surmonteront 1
obstacles. I see nothing that can (be cen-
art. —m. pl. vois 2 ne rien 3 que on puisse re-
sured) in your conduct. Their taste for the fantastical, the prendre dans conduite f. pour bizarre. m.
monstrous, and the marvellous, gives to all their com-
notations, although very fine in themselves, an air of deformity f.
qui quoique en elles-mêmes, —m. difformité, f.
which shocks at first sight.
qui choque à art. coup-d’œil.

Of the pronouns, which always agree with nouns understood, some relate to one person, and others to several persons.

Those which relate only to one person are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>M. Sing.</th>
<th>F. Sing.</th>
<th>M. Plur.</th>
<th>F. Plur.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1st</td>
<td>Mon</td>
<td>ton</td>
<td>mon</td>
<td>ton</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2nd</td>
<td>Le mien</td>
<td>la mienne</td>
<td>les miens</td>
<td>les miennes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3rd</td>
<td>Le tien</td>
<td>la tienne</td>
<td>les tiens</td>
<td>les tiennes</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

mine
mine
the
the
Of Possessive Pronouns.

Those which relate to several persons are:

1st. m. Sing. Le nôtre  | f. Sing. la nôtre,  | Pl. of both Gen. les nôtres,  | ours
2d. m. Sing. Le vôtre  | f. Sing. la vôtre,  | les vôtres,  | yours
3d. L e leur  | la leur,  | les leurs,  | theirs

N. B. The real use of these pronouns is to spare the repetition of the nouns, which have been expressed a little before.

EXAMPLE.

Avez-vous toujours votre cheval ? je n’ai plus le mien, I have disposed of mine.

EXERCISE.

Is it your temper or hers, that hinders you from living well ce humeur f. qui empêche de vivre together ? If it be yours, it is easy for you to remedy ensemble ce est il 2 aisé 3 * 1 de porter remède it, by mastering (your temper); if it be hers, redouble your y en prenant sur vous-même ce redoubles de * complaisance, attention, and good behaviour; it is — de — de procédé m. pl. il very seldom that this method (proves unsuccessful). Si friends had served me with the same zeal as yours, it avaient servi même zèle m. que il is very certain that I (should have) succeeded: but yours have très sûr aurois réussi ont been all fire, and mine all ice. All the pictures which we étaient m. savons parfaitement * quels amusements in town, and I assure you we are very — à art. ville f. — que sommes bien far from envying you them; but if you knew éloigné pl. envier 3 1 2 connaissies quels ours in the country, it (is most likely) you sont à campagne f. il y a toute apparence que (would not be long) in giving them the preference. You ne tarderies pas à donner leur — f. have opened your heart to me with that noble frankness avez ouvert — franchise f.
Of the Relative Pronouns.

which so well becomes an honest man: this confidence well deserves mine.

REMARC. When through politeness vous is used for tu, then votre, vos, must take the place of ton, ta, tes, and le votre, la vôtre, les vôtres, be used for le tien, la tienne, les tiens, les tiennes.

EXAMPLES.

Que vous ressemblez peu à vos ancêtres! How little you resemble your ancestors!
Quand vous aurez entendu nos raisons, nous écouterons les vôtres. When you have heard our reasons, we will listen to yours.

§ III.

OF THE RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Relative pronouns are those which relate to a preceding noun, or pronoun, called the antecedent. In the phrase, l'homme qui joue, the man who plays; qui relates to the substantive homme; l'homme is then the antecedent to the pronoun relative qui.

Qui who
which
whom

Dieu qui voit tout
les chevaux qui courent
l'homme que vous cherchez
les lois que nous observons
l'insulte dont vous
vous plaignez
la nature dont nous ignorons les secrets
les gens de qui vous parlez
qui c'est une condition
sans laquelle il ne veut rien faire

God who sees everything
the horses which are running
the man whom you seek
the laws which we observe
the insult of which you complain
nature whose secrets are unknown to us
the people of whom you speak
it is a condition, without which he will do nothing.

Dont or de qui whose
of whom

les gens de qui vous parlez

Lequel or Laquelle which
Of Pronouns Absolute.

Lequel, whom ceux auxquels il s'est adressé, ont refusé de le défendre, refused to protect him.

Laquelle, whom ce sont des choses à quoi vous ne pensez pas, these are things of which you do not think.

Quoi, why la cause pourquoi on l'a arrêté, est connue, the reason why he was arrested, is known.

Qui, que, and dont, are of both genders and both numbers.

Lequel is a compound of quel, and the article le, la, les, with which it coalesces in the following manner:

Singular. Plural.
lequel laquelle lesquels lesquelles which duquel de laquelle desquels desquelles of which auquel à laquelle auxquels auxquelles to which

This pronoun always agrees in gender and number with its antecedent. Quoi, which sometimes supplies its place, is always governed by a preposition.

§ IV.

OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

Pronouns absolute are those which have no relation to an antecedent. They are the five following:

Qui, whom je vous dirai qui l'a fait, I will tell you who has done it.

Qui, whom vous pouvez consulter qui vous voulez, you may consult whom you please.

Qui, whom qui consulterez-vous? whom will you consult?

Que, what il ne sait que ré- soudre, he does not know on what to determine.

Que, what que ferez-vous? what will you do?

Quoi, what en quoi puis-je vous servir? in what can I serve you?
Of Demonstrative Pronouns.

Quoi | what | il y a & je ne sais quoi d'obscur | there is in it I do not know what obscurity
Quel | what | quelle instabilité dans les choses humaines! | what instability in human affairs!
     | what | il ne sait quel parti prendre | he does not know what resolution to take
     | which | lequel aimes-vous mieux de ces tableaux? | which do you prefer of those pictures?
Lequel | which | je sais bien lequel je choisirais | I know well which I would choose

Qui applies only to persons. Que and quoi to things.

Quel, masc. quelle, fem. sing. quels, m. quelles f. pl. always precede a substantive, the gender and number of which they take.

Lequel, duquel, auquel, etc. are used to mark a distinction between several objects.

§ V.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS, ETC.

Demonstrative pronouns are those which point, as it were, to the objects spoken of. These are,

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Singular</th>
<th>Plural</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>masc.</td>
<td>fem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ce, cet*</td>
<td>cette</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>celui</td>
<td>celle-ci</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>celui-la</td>
<td>celle-la</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ceci</td>
<td>. . .</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cela</td>
<td>. . .</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

* m. { ce before a consonant | ce livre | this book
      | ce before an & aspirated | ce héros | that hero
      | cet before a vowel | cet enfant | this child
      | cet before an & mute | cet homme | that man

f. { cette before any feminine noun | cette femme | that woman
Of Indefinite Pronouns.

{ when without a noun } { qui est-ce ? } { who is it ?
{ ce } { ce que je vous } { what I tell you
{ intimated a person or } { dis est vrai } { is true.
{ thing spoken of }

EXERCISE.

Nothing is so opposite to that true eloquence, the office of which is to ennoble (every thing), as the use of those refined thoughts, and hunting after those light, airy, unsolid ideas, which, like a leaf of beaten metal, acquire brightness only by losing part of their solidity. This man has nothing in common with that hero. This long restrained hatred broke, and was the unhappy source of those dreadful events. It is a great pleasure to me. It was a great pain to us.

\[ \text{VI.} \]

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

Indefinite pronouns are those which are of a vague and indeterminate nature. They are of four sorts.

FIRST CLASS.

Those that are never joined to a substantive.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{one} & \quad \text{on aime à se flatter} & \text{one is apt to flatter one's self.} \\
\text{a man} & \quad \text{on n'est pas toujours maître de soi} & \text{a man is not always master of his own temper}
\end{align*}
\]
Of Indefinite Pronouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>a woman</th>
<th>on n'est pas toujours maîtresse d'aller où* l'on veut</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>somebody</td>
<td>on frappe à la porte</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>people</td>
<td>on pense et* l'on dit tout haut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>they</td>
<td>on raconte diversément cette histoire</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>we</td>
<td>on acquiert l'expérience à ses dépens</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>you</td>
<td>on trouve partout des importuns</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I</td>
<td>on prévient qu'on n'a point eu l'intention de, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>they</td>
<td>Quand on vous dit que* l'on compte sur vous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>si* l'on vous blâme et si* on le loue, on a tort</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Quelqu'un*  
one somebody  quelqu'un m'a dit, somebody told me.

*Quiconque*  
whoever whosoever quiconque connaît les hommes, apprend à s'en défier, whoever knows mankind, learns to distrust them.

*Chacun*  
each every one chacun s'en plaint, every one complains of him.

*Instead of*  

| et on       | it is better for euphony to part these words with    |
| ou on       | les habitudes qu'on contracts                       |
| si on       | les habitudes qu'on contracts                       |
| les habitudes qu'on contracts |                                |

*Instead of*  

| ce après quoi on court quoiqu'on croie | un homme à qui on reproche |

*Instead of*  

| ce après quoi l'on court | un homme à qui l'on reproche |

*Instead of*  

| et l'on       | when the next word does not begin with an l, as is seen by the examples |
| ou l'on       | les habitudes que l'on contracts |
| si l'on       | les habitudes que l'on contracts |

*Rather*  

}
Of Indefinite Pronouns.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Autrui</th>
<th>others</th>
<th>ne veus pas le bien d'autrui, do not covet the property of others.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>others</td>
<td>ne fai pas a autrui ce que vous ne voudriez pas qu'on vous fit, do not do to others what you would not have done to you.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Personne</td>
<td>nobody no one</td>
<td>la fierté ne convient à personne; pride becomes nobody.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>nothing</td>
<td>rien ne tui plait, nothing pleases him.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rien</td>
<td>not any thing</td>
<td>y a-t-il rien qui puisse lui plaire? is there any thing that can please him?</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

EXERCISE.

If you (behave yourself) (in that manner), what will people say of you? It (is thought) that this news is true. They write me word from Ispahan that thou hast left as quitté art. Persia, and art now at Paris. One cannot read Telemaque, without becoming better: ne there find (every Télémique m. sans devenir meilleur, on y trouve par-where) a mild philosophy, noble and elevated sentiments: ne tout doux enf. des —2 élevé 3 —1 there find in every line the effusions of a noble soul, and we y voit à chaque ligne épanchement m. beau f. admire precepts calculated to effect the happiness of des préceptes pl. propre faire bonheur m. the world.

SECOND CLASS.

Those which are always joined to a substantive.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Quelque</th>
<th>some</th>
<th>si cela étoit vrai, quelque historien en aurait parlé, if that were true, some historian would have mentioned it.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Chaque</td>
<td>each, every</td>
<td>à chaque jour suffit sa peine, the trouble of each day is sufficient of itself.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quelconque</td>
<td>whoever, whatever</td>
<td>il n'y a raison quelconque qui puisse l'y obliger, no reason whatever can oblige him to it.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
**Of Indefinite Pronouns.**

| Certain | certain | certain homme, a certain man; certaines nouvelles, some news.
|---------|---------|---------------------------------------------------------
| Un      | a, an   | j'ai vu un homme, I saw a man; prenez une orange, take an orange.

**Third Class.**

Those which are sometimes joined to a substantive, and sometimes not.

| Nul      | no, none | nulle raison ne peut le convaincre, no reason can convince him; nul d'eux ne l'a rencontré, not one of them has met him.
|----------|----------|---------------------------------------------------------
| Pas un   | no, not one | il n'y a pas une erreur dans cet ouvrage, there is no error in that work; pas un ne le dit, not one says so.
| Aucun    | no, none | je ne connais aucun de vos juges, I know none of your judges; il n'a fait aucune difficulté, he has made no difficulty.
| Autre    | other    | je vous prenois pour un autre, I took you for another.
| Même     | same     | c'est le même homme que je vis hier, he is the same man I saw yesterday; cet homme n'est plus le même, that man is no longer the same.
| Tel      | such     | il tint à peu près un tel discours, he delivered nearly such a discourse; je ne vis jamais rien de tel, I never saw any thing like it.
| Plusieurs | several | il est arrivé plusieurs vaisseaux, several vessels are arrived; il ne faut pas que plusieurs pâlissent pour un seul, many must not suffer for one.
| Tout     | every    | tous les êtres créés, all created beings; tout disparaît devant Dieu, every thing vanishes before God.
### Of the Verb.

**FOURTH CLASS.**

**Of those which are followed by que.**

| Qui que | whoever | qui que tu sois, whoever thou may-est be; qui que ce soit, whoever it may be; quoi que ce soit, whatever it may be; |
| Quoi que | whatever | quoi que vous disiez, whatever you may say. |
| Quel que | whoever | quel que soit cet homme, whoever that man may be; quel que soit votre courage, whatever your courage may be. |
| Tel que | such as | cette étoffe est telle que vous la voulez, this stuff is such as you wish for. |
| Quelque que | whatever | quelque raison que vous donniez, whatever reason you may give. quelque puissant que vous soyiez, however powerful you may be. |
| Tout — que | however | tout savant qu'il est, however learned he may be. |

---

### CHAP V.

**OF THE VERB.**

The **Verb** is a word, the chief use of which is to express affirmation; it has persons, moods, and tenses. In the phrase, *la vertu est aimable*, virtue is amiable, it is affirmed, that the quality *aimable*, belongs to *la vertu*; likewise in this sentence, *le vice n'est pas aimable*, vice is not amiable, it is affirmed that the quality *aimable* does not belong to *le vice*; the word *est* expresses this affirmation.

That concerning which we affirm or deny a thing, is called the *subject*, and what is affirmed or denied, is called its *attribute*. In the two preceding sentences *vertu* and *vice* are subjects of the verb *est*, and *aimable* is the attribute affirmed respecting the one, and denied with respect to the other.
Of the Verb.

There are in verbs two numbers, the singular and plural, and in each number three persons.

1. The first person is that who speaks; it is designated by je, I, in the singular, and by nous, we, in the plural; as je pense, I think; nous pensons, we think.

2. The second is the person spoken to, expressed by tu, thou, in the singular, and by vous, you, in the plural; as tu penses, thou thinkest; vous pensez, you think.

3. The third is the person spoken of, known by il, he, or elle, she, in the singular, and by ils, or elles, they, in the plural; as il, or elle pense, he, or she thinks; ils, or elles pensent, they think.

All substantives, either common or proper, are of the third person, when not addressed, or spoken to.

REM. { A word is known to be a verb, when it admits the personal pronouns: thus, finir, to finish, is a verb, because we can say, je finis, tu finis, il, or elle finit, etc.

There are five moods, or modes of conjugating verbs.

1. The infinitive mood affirms, in an indefinite manner, without either number or person; as aimer, to love; avoir aimé, to have loved.

2. The indicative simply indicates and asserts a thing in a direct manner; as j'aime, I love, il aimait, he loved.

3. The conditional affirms a thing with a condition, as j'aimerai, si, etc. I should love, if, etc.

4. The imperative is used for commanding, exhorting, requesting, or reproving; as aime, love (thou); aïmons, let us love.

5. The subjunctive subjects a thing to what precedes; as vous voulez qu'il aïme, you wish that he may love; que nous aimions, that we may love.
Of the Verb.

There are three tenses; the present, which declares a thing now existing, or doing, as je lis, I read; the past or preterit, denoting that the thing has been done, as j'ai lu, I have read; the future, denoting that the thing will be done, as je lirai, I shall read. But these are subdivided, so that there are several preterit, and two future tenses.

There are five kinds of verbs, the active, passive, neuter, pronominal, and impersonal.

The verb active is that which expresses an action, the object of which is either declared or understood. Aimer, to love, is a verb active, as it expresses an action, the object of which may be quelqu'un, some person, or quelque chose, something; as aimer Dieu, to love God; aimer l'étude, to love study. The object of this action is called the regimen, or government of the verb active.

\[
\text{A simple question will show this regimen, as } \text{qu'est-ce que j'aime? what do I love? answer,} \\
\text{N. B. } \text{Dieu, God. Dieu is then the regimen of the} \\
\text{verb j'aime.}
\]

In the French language the passive verbs are supplied by the verb être, as they are in English by the verb to be, and the participle past of the verb active followed by the preposition de, or par, the subject and regimen of the verb active being reversed. Thus to change the verbs from active to passive in these sentences, mon père m'aime, my father loves me; le milan a enlevé le canari, the kite has carried off the canary; they must be reversed in this way, je suis aimé de mon père, I am loved by my father; le canari a été enlevé par le milan, the canary has been carried off by the kite.

The verb neuter, is that which has no direct regimen, as the verb active has. Aller, to go; marcher, to walk, are verbs neuter, because we cannot say, aller quelqu'un, to go somebody; marcher quelque chose, to walk something. Plaire, to please, is likewise a verb neuter, as we cannot say in French plaire quelqu'un, to please somebody, but plaire à quelqu'un.
Of the Verb.

The pronominal verbs are those in which each person is conjugated through all the tenses, with a double personal pronoun.

\[
\begin{array}{|c|c|c|c|}
\hline
& \text{I myself} & \text{we ourselves} \\
je me & nous nous & \\
\text{tu te} & \text{thou thyself} & \text{you yourselves} \\
\text{il se} & \text{he himself} & \text{or ye yourselves} \\
\text{elle se} & \text{she herself} & \text{they themselves} \\
\text{ils se} & \text{they themselves} & \\
\hline
\end{array}
\]

There are four sorts of pronominal verbs.

1. The pronominal verb active, when the action of the verb falls upon the subject, as je me flatter, I flatter myself; il se loue, he praises himself. Almost all the active verbs are susceptible of being reflected.

2. The pronominal verb neuter, which indicates only a state, a disposition of the subject, as se repentir, to repent; se désister, to desist; s’emfuir, to run away.

3. The reciprocal verb expresses a reciprocity of action between two or more subjects, and consequently has no singular; such are s’entraider, to help one another; s’entredonner, to give each other.

4. The pronominal verb impersonal, is only used in the third person singular. Active verbs frequently assume this form, in a passive sense, for the sake of brevity and energy; as il se bâtit, there is building; il se faisait, there was doing; il se conclut, there was concluded; il s’est dit, it has been said; il se donnera une grande bataille, a great battle will be fought.

The impersonal verb is only used in the third person singular, with the pronoun il, and has no relation to any person or thing. Neiger, to snow, is an impersonal verb, as it cannot be applied to any person, or thing; il neige, it snows; il neigeait, it did snow.
Of Conjugations.

Though the greatest part of the French verbs are regular, there are, however, as in other languages, some that are irregular, and others that are defective. Regular verbs are those which are conjugated conformably to a general standard. Irregular verbs are those which do not conform to the verb employed as a model; and defective verbs are those which, in certain tenses or persons, are not used.

ON CONJUGATIONS.

To conjugate a verb is to rehearse it with all its different inflections.

The French have four conjugations, which are easily distinguished by the termination of the present of the infinitive.

- **First:** ends in -er as, parler, aimer, chanter, donner, etc.
- **Second:** ends in -ir as, finir, sentir, ouvrir, tenir, etc.
- **Third:** ends in -oir as, recevoir, apercevoir, devoir, etc.
- **Fourth:** ends in -re as, rendre, plaire, paroître, réduire, joindre, etc.

The French, like most modern nations, not having a sufficient number of inflections in their verbs to represent the great variety of their tenses, supply this deficiency with two auxiliary verbs, **avoir** and **être**, to have and to be.

Those tenses in a verb, whose inflections are derived pure and unmixed from the parent stock, are called simple tenses, and are always in French expressed by a single word. But the tenses, which are formed by the union of those of the verbs **avoir** or **être**, with a participle past, are called compound, and necessarily consist of not less than two or three words. Thus, **avoir**, j'ai, j'avais, j'eus, etc. parler, je parle, je parlais, etc. are simple tenses; but **avoir**, eu, j'ai eu, j'eus eu, j'avais eu, or **avoir parlé**, j'ai parlé, j'eus parlé, j'ai eu parlé, etc. are compound tenses.
### Auxiliary Verb **Avoir**

**CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERB AVOIR, TO HAVE.**

**INFINITIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PRESENT.</td>
<td>PRESENT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avoir</td>
<td>avoir eu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to have</td>
<td>to have had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PAST.</td>
<td>PAST.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>eu, m. eue, f.</td>
<td>eu, m. eue, f.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PARTICIPLES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRESENT.</th>
<th>PAST.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ayant</td>
<td>ayant eu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>having</td>
<td>having had</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDICATIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRESENT.</th>
<th>PAST.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'ai</td>
<td>j'ai</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I have</td>
<td>I have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu as</td>
<td>tu as</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>thou hast</td>
<td>thou hast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle a</td>
<td>il a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>he, or she has</td>
<td>he has</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous avons</td>
<td>nous avons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>we have</td>
<td>we have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous avez</td>
<td>vous avez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>you have</td>
<td>you have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles ont</td>
<td>ils ont</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>they have</td>
<td>they have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**EXERCISE.**

**Remark.** In the following exercises, the substantive being taken in a partitive sense, it will be necessary to use the article, according to the direction given, pages 57 & 58.

**Present.** I have books. Thou hast friends. He has honesty. She has sweetness. We have credit. You have nêtëté f. h m. douceur f. — m. riches. They have virtues. They have modesty. richesse pl. m. vertu f. = f.

**Préterit Indefinite.** I have had pleasure. Thou hast had plaisir m.

gold. He has had patience. She has had beauty. We have or m. — f. = f.

had honours. You have had friendship. They have had honneur amitié f. = m.

sentiments. They have had sensibility.

— f. = f.

**Imperfect.** I had ambition. Thou hadst wealth. He had bien m.
### Auxiliary Verb Avoir

#### SIMPLE TENSES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperfect</th>
<th>Compound of the imperfect.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'avais</td>
<td>I had, or did have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu avais</td>
<td>thou hadst, or didst have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il avoit</td>
<td>he had, or did have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous avions</td>
<td>we had, or did have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous aviez</td>
<td>you had, or did have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils avoient</td>
<td>they had, or did have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Pluperfect.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pluperfect</th>
<th>Compound of the imperfect.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'avais</td>
<td>I had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu avais</td>
<td>thou hadst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il avoit</td>
<td>he had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous avions</td>
<td>we had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous aviez</td>
<td>you had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils avoient</td>
<td>they had</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Preterit Definite.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Preterit</th>
<th>Preterit anterior, or compound of the preterit.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>jeus</td>
<td>I had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu eus</td>
<td>thou hadst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il eut</td>
<td>he had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous eûmes</td>
<td>we had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous eûtes</td>
<td>you had</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils eurent</td>
<td>they had</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Pluperfect.

- j'avais: I had
- tu avais: thou hadst
- il avoit: he had
- nous avions: we had
- vous aviez: you had
- ils avoient: they had

#### Preterit Definite.

- jeus: I had
- tu eus: thou hadst
- il eut: he had
- nous eûmes: we had
- vous eûtes: you had
- ils eurent: they had

---

sincerity. She had graces. We had oranges. You had pears.

**f.** poire

They had apples. They had lemons.

**m.** pomme **f.** cîtron

**Pluperfect.** I had had apricots. Thou hadst had nectarines.

- abricot: apricot
- brugnon: walnut

He had had walnuts. She had had hazel-nuts. We had had noix.

- noix: hazel-nuts
- noisette: chestnuts

You had had figs. They had had medlars. They had had filberts.

- figue: fig
- nôfle: filbert

**Preterit Definite.** I had plums. Thou hadst cherries.

- prune: prune
- cerise: cherry

He had strawberries. She had pine-apples. We had almonds.

- fraise: strawberry
- ananas: pineapple

You had currants. They had raspberries. They had grapes.

- grosselle: currant
- framboise: raspberry
- raisin: grape
### Auxiliary Verb "Avoir"

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>FUTURE ABSOLUTE</strong></td>
<td><strong>FUTURE ANTERIOR, OR COMPOUND of the future.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j'aurai</td>
<td>I shall, or will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu auras</td>
<td>thou shalt, or will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il aura</td>
<td>he will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous aurons</td>
<td>we shall have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous aurez</td>
<td>you will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils auront</td>
<td>they will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j'aurai</td>
<td>shall, or will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu auras</td>
<td>thou will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il aura</td>
<td>he will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous aurons</td>
<td>we shall have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous aurez</td>
<td>you will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils auront</td>
<td>they will have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Remark.** In the following exercises, the addition of an adjective, after the substantive, will make no change in the remark on the preceding exercise.

**Preterit Anterior.** I had had very black ink. Thou hast had honest proceedings. She had had uncommon honnête 2 procédé 1 rare 2 graces. We had had very ripe grapes. You had had exquisite 1 mûr 3 1 exquis 2 melons. They had had ready money.

— m. 1 complant 2 argent m. 1

**Future Absolute.** I shall have studious pupils. Thou will have horrid pains. He will have ridiculous ideas. horrible 2 peine f. 1 ridicule 2 idée f. 1 We shall have useless cares. You will have true and real inutile 2 soin m. 1 réel 3 pleasures. They will have poignant griefs. m. 1 cuisant chagrin m. 1

**Remark.** But if the adjective precedes the substantive, then de, or d', only is to be used.

**Future Anterior.** I shall have had good paper. Thou will have had excellent fruit. She will have had charming m. pl. charmage 1 flowers. We shall have had good pens. You will have had plume f.
Auxiliary Verb Avoir.

Conditional.

**Simple Tenses.**

| Present | Past, or compound of the present.
|---------|----------------------------------
| j’aurais | I should, could, or would have.
| tu aurais | thou shouldst have.
| il aurait | he should have.
| nous aurions | we should have.
| vous auriez | you should have.
| ils auraient | they should have.

**Compound Tenses.**

| Present | Past, or compound of the present.
|---------|----------------------------------
| j’aurais | I should have.
| tu aurais | thou shouldst have.
| il aurait | he should have.
| nous aurions | we should have.
| vous auriez | you should have.
| ils auraient | they should have.

Large buildings. They will have had fine clothes.

Grand bâtiment m. Superbe habit m.

**Present of the Conditional.** I should have fine engravings. Thou shouldst have pretty playthings. He should have immense treasures. We should have beautiful pictures. You would have pretty houses. They should have long conversations.

**Remark.** The preceding remark holds good likewise after a word expressing quantity, such as beaucoup, a great deal, great many; peu, little, few; plus, more; moins, less; trop, too much, too many, etc. except bien, much, many, which requires du, de la, de l', des.

**Conditional Past.** I should have had a great deal of trouble. Thou wouldst have had more pleasure. He would have had (a vast deal) of knowledge. We should have had more opportunities of succeeding. You would certainly succeed.
Auxiliary Verbs Avoir.

N. B. j'eusse eu, tu eusses eu, il eût eu, nous eussions eu, vous eussiez eu, ils eussent eu. I should have had, etc. is also used for the conditional past.

**IMPERATIVE.**

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Allez</td>
<td>Have (thou)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qu'il ait</td>
<td>Let him have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayons</td>
<td>Let us have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ayez</td>
<td>Have (ye)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qu'ils aient</td>
<td>Let them have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

I have had many advantages over him. They would have had many enemies.

Observe that, when the verb is followed by several substantives, the proper article and preposition must be repeated before each.

**IMPERATIVE.** Have complaisance, attention, and politeness.

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>— f.</td>
<td>égard m. pl. politesse f.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— f.</td>
<td>2 juste 3 1.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Let him have modesty, and more correct ideas. Let her have more decency. Let us have courage and firmness. Have décente — m. fermeté f. un gravy soup. nice roast-beef, and a pudding. Let them have ale, rum, and punch. Let them have manners and conduct.

**SUBJUNCTIVE.**

**PRESENT.** That I may have many friends. That thou may'st have good reasons to give him. That he may have elevated sentiments. That we may have courage and magnanimity. — m. 1. bravoure f. — f. That you may have delightful landscapes, and beautiful sea-pieces. That they may have more condescension and marine f. pl.

**PAST.** That I may have had wine, beer, and cider.
### Auxiliary Verb *Avoir*

**SUBJUNCTIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PRESENT.</td>
<td>PRETERIT, OR COMPUND OF THE PRESENT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Que*</td>
<td>That</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j’aie</td>
<td>I may have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu aies</td>
<td>thou may’st have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il ait</td>
<td>he may have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous ayons</td>
<td>we may have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous ayez</td>
<td>you may have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils aient</td>
<td>they may have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

*Remark.* The subjunctive, in French, is always preceded by the conjunctive *que,* that, which is often *suppressed* in English.

That, thou may’st have had a good horse, and a fine dog.  
cheval m.  
câline m.  
That he may have had enlightened judges.  That we may have  
déclairé 2  
juge m. 1  
had snow, rain, and wind.  That you may have had a great  
neige f.  
pluie f.  
vent m.  
dining-room, a beautiful drawing-room, a pretty  
salle à manger f.  
superbe salon de compagnie m.  
joli  
dressing-room, and a charming bed-room. That they may  
cabinet de toilette m.  
—mani chambre à coucher f.  
have had vast possessions, fine meadows, and delightful  
vaste ---- f.  
prairie f.  
delicieux 2  
groves.  
bois m. 1.

**IMPERFECT.** That I might have a sword, a musket, and  
épée f.  
fusil m.  
pistols. That thou might’st have a knife, a spoon, and a  
couteau m.  
cuillère f.  
pistolet m.  
fork. That we might have a penknife, pencils and good  
canif m.  
pipeau m.  
sources f.  
copies. That he might have a coach, a good house, and  
modèle m.  
carrosse f.  
*Remark.* The subjunctive, in French, is always preceded by the conjunctive *que,* that, which is often *suppressed* in English.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>IMPERFECT</td>
<td>PLUPERFECT, OR COMPOUND OF THE IMPERFECT</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Que</th>
<th>That</th>
<th>Que</th>
<th>That</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'eusse</td>
<td>I had, or might have</td>
<td>j'eusse</td>
<td>I might have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu eusses</td>
<td>thou might'st have</td>
<td>tu eusses</td>
<td>thou might'st have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il eût</td>
<td>he might have</td>
<td>il eût</td>
<td>he might have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous eussions</td>
<td>we might have</td>
<td>nous eussions</td>
<td>we might have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous eussiez</td>
<td>you might have</td>
<td>vous eussiez</td>
<td>you might have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils eussent</td>
<td>they might have</td>
<td>ils eussent</td>
<td>they might have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

furniture, simple but elegant. That you might have had friendship. That thou, amitié f. 
might'st have had gloves, boots, and horses. That he, gant m. botte f. cheval m. 
might have had zealous and faithful servants. That we, zèle 2 • fidèle 3 domestique m. 1. 
might have had fine clothes, precious jewels, and magnificent bijou m. 1. magnifique 2 
furniture. That you might have had warm friends. That 1 chaud 2 1 
they might have had greatness of soul and pity. grandeur f. gêne f. 

---

**N. B.** The verb *avoir* serves not only as an auxiliary to conjugate its own compound tenses, but likewise those of the participle, the impersonal, and almost all the neuter verbs.
SENTENCES ON THE SAME VERB, WITH A NEGATIVE.

In the following sentences, the preposition de, or d', is put before the substantive, according as it begins with a consonant or a vowel; ne between the personal pronoun and the verb, and pas, or point, after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle in the compound tenses; as,

Je n'ai pas de livres.  I have no books.
Tu n'avais pas de bien.  Thou hadst no wealth.
Elle n'eut pas d'honnéteté.  She had no honesty.
Nous n'avons pas eu d'amitié.  We have had no friendship.
Vous n'aviez pas eu de puissans amis.  You had not had powerful friends.
Ils n'auront pas d'ennemis redoutables.  They will not have formidable enemies.

EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE.  Present.  1 have no precious medals.

We have had no useless things.  Preterit indefinite.

= 2 médaille f. 1

I have had no constancy.  We have had no generosity.
= f.

Imperfect.  Thou hadst not a beautiful park.  You had no parc m.

= f.

Pluperfect.  He had had no fine houses.  concours m.

They had had no money.  Preterit definite.  He had not argent m.

a skilful gardener.  They had no carpets.  Preterit an-

habile jardinier m.  tapis m.

terior.  Thou hadst had no complaisance.  You had had no

great talents.  Future absolute.  I shall have no great bus-

ness.  We shall not have uncommon prints.  Future

faire f. pl.

rare 2 estamps f. 1

anterior.  Thou shalt have had no consolation.  You shall not

have had quiet days.

tranchuilles 2 m. 1.
Auxiliary Verb Avoir.

CONDITIONAL. PRESENT. He should not have had:

pictures. They should have no leisure. PAST. I should have:

tableau m. loisir m.
had no griefs. We should have had no troubles.
chagrin m. pl. peine f. pl.

IMPERATIVE. Have no impatience. Let him not have:
sing.

—

absurd ideas. Let us not have dangerous connexions. Have:

absurde 2 f. pl. 1. = 2 liaison f. 1.

no such whims. Let them not have so whimsical a project.
tel caprice m. bizarre 2 projet m. 1.

SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT. That I may have no protectors.

That we may have no success. PATERIT. That he may have:

succès m.

had no perseverance. That they may have had no valour.

— f.

bравoure f.

IMPERFECT. That thou might'st have no principles of taste. principe m. goût m.

That you might not have a just reward. PLUSPERFECT.

juste récompense f.

That I might have had no good advice. That we might:

avis m. pl.

have had no news.
nouvelle f. pl.

THE VERB AVOIR, INTERROGATIVELY AND AFFIRMA-

TIVELY.

In interrogations, the personal pronoun, accom-
panied by a hyphen (-), is placed after the verb in the
simple tenses, and between the verb and the participle
in the compound tenses, and, when the third person
singular of the verb ends with a vowel, for euphony a
is added between it and the pronoun, preceded and
followed by a hyphen, thus (-t-). See likewise the
remarks, page 99.

Ai-je des livres? Have I books?
Avois-tu du bien? Hadst thou wealth?
Eut-elle de l'honnêteté? Had she honesty?
Avois-nous eu de bons conseils? Have we had good counsels?
Avez-vous eu de la prudence? Had you had prudence?
Aura-t-il de l'argent? Will he have money?
Aura-t-elle eu des protecteurs? Will she have had protectors?
EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE. PRESENT. Hast thou needles? Have you aiguilles?
coloured maps? PRETERIT INDEFINITE. Have I had pens?
entouré de cartes f. 2 plumes f.
Have we had convenient houses? IMPERFECT. Had she sick?
conmode 2 f. 1. soie f.
Had they large buildings? PLUPERFECT. Had she pins?
grand bâtiment m. épingles f.
Had they had extensive fields? PRETERIT DEFINITE. Had
spacieux champ m. 1.
be good shoes? Had they looking-glasses? PRETERIT ANTE-
soulier f. miroir m.
rior. Hadst thou had lace? Had you had odorous
dentelle f. odoriférant 2
shrubs. FUTURE ABSOLUTE. Shall I have gold, silver,
arbuste m. 1. argent m. and platinum. Shall we have (good luck)? FUTURE ANTERIOR.
platine m. bonheur m.
Will she have had joy? Will they have had company?
joie? compagnie f.
CONDITIONAL. PRESENT. Shouldst thou have happy
momen ts? Should you have good wine and nice cordials?
— m. vin m. liqueur f. 1.
Past. Should he have had uncommon fruits? Should they
rare 2 m. 1.
have had rich clothes?

THE SAME VERB INTERROGATIVELY AND NEGATIVELY.

In sentences of this form, observe the different rules that are prefixed to the exercises on the verb, and in sentences simply interrogative, always place me at the beginning of sentences, and pos, or point, after the personal pronoun, whether in the simple or compound tenses.

N'as-tu des livres? | Have I no books?
N'avais-tu pas des amis? | Hadst thou no friends?
N'a-t-elle pas beaucoup d'es-
prit? | Has she not a great deal of

wisdom?
N'avons-nous pas eu de bons
jugements? | Have we not maintained a good
conduct?
N'aviez-vous pas eu de nouvelles robes? 
N'aurait-il pas des ressources? 
N'auront-elles pas eu des consolations?

Had you not had new gowns? 
Will he have no resources? 
Will they have had no consolations?

EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE. Present. Hast thou no diamonds? Have diamond m.
you no indulgent parents? Preterit Indefinite. Hast thou — 2 — m. 1.
not had contempt, and even hatred, for that man? Have mépris m. mêmes haine f. h. asp. pour cet
you not had better examples? Imperfect. Had he not a meilleur exemple m.
rigid censor? Had they not inattentive children?
severe 2 censeur m. 1. = 2 enfant m. 1.
Pluperfect. Had I not had other views? Had we not had autre vue? f. pl.
amethysts, rubies, and topazes? Preterit Definite. Had améthylste f. rubis m. topaze f.
I no great wrongs? Had we not perfidious friends? Preterit perfide 2 1
Anterior. Had he not had too studied expressions? Had 2 recherché 3 — f. 1.
they not had excellent models? Future Absolute. Wilt thou — modèle m.
not have a more regular conduct? Will you not have plus 2 régé 3 conduite f. 1.
fashionable gowns? Future Anterior. Shall I have had no à la mode 2 robe f. 1.
sweetmeats? Shall we not have had a good preacher?
confitures f. prédicateur m.

CONDITIONAL. Present. Should she not have clear clair 2
and just ideas? Would they not have more extensive knowledge 3 f. 1.
2 étendu 3 con-
knowledge? Past. Should she have had no patience?
noissances f. pl. 1.
Should they have had no rectitude?

droiture f.
Auxiliary Verb être.

Conjugation of the auxiliary verb être, to be,

Infinitive.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tense</th>
<th>Compound Tense</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>Present</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>être</td>
<td>être</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to be</td>
<td>to have been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Avoir été | to have been

Participles.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>étant</td>
<td>ayant été</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>being</td>
<td>having been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>été</td>
<td>been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Indicative.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Präterit Indefinite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je suis.</td>
<td>I am</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu es.</td>
<td>thou art</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle est</td>
<td>he, or she is</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous sommes.</td>
<td>we are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous êtes</td>
<td>you are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils sont</td>
<td>they are</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>elles</td>
<td>they have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j'ai</td>
<td>thou have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il a</td>
<td>he has</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous avons</td>
<td>you have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous avez</td>
<td>they have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle est</td>
<td>he has</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Exercises.

As interrogative and negative sentences will now be promiscuously intermixed, the scholar will observe, that the adverb, in the following exercises, is to be placed before the adjective; and that whenever in interrogative sentences a substantive is the subject, it is to be placed at the head of the sentence, adding a pronoun for the interrogation immediately after the verb; as mon frère est-il venu? is my brother come?

Passant. I am very glad to see you. Art not thou pleased aise de voir satisfait
with that book? Is she really amiable? We are de véritablement happy. Are not you too condescending? Are your friends heureux complaisant
still in London? encore à Londres

Präterit Indefinite. Have not I been constant? Hast
### Simple Tenses

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>IMPERFECT</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je étais</td>
<td>j'avais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu étais</td>
<td>tu avais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il étais</td>
<td>il avoit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous étions</td>
<td>nous avions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous étiez</td>
<td>vous avez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils étolent</td>
<td>ils avoient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Pluperfect

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>IMPERFECT</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'étais</td>
<td>j'avais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu étais</td>
<td>tu avais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il étais</td>
<td>il avoit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous étions</td>
<td>nous avions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous étiez</td>
<td>vous avez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils étolent</td>
<td>ils avoient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Preterit

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>IMPERFECT</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je fus</td>
<td>j'eus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu fus</td>
<td>tu eus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il fut</td>
<td>il eut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous fûmes</td>
<td>nous eûmes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous fûtes</td>
<td>vous eûtes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils furent</td>
<td>ils eurent</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Preterit Anterior

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>IMPERFECT</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je fus</td>
<td>j'eus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu fus</td>
<td>tu eus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il fut</td>
<td>il eut</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous fûmes</td>
<td>nous eûmes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous fûtes</td>
<td>vous eûtes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils furent</td>
<td>ils eurent</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Translations

- thou always been steady? She has been faithful. Have we been always steadfast?
- been firm and courageous? You have been charitable. Have you been ever so charitable?
- those men always been good and benevolent? They were ever so benevolent.

**Imperfect.** I was too busy to see you. Wast not thou occupied for recevoir?
- troublesome? Was this girl idle? Were we not too untractable?
- importun. fille paresseuse. The child was indolent.
- You were not quiet enough. They were vain, light, and coquetish.

**Pluperfect.** I had hitherto been very indifferent. Hadst thou been too imprudent? Had his wife been sufficiently modest and reserved? We had not yet been sufficiently modest.

**Pret. Ant.**—Exercises upon this tense would be as yet too complicated, as may be seen by this sentence; à peine y eus-je été cinq ou six minutes, qu'il arriva, I had scarce been there five or six minutes, when he arrived.
### Simple Tenses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Future Absolute</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je serai</td>
<td>I shall, or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu seras</td>
<td>will be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il sera</td>
<td>thou will be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous serons</td>
<td>we shall be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous serez</td>
<td>you shall be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils seront</td>
<td>they shall be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jaurai</td>
<td>I shall or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tuauras</td>
<td>will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il aura</td>
<td>thou will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nousurons</td>
<td>we shall have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vouserez</td>
<td>you will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ilsauront</td>
<td>they will have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Future Anterior.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Future Anterior</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I shall or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>thou will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>we shall have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>you will have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>they will have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Preterit Definite.

Perhaps I was not sufficiently assuré prudent. Wast thou discreet enough on that occasion? Discret en fier.

Not that princess too proud? We were very unhappy. Were cesse.

Not you too hasty? They were not much satisfied. Prompt fort satisfait.

### Future Absolute.

To-morrow I shall be at home till Demain chez moi jusqu'à midi.

Wilt thou always be restless, brutal, and inquiet bourru.

Sour? Will your father be at home this evening? Chagrin Monsieur chez lui.

Shall not we be more diligent? You will always then be 3 donc 2.

Capricious, obstinate, and particular. Will not your scholars be guintieux opinant pointilleux écolier.

Troublesome? Incommode.

### Future Anterior.

Shall not I have been too severe? Thou wilt have been too distrustful. Will not his sister have been défiant.

Sour whimsical and capricious? Shall not we have been eager.

Fantasque = empressé 2.
### Auxiliary Verb être.

#### Conditional.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Present</strong></td>
<td><strong>Past</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je serois</td>
<td>j'aurais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu serois</td>
<td>tu aurais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il seroit</td>
<td>il aurait</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous serions</td>
<td>nous aurions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous seriez</td>
<td>vous auriez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils seroient</td>
<td>ils auraient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The conditional past, j'eusse été, tu eusses été, il eût été, nous eussions été, vous eussiez été, ils eussent été, is also used.

---

**enough?**  Will not you have been inconsiderate?  Will not the judges have been just?

**Conditional present.**  I would not be so rash.

Would'st thou be as consistent in thy behaviour as in thy language?  Would not his son be ready in time?  Should we be pos m. pl. fils prêt à always incorrigible?  You would not be disinterested enough.

Would not those ladies be always virtuous?

**Past.**  (Had it not been for) your instructions, I should have been proud and haughty.  Would'st not thou have been malicious and sarcastic?  Would that man have been so malign?  Would'st thou have been destitute of common sense?  Certainly we should not have been so ridiculous.  Would not you have been more kind and indulgent?  They would not have been so ungentle.

**complaisant**

---

**l**
**Auxiliary Verb être.**

**IMPERATIVE.**

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sois</td>
<td>Be (thou)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qu’il soit</td>
<td>Let him be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soyons</td>
<td>Let us be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Soyez</td>
<td>Be (ye)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qu’ils soient</td>
<td>Let them be</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**SUBJUNCTIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES.</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PRESENT.</td>
<td>PRETERIT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que</td>
<td>que</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je suis</td>
<td>I may, can,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>or should be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu sois</td>
<td>thou mayst be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il sois</td>
<td>he may be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous soyons</td>
<td>we may be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous soyez</td>
<td>you may be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils soient</td>
<td>they may be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>que</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I may, can, or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>should have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>thou mayst have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>he may have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Be liberal, but with discretion. Do not be so lavish. Let sing. — *avec* sing. *prodigue* us be equitable, humane and prudent. Let us not be greedy. — *humain* — *avide*

Be economical and temperate. Do not be thoughtless. pl. *économé* sobre pl. *léger*

As the *third person* singular and plural of the imperative mood belong rather to the subjunctive, they are there exemplified.

It has already been observed, that before the subjunctive can form complete sense, it must be preceded by another verb. For the sake of brevity, therefore, complete sentences will only be given on the present tense. This remark applies alike to the four conjugations.
**Auxiliary Verb être.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>IMPERFECT</td>
<td>PLUPERFECT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que juges</td>
<td>that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je fusse</td>
<td>I might, or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu fusses</td>
<td>could be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il fût</td>
<td>thou mightst be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous fussions</td>
<td>he might be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous fussiez</td>
<td>we might be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils fussent</td>
<td>you might be</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>HAVE BEEN</th>
<th>PLUPERFECT</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>que</td>
<td>that</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je fussusse</td>
<td>I might, or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu fusses</td>
<td>could</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il est</td>
<td>thou might'as be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous fusses</td>
<td>il est</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous fussiez</td>
<td>nous eusses</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils fussent</td>
<td>vous eussiez</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### PRESENT

Is it possible I can be so credulous? They wish *le On desire* thou mightst be more modest. Is it possible she can be so modest? They wish we may be more assiduous. It is not entité assidu On *expected* you should be timid. It is feared they may s'attend timide On *be* guilty. coupable.

### PAST TENSE

That I may have been so hasty and impatient. emporté si *Thou may'st have been so bloated with pride. That she may boufi de have been so fickle. That we may have been so headstrong.

volage têtu That you may have been so covetous. That they may have been so unreasonable.

dérasonnable.

Observe, the verb être serves as an auxiliary to conjugate the passive verbs through all their tenses, the compound tenses of the pronominal verbs, and those of about fifty neuter verbs.

### IMPERFECT

That I might not be humane and generous. *That thou might'as be more careful. That she might not be so soigneux arrogant. That we might be victorious. That you might not be so stern. That they might not be so cruel.*
FIRST CONJUGATION.

IN ER.

1. In verbs ending in -ger, the e is preserved in those tenses where g is followed by the vowels a or o, in order to preserve to this letter its soft sound; as mangeant, jugeons, je négligeai.

2. In verbs ending in -cer, for the same reason, a cedilla is put under c, when followed by a or o; as appâti, plaçons, j’effaçai.

3. In verbs ending in -oyer and -uyer, the e changed into i before a mute e; as j’emploie, il essuie, j’appuierai, il mettieroit.

4. This practice is extended by some to verbs in -oyer, and -uyer, as il paie, j’essaierai, elle grasseye, or grassee.

5. In some few verbs ending in -eler and -eter, the l and t are doubled in those inflections, which receive an e mute after these consonants, as from appeller, il appelle, from jeter, je jeterai, etc.

6. The first person singular of the present of the indicative changes e mute into acute é in interrogative sentences. This remark is also applied to some verbs of the second conjugation ending in -oir, -frir and -lir; as négligé-je ? aimé-je ? offré-je ? cueillé-je ?

EXERCISE.

PLUPERFECT. That I might have been more studious. That

thou mightst have been more circumspect. That she might

have been more attentive to her duty. That we might have
circonspect.

been less addicted to pleasure. That you might have

devoir m. pl.

been less assiduous and more grateful. That they might have

loué a art. m. pl.

been less daring.

assidu

plus reconnoissant.

hardi.
Of the Regular Verbs.

PARADIGM, OR MODEL.

INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SUBJECTS</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>PRESENT</strong></td>
<td><strong>PAST</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>parl-er</td>
<td>to speak.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

PARTICIPLES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SUBJECTS</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>PRESENT</strong></td>
<td><strong>PAST</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>parl-sent</td>
<td>speaking</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>parl-é m.-f.</td>
<td>spoken</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

REMARKS.

1. All the regular verbs of the First Conjugation adopt the terminations of the verb parler; Exam.

| parl-er | aim-er | expliqu-er | avou-er |
| parl-sent | annonç-ent | engag-ent | défray-ent |
| parl-é | agré-é | décri-é | dédommagé |
| je parl-s | dans-é | ignor-é | renvoi-é |
| tu parl-és | din-és | rejett-és | remouvel-ès |
| il parl-é | chant-é | bégaï-é | grassey-é |
| nous parl-ons | berg-ons | choy-ons | chang-ons |
| vous parl-ex | règn-ex | essuy-ex | épel-ex |
| ils parl-ent | caress-ent | ennui-ent | appel-ent |

And so on through the whole verb.

2 Adverbs, with few exceptions, must be placed after the verb, in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle, in compound tenses, when this adverb is only a single word.

3 The remarks prefixed to the exercises on the verb avoir, when de is to be placed between the verb and the substantive, ought to be attended to.

4 The article the, after the verb, must always be expressed in French, though often understood in English.

EXERCISE.

INDICATIVE PRESENT. I willingly give that plaything to volontiers donner vouvoyons.

2.
### Of the Regular Verbs

#### INDICATIVE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je parl-e</td>
<td>I speak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu parl-es</td>
<td>thou speakes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il parl-e</td>
<td>he speaks</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous parl-ons</td>
<td>nous avons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous parl-es</td>
<td>vous avez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils parl-ons</td>
<td>ils ont</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Présent</th>
<th>Présent Indéfinitive</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'ai</td>
<td>I have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu as</td>
<td>thou hast</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il a</td>
<td>he has</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous avons</td>
<td>we have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous avez</td>
<td>you have</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils ont</td>
<td>they have</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

your sister. Do I prefer pleasure to my duty? Dest f. * préférer art. m. déplorer m. thou not incense thy enemies? He does not propose salutary irrérer ennemi proposer un-m-2 advice to his friends. We sincerely love peace and avis m. 1. sincèrement art. paix f. art. tranquillity. We do not neglect (any thing) to please you. =f. * négliger rien pour plaire Do you not admire the beauty of that landscape? Do not admirer =f. paysage m. * your parents comfort the afflicted? They (make use of) all consoler affligé m. pl. employer means to succeed. art. moyen m. pour réussir.

### Présent Indéfinitive

I have (given up) my favourite céder favori 2 horse to my cousin. Hast thou not exchanged watches cheval m. 1. —m. changer de montres with my sister? Has the tutor given fine engravings to précepteur de gravure f. pl. his pupill ? We have spoken (a long while) of your adventure. pupille m. long-temps aventure f. Have you not insisted too much upon that point? Have your insister sur m. aunts prepared their ball dresses? tantes préparer de bal 2 habit m. pl. 1

### Imparfait

I uneceasingly thought of my misfortunes. sans cesse penser à malheur m. pl. Didst thou dread his presence and firmness? He ex-redouter —f. pron. fermeté f. re-hibited in his person all the virtues of his ancestors. Did not tracer en f. ancêtre
Of the Regular Verbs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES.</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>IMPERFECT.</td>
<td>PLUPERFECT.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je parlais</td>
<td>j'avoie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu parlais</td>
<td>tu avoie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il parlait</td>
<td>il avoit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous parlions</td>
<td>nous avions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous parliez</td>
<td>vous aviez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils parlaient</td>
<td>ils avoient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

|          |          |          |          |          |
|          | I had   |          |          |          |
|          |         |          |          |          |
|          |          |          |          |          |

that woman accuse her friend of levity? We did not protect
| accuser | ami f. | légèreté f. | protéger |

that bad man. You despised a vain erudition. Did the
| méchant | mépriser — | — l. 1 |

Romans disdain so weak an enemy? The bees were there
| Romain désaiguner foible 2 m 1. | abeille * y |
sucking the cups of the flowers.
| sucre | calice m. | fleur. |

Pluperfect. I had drained an unwholesome marsh.
| dessécher | malsain 2 | marais m 1. |

Hads't thou not married a man rich, but unluckily without
| épouser | malheureusement sans |

education? Had his father rejected these advantageous
| rejeter | avantageux 2 |

offers? We had not long listened to the singing of
| offre l. 1 | long-temps écouter * chant m. |

the birds. Had you already studied geography and
| oiseau m. | déjà étudier art. = l. art. |

history? Had not his friends procured him a company of
| procurer 2 lui 1 compagnie f. |

cavalry?
| cavalerie. |

There is a fourth preterit, called preterit anterior
| indefinite, which is used instead of the preterit ante-

rior, when speaking of a time not entirely elapsed;

as, j’ai eu achevé mon ouvrage ce matin, cette semaine,

e.tc. and not j’eus achevé: as it is found in every con-

jugation, I shall insert it here; j’ai eu parlé, tu as eu

parlé, il a eu parlé, nous avons eu parlé, vous avez eu

parlé, ils ont eu parlé.
Of the Regular Verbs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRETERIT DEFINITE</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>je parl-ai</strong></td>
<td><strong>PRETERIT ANTERIOR</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>I spoke</strong></td>
<td><strong>I had</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu parl-as</td>
<td>thou spoke</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>he spoke</td>
<td>tu eus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous parl-ames</td>
<td>nous eûmes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>you spoke</td>
<td>vous eûtes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils parl-ent</td>
<td>ils eurent</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Preterit Definite.** Did I not gladly give *avec plaisir* de art.

peaches and flowers to my neighbours? Thou forgotten an essential circumstance. Did not your cousin relate that charming history with (a great deal) of grace? He lightly judged of my intentions. Did we not show légèremment juger * — * montrer de courage, constancy, and firmness? Did you visit the grotto and the grove! They did not généreusement forgive their enemies.

**Preterit Anterior.** I had soon wasted my money, bientôt manger argent m. and exhausted my resources. Had’st thou very soon reinforced thy party? Had not Alexander soon surmounted all obstacles? We had not soon enough shut the shutters, and (let down) the curtains. Had you not quickly dined? In the twinkling of an eye, they had dispersed the mob.

**Future Absolute.** I shall relieve the poor. Wilt thou faithfully keep that secret? Will he consult fidélement garder — m. consulter de art.
Of the Regular Verbs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>FUTURE ABSOLUTE.</td>
<td>FUTURE ABSOLUTE.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je parlerai</td>
<td>j’aurai</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>I shall, or</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>will speak</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu parles</td>
<td>tu auras</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>thou shalt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il parle</td>
<td>il aura</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>he shall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous parlons</td>
<td>nous aurons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>we shall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous parlez</td>
<td>vous aurez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>you shall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils parlent</td>
<td>ils auront</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>they shall</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

future anterior. I shall, or will

A new spoken

enlightened judges? He will support you with all his credit.

déclaré 2 juge 1 appuyer de m.

We shall not prefer pleasure to glory, and riches to

préférer art. m. art. f. art. pl. art.

honour. By such a conduct, will you not affright your father

tel 2 1 conduire f. 3 affliger

and mother? Will they astonish their hearers?

pron. étonner auditeur m. pl.

Future anterior. I shall soon have finished this book. By

achever m.

thy submission, wilt thou not have appeased his anger? Will

soumettre f. appaiser colère f.

the king have triumphed over his enemies? We, perhaps, shall

triompher de 2 1

not have rewarded enough the merit of this good man.

récompenser mérite m. de bien 2 1

Will you not have flown to his assistance? Will our servants

vole secours m. domestiques m.

have brought money?

apporter de argent

Conditional present. Should I form .

conjectures former de art. f. pl.

without number? Thou would’st not avoid so great a danger.

nombre m. éviter 2 3 1 4

Would not his attorney (clear up) that business? We would

procureur débrouiller affaire f.

(drive away) the importunate. Would you not discover

chasser importun m. pl.

dévoiler
Of the Regular Verbs.

Conditional.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>PRESENT</strong></td>
<td><strong>PAST</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je parl-éros</td>
<td>j’aurais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu parl-éros</td>
<td>tu aurais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il parl-éroit</td>
<td>il aurait</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous parl-érons</td>
<td>nous aurions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous parl-érez</td>
<td>vous auriez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils parl-érent</td>
<td>ils auraient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

J’eusse parlé, tu eusses parlé, il eût parlé, nous eussions parlé, vous eussiez parlé, ils eussent parlé, is also used for the conditional past. This remark holds good for every verb.

that atrocious plot? They would not unravel the clue of intrigue.

---

**Past.** I should have liked hunting, fishing, and the métier art. chasse f. art. pêche f. country. Wouldst thou not have played? Would he not have campagne f. jouter bowed to the company? Would we gladly have praised his salut * compagne f. avec plaisir & jouer 1 pride and insolvency? You would have awakened orgueil m. pron. malhonnêteté f. éveiller every body. Would those merchants have paid their debts? tout le monde marchand payer dette f. pl.

**Imperative.** In all thy actions, consult the light of Dans f. pl. consulter lumière art. reason. Never yield to the violence of thy passions. te abandonner — f.

Let us love justice, peace, and virtue. Let us not art. — f. art. f. art. f.

cease to work. Sacrifice your own interest to the gester de travailler Sacrifier * intérêt m. pl.
Of the Regular Verbs.

IMPERATIVE.

parle* que speak (thou)
qu'il parle que let him speak
parle- ons que let us speak
parle- ez que speak (ye)
qu'ils parle- ent que let them speak

SUBJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

que present que preterit
je parle que I may, or can j'ai que I may, or can
qui parle que thou mayst speak tu aies que thou mayst
il parl- es que he may speak il ait que he may
nous parl- tions que we may speak nous soyons que we may
vous parl- ies que you may vous ayes que you may
ils parl- ent que they may ils aient que they may

public good. Do not omit such useful and interesting details.

sant 3 — m. pl. 1.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT. That I may not always listen to a severe censor of my defects. That thou mayst find — 2 — m. 1. défaut m. pl. trouver real friends. That he may adorn his speeches with the graces de vrai parer discours de

of a pure diction. That she may remain in her boudoir.

— 2 — f. 1. rester m.

That we should so hastily condemn the world. That you légèrement condamner monde m.

may pont incessantly. That they may work more willingly. bouter sans cesse travailler plus volontiers

*Rem. The second person singular of the imperative of this conjugation, and likewise of some verbs of the second ending in -vrir, -ir, -oir, take s after e, before the word y and en, as portes-en à ton frère, carry some to thy brother; offres-en à ta sœur, offer some to thy sister; cueilles-en aussi pour toi, gather some alike for thyself; apportes-y tes livres, bring there thy books.
### Simple Tenses

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Que</th>
<th>Imperfect</th>
<th>Que</th>
<th>Pluperfect</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Je parl-asse</td>
<td><em>I might, could or would speak</em></td>
<td>J’eusse</td>
<td><em>I might could, or would have spoken</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tu parl-asses</td>
<td><em>thou mightst speak</em></td>
<td>Tu eusses</td>
<td><em>thou mightst have spoken</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Il parlât</td>
<td><em>he might speak</em></td>
<td>Il eût</td>
<td><em>he might have spoken</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nous parl-assions</td>
<td><em>we might speak</em></td>
<td>Nous eussions</td>
<td><em>we might have spoken</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vous parl-assiez</td>
<td><em>you might speak</em></td>
<td>Vous eussiez</td>
<td><em>you might have spoken</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ils parl-assent</td>
<td><em>they might speak</em></td>
<td>Ils eussent</td>
<td><em>they might have spoken</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Preterit

That I may have caressed insolence, and flattered pride. That thou may’st have added nothing to that work. That he may have carried despair into the soul of his friend. That we may have blamed a conduct so prudent and so wise. That you may have exasperated so petulant a character. That they may not have (taken advantage of) the circumstances.

### Imperfect

That I might not copy his example. That thou might’st (give up) perfidious friends. That he might inhabit a hut instead of a palace. That we might fall at the feet of an illegitimate king. That you might respect the laws of your country. That they might not speak at random.

### Pluperfect

That I might not have burnt that work. That
SECOND CONJUGATION.

in ir,

Rem. This conjugation is divided into four branches.

The first, which contains a great many verbs, includes all the regular verbs terminated in ir, which do not fall under the three other branches.

The second contains only the seventeen following verbs in mir, tir, vir; : all the others belong to the first branch.

Consentir  to consent  se rendormir  to fall asleep again
démenir  to give the lie  repartir*  to set out again, to reply
desmervir  to clear the table  se repentir  to repent
dormir  to sleep  ressentir  to resent
endormir  to fall asleep  ressortir*  to go out again
mentir  to lie  sentir  to feel
partir  to set out  servir  to serve
pressentir  to foresee  sortir  to go out
redormir  to sleep again

*Repartir, to set out again, to reply, and ressortir, to go out again, must not be confounded with repartir, to distribute, and ressortir, to belong to, which two last belong to the first branch, as well as servir, to enslave, and assortir, to match; which were erroneously given as derivatives of servir and sortir.

The third branch contains the verbs couvir, to cover; offrir, to offer; ouvrir, to open; souffrir, to suffer, and their derivatives.

The fourth branch contains the verbs tenir and venir, and their derivatives: respecting which the learner must observe, that tenir and all its derivatives are conjugated with avoir in their compound tenses; whereas venir, and its derivatives, are conjugated with être; except: 1st, prévenir and subvenir, which take avoir; 2dly, convenir, which takes avoir when it signifies to suit; and être, when it signifies to agree; 3dly, contrevenir, which takes indifferently avoir or être.

thou might'st not have contemplated the beauties of the country.
contempler  =  campagne
That he might have perfected his natural qualities. That perfectionner — rel. 2 = f. pl. 1.
we might not have gained the victory. That you might have remporter = f.
enchanted the public. That they might have struck their
— ter = m. frapper enemies with fear.
— de crainte.

PARADOIGMS.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BRANCH 1</th>
<th>BRANCH 2</th>
<th>BRANCH 3</th>
<th>BRANCH 4</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Simple</td>
<td>to punish</td>
<td>to feel</td>
<td>to open</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pun-ir</td>
<td>sen-tir</td>
<td>ouv-rir</td>
<td>t-enir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>participle present.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simple</td>
<td>punishing</td>
<td>feeling</td>
<td>opening</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pun-issant</td>
<td>sen-tant</td>
<td>ouv-issant</td>
<td>t-enant</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>participle past.</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Simple</td>
<td>punished</td>
<td>felt</td>
<td>opened</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pun-i</td>
<td>sen-ti</td>
<td>ouv-crt</td>
<td>t-enum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comp.</td>
<td>to have punished</td>
<td>felt</td>
<td>opened</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avoir pun-i</td>
<td></td>
<td>ouv-crt</td>
<td>t-enum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Comp.</td>
<td>having punished</td>
<td>sen-ti</td>
<td>ouv-crt</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ayant pun-i</td>
<td></td>
<td>t-enum</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

INDICATIVE.

PRESENT.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{I punish} & \quad \text{feel} & \quad \text{open} & \quad \text{hold} \\
\text{je pun-is} & \quad \text{sen-s} & \quad \text{ouv-re} & \quad \text{t-iens} \\
\text{tu pun-is} & \quad \text{sen-s} & \quad \text{ouv-res} & \quad \text{t-iens} \\
\text{il pun-is} & \quad \text{sen-t} & \quad \text{ouv-re} & \quad \text{t-iens} \\
\text{nous pun-issent} & \quad \text{sen-tions} & \quad \text{ouv-rons} & \quad \text{t-enons} \\
\text{vous pun-issez} & \quad \text{sen-tes} & \quad \text{ouv-res} & \quad \text{t-enez} \\
\text{ils pun-issent} & \quad \text{sen-tent} & \quad \text{ouv-rient} & \quad \text{t-iennent}
\end{align*}
\]

INDICATIVE. PRESENT. I choose this picture. I feel all
the unpleasantness of your situation. Whence comest thou?
\begin{align*}
\text{désagrement m.} & \quad \text{d'où} \quad \text{venir} \\
\text{Does he thus define that word? Does his mother (go out) so} & \quad \text{suis définir} \quad \text{mot m.} \\
\text{soon? Do we not (set off) for the country? Do you not} & \quad \text{sortir} \\
\text{tôt} & \quad \text{partir} \quad \text{campagne f.} \\
\text{pity his sorrows? Do you not (tell a lie)? They (are}} & \quad \text{compartir à mal m. pl.} \\
\text{finishing) at this moment. They (act contrary) to your orders.} & \quad \text{mentir} \\
\text{finir dans} & \quad \text{art.} \quad \text{contrevenir} \quad \text{ordre.} \\
\text{I fortified his soul against the dangers of} & \quad \text{prémunir}
\end{align*}
Of the Regular Verbs...

**Pretérit Indefinite.**

**Comp.**
- I have punished | felt | opened | held
  - j'ai puni | senti | ouvert | tenu

**Simple**
- I did punish | felt | open | hold
  - je punis | sentis | ouvris | tenu

**Pluperfect.**

**Comp.**
- I had punished | felt | opened | held
  - j'avais puni | senti | ouvert | tenu

**Pretérit Definite.**

**Simple**
- I punished | felt | opened | held
  - je punis | sentis | ouvris | tins
- tu punis | sentis | ouvris | tins
- il punit | sentit | ouvrit | tint
- nous punissons | sentimes | ouvrimes | tinmes
- vous punissez | sentiles | ouvrites | tintes
- ils punissent | sentirent | ouvrent | tinrent

seduction. I served my friends warmly. Did'st not
art. — f. servir avec chaleur
thou amuse him with fair promises? He compiled (at last)
etretenir de beau promesse f. pl. consentir enfin
with the wishes of his family. Did we not frequently à
désir m. pl. famille f. fréquemment
warn our friends of the bad state of their affairs? Did we
avertir
sleep then? Did you not believe your character? Did
dormir alors démentir caractère m.
not the enemies invade an immense country? Did the
envahir —m pays m. 1.
wild beasts often (come out) from the bottom of
sauvage 2 bête f. 1 souvent sortir fond m.
their mountains?

**Pretérit.** I softened my father by my submission. I
fléchir soumission f.
foresaw that terrible catastrophe. Thou did'st not (come again)
pressentir —f. 1 revenir
as thou hadst promised. He did not succeed through
comme le ind-2 promis | réussir par

N. B. Only the first person of those tenses, which
are invariably conjugated alike, will now be given;
the scholar will easily supply the rest.
124

Of the Regular Verbs.

**PRETERIT ANTERIOR.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comp.</th>
<th>I had punished</th>
<th>felt</th>
<th>opened</th>
<th>held</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'eus pun-i</td>
<td>sen-ti</td>
<td>ouv-er t</td>
<td>t-enu</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**FUTURE ABSOLUTE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple</th>
<th>I shall punish</th>
<th>feel</th>
<th>open</th>
<th>hold</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je pun-irai</td>
<td>sen-tirai</td>
<td>ouv-rirai</td>
<td>t-iendrai</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**FUTURE ANTERIOR.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Comp.</th>
<th>I shall have punished</th>
<th>felt</th>
<th>opened</th>
<th>held</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'aurai pun-i</td>
<td>sen-ti</td>
<td>ouv-ert</td>
<td>t-enu</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**CONDITIONAL.**

**PRESENT.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple</th>
<th>I should punish</th>
<th>feel</th>
<th>open</th>
<th>hold</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je pun-trois</td>
<td>sen-tirons</td>
<td>ouv-rirois</td>
<td>t-iendroids</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

thoughtlessness. Did his daughter not (set out again) repartir.
immediately? Did not Alexander sully his glory by his pride? ternir.
Did we (go out) of the city before him? We never betrayed ville f. avant lui trahir.
that important secret. Did you not agree to trust
—2 — m. 1 consentir de vous en rapporter
to me? They served their country with courage. Did the
ancient philosophers enjoy great consideration?
philosophe m. pl. jouir de un — f.
futurant. Shall I not obtain this of you? What will be-
obtenir cela de que de-
come of thee, if I forsake thee? Will he not embellish
venir * tu abandonner embellir
his country seat? He will not sleep quietly.
maison de campagne f. tranquillement
Shall we consent to that ridiculous bargain? With
2 marché m. 1 avec de art.
time and patience, you will compass your end. We
m. pr. art. f. venir à bout de dessein m.
shall not sully the splendour of our life by an unworthy action.
éclat m. indigne 2 — 1
Will those men enrich their country by their industry? Will
enrichir pays industrie
not our friends offer us their assistance?
offrir secours
OFTHE REGULAR VERBS.

PAST.

Comp. { Should have punished | felt | opened | held
{ j'aurons puni 

sen-ti
ouver-t

IMPERATIVE.

punir (thou) | sentir | ouvrir | tenir
{ punis
sen-te
ouver-re

{ qu'il punisse
sen-te
ouver-re

{ qu'ils punissent
sen-tent
ouver-ent

CONDITIONAL. I would open the door and the window.

porte f.

fenêtre f.

I should still cherish life. Would'st not thou interpose in

cherir art.

intervenir

that affair? Would my brother (set off again) without taking

repartir sans prendre

leave of us? You would not succeed in injuring him in the

parvenir à nuire lui

congé public opinion. Could'st thou soften that flinty heart?

— 2 — f. 1

attendrir de rocher 2

Could they foresee their misfortune? Would men always

presentir malheur

(grow old) without growing wiser, if they reflected on

vieillir sans devenir inf.-1

réfléchir ind. -2 sur

the shortness of life?

brièveté f. art.

IMPERATIVE. Shudder with horror and terror. Support

frémir de = de effroi m. soutenir

thy character in good and bad fortune. Do not

dans art. mauvais — f.

obtain thy point but by means consistent with

parvenir à fin f. pl. que des moyens que avoue 2 * art.
delicacy. Let us feed the poor. Let us gain

delicatesse 1 nourrir m. pl.

obtenir art.

glory by our perseverance. Let us not divulge our secrets

doverybody. Never submit to so unjust a yoke. Do not

tout le monde fléchir sous 2 joug m. 1

maintain so absurd an opinion. Do not (come upon us) again

souvenir — de 2 — f. 1

(in that unexpected manner.)

ainsi à l'improvisée.

M2
Of the Regular Verbs.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT.

| that I may punish | feel | open | hold |
| que je punisse    | sen-te | ouv-re | t-ienne |
| que tu punisses   | sen-tes | ouv-res | t-ienness |
| qu'il punisse     | sen-te | ouv-re | t-ienne |
| que nous punissions | sen-tions | ouv-riens | t-ientos |
| que vous punissiez | sen-tiez | ouv-ries | t-ientes |
| qu'ils punissent  | sen-tent | ouv-rent | t-ientent |

PREDERIT.

Comp. { that I may have punished fêt | open | hold |
| que j'aie puni | ouv-ert | t-eu |

IMPERFECT.

| that I might punish | feel | open | hold |
| que je punisse      | sen-tisses | ouv-risse | t-insse |
| que tu punisses     | sen-tisses | ouv-risses | t-insises |
| qu'il punisse       | sen-tit | ouv-rit | t-int |
| que nous punissions | sen-titions | ouv-riisions | t-insitons |
| que vous punissiez  | sen-tisses | ouv-rissies | t-insises |
| qu'ils punissent    | sen-tissent | ouv-rissent | t-insissent |

PLUPERFECT.

Comp. { I might have punished fêt | open | held |
| que j'eusse puni | ouvert | tenu |

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT. That I may never blemish my re-

Subtrir

f. prévenir de art. sf = 2

enemies. I will not have thee (go out) this morning. That he

veus que tu sub-1 matin m.

may not enjoy his glory. That he may not obtain his

de = f. parvenir d

dends. That we may become just, honest, and virtuous.

f. pl. devenir honnête vertueux

That you may punish the guilty. That you may return

coupable pl. revenir

covered with laurels. That they may establish

couvert de laurier m. pl. établir de art.

wise and just laws. That they may agree about the

2 3 1 convenir de

conditions.

conditions.
Of the Regular Verbs.

THIRD CONJUGATION.

IN-oir.

PARADIGM.

This conjugation contains only seven regular verbs, which are:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>verbe</th>
<th>meaning</th>
<th>verbe</th>
<th>meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>per-evoir</td>
<td>to receive</td>
<td>déc-evoir</td>
<td>to deceive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>aper-evoir</td>
<td>to perceive</td>
<td>d-evoir</td>
<td>to owe</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>conc-evoir</td>
<td>to conceive</td>
<td>red-evoir</td>
<td>to owe again</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

And recevoir, which serves as paradigm. *Percevoir* is a law term, and *apercevoir* is often reflected.

Observe. In verbs ending in *-cevoir* the *c* to preserve the *soft sound* of that letter, takes a *cedilla*, when followed by *o*, or *u*.

INFINITIVE.

**SIMPLE TENSES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>reç-evoir</td>
<td>to receive</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PARTICIPLES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Present</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>reç-evant</td>
<td>receiving</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>reç-u</td>
<td>received</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**IMPERFECT.** That I might stun the whole neighbourhood.

---

etourdir 2 tout 1 voisinage m.

That I might not (bring about) my designs. That thou venir à bout de projet m. pl.

might'st (tell a wilful lie.) That he might not bear

mentir de dessein prémédité. soutenir

his disgrace with firmness. That we might disobey the laws.

-- f. fermeté désobéir à

That we might belong to that great king. That you might appartenir

renounce your errors and prejudices. That they might

revenir de = pr. pron. préjugé

weaken the force of their reasons. That they might hold

affoiblir f. raisonnement tenir à

the most absurd ideas.

2 1.
## Of the Regular Verbs.

### INDICATIVE.

#### SIMPLE TENSES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je reçois</td>
<td>nous recevons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu reçois</td>
<td>vous recevez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il reçoit</td>
<td>ils reçoivent</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### IMPERFECT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Preterit Indefinite</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je reçus</td>
<td>je l'avais reçu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu reçus</td>
<td>tu l'avez reçu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il reçut</td>
<td>il l'a reçu</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### PLUPERFECT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Preterit Anterior</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je reçus</td>
<td>je l'avais reçu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu reçus</td>
<td>tu l'avez reçu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il reçut</td>
<td>il l'a reçu</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### EXERCISE.

**Indicative Present.** I perceive the summit of the Alps covered with perpetual snow. What gratitude dost thou not owe to her who (has discharged) the duty of a mother (to thee) (in thy infancy)? Does your scholar understand well that rule which is so simple? We do not owe a large sum. Do you not perceive the sum of money? Is a green firm and courageous men to yield to circumstances? Are we not kind to each other?

**Imperfect.** Did I not receive him kindly? We did not perceive the castle from such a distance? We did not receive our income. Did you not receive great civilities?
Of the Regular Verbs.

### Simple Tenses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Future Absolute.</th>
<th>Compound Tenses.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I shall receive</td>
<td>j'anurai reçu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je recevrai</td>
<td>nous recevrons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I shall have received</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Conditional.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Past.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'aurais reçu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I should have received</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Imperative.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>receive thou</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>receive ye</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let us receive</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>let them receive</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

Did those tyrants conceive all the blackness of their crimes?

Did the queen conceive a great esteem for that honest man? Did we not immediately perceive the snare?

You did not receive his letters in time. Did the ministers consider the depth of his plan?

---

Faute
SUBJUNCTIVE.

**SIMPLE TENSES.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRESENT</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>que je reçois que nous reçus que vous recuisses qu'il reçoive qu'ils reçoivent</td>
<td>que j'aie reçu que I may have received</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que tu reçois que nous reçus que tu, etc. que vous recuisses que tu, etc.</td>
<td>que j'euise que I might have received</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que nous recuevons que nous recuisses que tu, etc. que vous recuisses que tu, etc.</td>
<td>que j'euise que I might have received</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**IMPERFECT.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRETERIT</th>
<th>PLUPERFECT</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>que je reçois que nous recuissions que vous recuisses que tu, etc. que vous recuisses que tu, etc.</td>
<td>que j'euise que I might have received</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que tu reçois que nous recuissions que vous recuisses que tu, etc. que vous recuisses que tu, etc.</td>
<td>que j'euise que I might have received</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qu'il reçoût qu'ils reçoissent que j'euise que I might have received</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Should a wise man thus (give himself up) to despair?

**IMPERATIVE.** Conceive the horror of his situation. Do not receive that mark of confidence with indifference. Let us

entertain a horror of vice. Let us never owe (any concevoir * de art. pour art. m. thing). Receive his advice with respect and gratitude. Recevoir avis receve no more of his letters.

**SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT.** That I may receive consolations. That he should not conceive a thought so well explained.

That we may always receive false news. That you may not perceive the danger of books which are contrary to good morals. That they may not collect unjust taxes.
FOURTH CONJUGATION.

IN -re.

REMARK.—This conjugation has five branches.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Branch 1</th>
<th>Branch 2</th>
<th>Branch 3</th>
<th>Branch 4</th>
<th>Branch 5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>to render</td>
<td>to please</td>
<td>to appear</td>
<td>to reduce</td>
<td>to join</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rendre</td>
<td>plaire</td>
<td>paroître</td>
<td>réduire</td>
<td>joindre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rendered</td>
<td>pleased</td>
<td>appeared</td>
<td>reduced</td>
<td>joined</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>avoir rendu</td>
<td>plu</td>
<td>paru</td>
<td>réduit</td>
<td>joint</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

PARADIGMS.

INFINITIVE.

PRESENT.

IMPERFECT. That I might conceive such a project. That
he might perceive the secret design of the enemy’s general.
That we might not receive every body with civility. That you
might not conceive the depth of this book. That they
might not perceive the masts of the ship.
**PARTICIPLE PRESENT.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>BRANCH 1.</th>
<th>BRANCH 2.</th>
<th>BRANCH 3.</th>
<th>BRANCH 4.</th>
<th>BRANCH 5.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rendering</td>
<td>pleasing</td>
<td>appearing</td>
<td>reducing</td>
<td>joining</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>rend-ant</td>
<td>pl-aissant</td>
<td>par-oissant</td>
<td>réduisant</td>
<td>joi-gnant</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PARTICIPLE PAST.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>rendered</th>
<th>pleased</th>
<th>appeared</th>
<th>reduced</th>
<th>joined</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rend-u</td>
<td>pl-u</td>
<td>par-u</td>
<td>réduit</td>
<td>joi-nt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDICATIVE.**

**PRESENT.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I render</th>
<th>you render</th>
<th>he renders</th>
<th>we render</th>
<th>you (pl.) render</th>
<th>they render</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>please</td>
<td>pl-ais</td>
<td>pl-ais</td>
<td>pl-ais</td>
<td>pl-ais</td>
<td>pl-ais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>appear</td>
<td>par-ois</td>
<td>par-ois</td>
<td>par-ois</td>
<td>par-ois</td>
<td>par-ois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>reduce</td>
<td>réduis</td>
<td>réduis</td>
<td>réduis</td>
<td>réduis</td>
<td>réduis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>join</td>
<td>joi-ns</td>
<td>joi-ns</td>
<td>joi-ns</td>
<td>joi-ns</td>
<td>joi-ns</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**PRETERIT INDEFINITE. (I have)**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>rendered</th>
<th>pleased</th>
<th>appeared</th>
<th>reduced</th>
<th>joined</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j'ai rend-u</td>
<td>pl-u</td>
<td>par-u</td>
<td>réduit</td>
<td>joi-nt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDICATIVE PRESENT.** I know his fiery and impetuous temper. I wait his return with impatience. Does he fear death? Does not virtue please every body? We do not force you to adopt this opinion. We suppress for the present several interesting circumstances. Do you not confound these notions one with another? You seduce your hearers by your modest exterior. Do your sons acknowledge their errors? Do not those workmen waste their time about trifles? I was déplaire pitying those sad victims of the revolution. Did not plaindre triste victime f. pl. — f.
Of the Regular Verbs.

IMPERFECT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Branch 1</th>
<th>Branch 2</th>
<th>Branch 3</th>
<th>Branch 4</th>
<th>Branch 5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I did render</td>
<td>please</td>
<td>appear</td>
<td>reduce</td>
<td>join</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je rendois</td>
<td>plaisois</td>
<td>paroisois</td>
<td>reduisois</td>
<td>joignois</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

PLUPERFECT.

| I had rendered | pleased | appeared | reduced | joined |
| j'avois rendu   | plu      | paru      | reduit   | joit    |

PRETERIT DEFINITE.

| I rendered | pleased | appeared | reduced | joined |
| je rendis    | pluis    | paruis    | reduisis  | joignis  |
| tu rendis    | plus     | parus     | reduisis  | joignis  |
| il rendit    | plut     | parut     | reduit    | joit     |
| nous rendimes| plumes   | par-umes  | reduimessis| joignimes |
| vous rendites| plutes   | parites   | reduitis  | joignites |
| ils rendirent| plurent | parurent | reduiront | joignirent |

PRETERIT ANTEOR.

| I had rendered | pleased | appeared | reduced | joined |
| j'eus rendu    | plu      | paru      | reduit   | joit    |

---

this dog bite? Did that man (at last) acknowledge his injustice? We did not appear convinced. We joined our consciences.
sighs and tears. Were you painting an historical subject? Did those orators throw the grace of art expression into their speeches? They led the people into an error.

Preterit. I aimed at an honest end. Did his prudence extinguish the fire of a disordered imagination? Did not your conduct (do away) his prejudices? We led our friend back to his country-house. Did we offer our incense to the pride of a blockhead? Did you feign to think as a madman? Did you conduct your children from truth to
Of the Regular Verbs.

FUTURE ABSOLUTÉ.

BRANCH 1. BRANCH 2. BRANCH 3. BRANCH 4. BRANCH 5.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I shall render</th>
<th>please</th>
<th>appear</th>
<th>reduce</th>
<th>join</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je rendrai</td>
<td>pl-sairai</td>
<td>par-ostrai</td>
<td>rédui-rai</td>
<td>joi-ndrai</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

FUTURE ANTERIOR (I shall have)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Rendered</th>
<th>pleased</th>
<th>appeared</th>
<th>reduced</th>
<th>joined</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>j’aurai rend-u</td>
<td>pl-u</td>
<td>par-u</td>
<td>rédui-t</td>
<td>joi-nt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CONDITIONAL.

PRESENT.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>I should render</th>
<th>please</th>
<th>appear</th>
<th>reduce</th>
<th>join</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je rend-rais</td>
<td>pl-sairais</td>
<td>par-ostrais</td>
<td>rédui-rais</td>
<td>joi-ndrais</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

truth? Did those frightful spectres appear again?

affrayant 2 — m. pl. 1. apparître de nouveau

Did not the children (come down) at the first summons?

descendre d’ordre m. sing.

FUTURE: Shall I hear the music of the new opera?

entendre musique f.

I shall not conceal from you my mind.

Will the general constrict the officers to join their respective corps?

contraindre officier rejoindre =

car

Will not a thought, true, grand, and well expressed, please f.

esprimé

at all times? We shall (make our appearance) on this great
dans art. m. pl. paroître sur
theatre, next month. Shall we describe all the
— m. art. prochain 2 mois m. 1 dépeindre
horror of this terrible night? Will you not new-model a
— 2 nuit f. 1 refondre

work so full of charming ideas? Will you know your
plein 2 1 reconnaître

things again? Will they always reduce our duties to
effet m. pl. * devoir m. pl.

beneficence? They will assiduously correspond with
art. bienfaisance f. assidûment correspondre

their friends.

CONDITIONAL. Should I, by these means, gain the
moyen m. s. atteindre à

desired end? I should (carry on) the undertaking with suc-
désiré 2 but m. 1 condûtre entreprise f.
Of the Regular Verbs.

Past. (I should have)

rendered | pleased | appeared | reduced | joined
j’aurais rendu | plu | paru | réduit | joi-nt

Imperative.

render (thou) | please | appear | reduce | join
rendez | pleur | parais | réduit | joignent
qu’il rendez | leur | paraissent | réduisent | joignez
rendons | leurs | paraissent | réduisons | joignons
rendez | leur | paraissent | réduisez | joignez
qu’ils rendent | leurs | paraissent | réduisent | joignent

cest. Would his mother wait with (so much) patience? Could
sincerity displease the man (of sense)? Should we set
art. est de vendre our liberty? Should we build our house upon that plan
construire — m.
Would you oblige young people to live as you
astreindre de art. gens pl. vivre comme
do? Would you reduce your child to despair? They,
* art. désespérer m.
should dread the public censure. Would my pro-
terminer 4 de 3 art. 1 f. 2
sectors introduce an unknown person into the world?
— introduire inconnu m.*

Imperative. Depict in thy idyl all the charms of a
peindre idylle douceur f.
rural life. Expect not happiness from exter-
champêtre 2 1 attendre art. art. extérieur 2 m. pl. 1
nal objects; it is in thyself. Know the powers of thy mind
before thou write. Let us unite prudence with
avant de * écrire joindre art. f à art.
courage. Let us not descend to useless particulars.
m. descendre dans des 2 — lâcheté 1
Let us not (give offence) by an air of haughtiness. Seem
* des m. pl. paraître 2
deplaire ni gai ni sérieux * souverain pl. rendre
neither too cheerful nor too grave. Ye sovereign, make
ne 1 ni gai ni sérieux * souverain pl. rendre
the people happy. Do not despise his friendship. Sweet
dédaigner dans
Of the Regular Verbs.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

PRESENT. (that I may)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Branch 1</th>
<th>Branch 2</th>
<th>Branch 3</th>
<th>Branch 4</th>
<th>Branch 5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>render</td>
<td>please</td>
<td>appear</td>
<td>reduce</td>
<td>join</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que je rend-e</td>
<td>pl-aïse</td>
<td>par-oïse</td>
<td>rédui-se</td>
<td>joïgne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu rend-es</td>
<td>pl-aïses</td>
<td>par-oïses</td>
<td>rédui-ses</td>
<td>joïgnes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il rend-s</td>
<td>pl-aïse</td>
<td>par-oïse</td>
<td>rédui-se</td>
<td>joï-gne</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous rend-ions</td>
<td>pl-aïsions</td>
<td>par-oïsions</td>
<td>rédui-sions</td>
<td>joï-gnions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous rend-iez</td>
<td>pl-aïsies</td>
<td>par-oïsies</td>
<td>rédui-sies</td>
<td>joï-gniex</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils rend-ent</td>
<td>pl-aïsent</td>
<td>par-oïsent</td>
<td>rédui-sent</td>
<td>joï-gnent</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

PRESERVED. (that I may have)

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Branch 1</th>
<th>Branch 2</th>
<th>Branch 3</th>
<th>Branch 4</th>
<th>Branch 5</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>rendered</td>
<td>pleased</td>
<td>appeared</td>
<td>reduced</td>
<td>joined</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que j'alle rend-u</td>
<td>pl-u</td>
<td>par-u</td>
<td>rédui-t</td>
<td>joïnt</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

illusions, vain phantoms, vanish. (Keep to yourself) such

—f. —fantôme m. disparoir - taire certain

truths as may offend.

f. pl. qui peuvent offenser.

SUBJUNCTIVE PRESENT. That I may fear that cloud of en-

emies. That I should please every body, is impossible.

That he may not reply to such absurd criticism. That

répondre un si 2 critique f. 1

he may lead his pupil step by step to a perfect knowledge

conduire élève pas à connaissance f.

of the art of speaking and writing. That we may entice by an

inf.—1 pr. inf—1 réduire

enchanting style. That we may confound the arts with the

—teur 2 m. 1

sciences. That you may have the same end in view. That

but m. 2 tendre à 1

they may not depend on any body. That they may not in-

dépendre de personne

ac-

cresse our sufferings.

croître peines.

IMPERFECT. That I might not melt into tears. That

fondre en larme

I might acknowledge the truth. That he might (draw a picture)

connôitre peindre

of distressed virtue. That she might please by her accom-

*art. meilleurs 2 1

grâce
PARADIGM, OR MODEL FOR PRONOMINAL VERBS.

Se repentir | to repent.

Pronominal verbs, as was said page 93, are conjugated throughout, in each person, with a double personal pronoun, and as all their compound tenses are formed by means of the auxiliary verb être, their participle past must always agree in gender and number with the objective pronoun when it is direct, otherwise not. Their inflections all follow the conjugations to which they belong.

fulishments more than by her beauty. That we might conduct f. pl. conduire him to court. That we might affect such low art. court sentir de art. si bas 2 sentiments. That you might hear their justification. That entendre you might know your real friends. That they might (wait for) vrai attendre the opinion of sensible persons. That they might not ap- art. sensé 2 f. pl. 1 pear so scornful and vain. dédaignez f. pl. ni si f. pl.
Of the Pronominal Verbs.

In all participles past, except *absous*, *dissous*, *résous*, which are to be seen in their places, the feminine is formed by adding *e* mute to the masculine, and the plural by adding *s* to the singular, both masculine and feminine, when it does not already end with this letter, the French language not admitting a final double consonant.

As there is some difficulty in conjugating pronominal verbs, some few are here selected, which it will prove advantageous to practise.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>feminine</th>
<th>se</th>
<th>feminine</th>
<th>se</th>
<th>feminine</th>
<th>se</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>alarmer</td>
<td>s'é</td>
<td>abstenir</td>
<td>s'est</td>
<td>habituer</td>
<td>s'e</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>assoupir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>servir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>ménir</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>apercevoir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>souvenir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>connaître</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>défendre</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>prévaloir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>contraindre</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hâter</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>repaître</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>rendre</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dépêcher</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>conduire</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>éveiller</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ressentir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>embumer</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>fâcher</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>pourvoir</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>enuyer</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>reposer</td>
<td>s</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>faire</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>orienter</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>enquerir</td>
<td>s'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>promener</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>endormir</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>enquérir</td>
<td>s'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>coucher</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>mourir</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>méfier</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lever</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>perdre</td>
<td>se</td>
<td>réjouir</td>
<td>se</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>asseoir</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>évanouir</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>réjouir</td>
<td>s'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>arroger</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>applaudir</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>habiller</td>
<td>s'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>procurer</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>attribuer</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>épargner</td>
<td>s'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>visiter</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>entr'aider</td>
<td>s'</td>
<td>entendre</td>
<td>s'</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INFINITIVE.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES.</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>PRESENT.</strong></td>
<td><strong>PAST.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>se repentir</td>
<td>to repent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>se repentent</td>
<td>s'être { repenti or repenté }</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>se repentant</td>
<td>repeating</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>repenti</td>
<td>s'êtant { repenti or repenté }</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>repentis</td>
<td>repentes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>having repented</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Of the Pronominal Verbs

#### Indicative

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Simple Tenses</th>
<th>Compound Tenses</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Present</strong></td>
<td><strong>Preterit Indefinite</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I repent</td>
<td>I have repented</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je me repens</td>
<td>je me suis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu te repens</td>
<td>tu t'es</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle se repent</td>
<td>il, or elle s'est</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous nous repentons</td>
<td>nous sommes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous vous repentes</td>
<td>vous êtes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles se repentent</td>
<td>ils, or elles se sont</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Imperfect</th>
<th>Pluperfect</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>I did repent</td>
<td>I had repented</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je me repentois</td>
<td>je ne l'étais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu te repentois</td>
<td>tu n'étais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle se repentoit</td>
<td>il, or elle n'était</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous nous repentions</td>
<td>nous ne l'étions</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous vous repenties</td>
<td>vous n'êtes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles se repentoient</td>
<td>ils, or elles n'étaient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Indicative. Present

I commonly walk by d'ordinaire se promener d'art. moonlight. Dost thou not deceive thyself? He (is never clair de la lune m. se tromper * ne se happy) but (when he is doing) wrong. Do we not plaire que à faire de art. mal m. (nurse ourselves) too much? How do you do? They mean s'écoyer se porter se proposer to travel in the spring. de voyager à m.

**Preterit Indefinite.** I (have been) tolerably well for se porter assez bien depuis some time. Didst thou not lose thyself in the wood? (It s'égarer * is said) that he killed himself (out of) despair. Have we flat- On dit se tuer * de se flatter ourselves without foundation. Ladies, have you ter * fondement Mesdames, se walked this morning? Did those ladies recognise promener matin m. dame se reconnoître themselves in this portrait? * à —m.
### Of the Pronominal Verbs.

#### Simple Tenses.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Preterit Definite</th>
<th>Preterit Anterior</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je <em>me</em> <em>repentis</em></td>
<td>je <em>me</em> <em>fus</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu <em>te</em> <em>repentis</em></td>
<td>tu <em>te</em> <em>fus</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle <em>se</em> <em>repentit</em></td>
<td>il, or elle <em>se</em> <em>fut</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous <em>nous</em> <em>repentimes</em></td>
<td>nous <em>nous</em> <em>femmes</em> <em>repentis</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous <em>vous</em> <em>repentites</em></td>
<td>vous <em>vous</em> <em>filles</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles <em>se</em> <em>repeinent</em></td>
<td>ils, or elles <em>se</em> <em>furent</em></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Imperfect.

I tormented myself incessantly about the affairs of others. What thou not (laying the foundation for) more and more unhappy every day. We despaired without reason. Did yun not laugh at us? They raised themselves wastefully.

#### Pluperfect.

I had trusted myself to (very uncertain) guides. Didst thou not confide too inconsiderately in this man? Had that officer rushed rashly into this danger? We had condemned ourselves. Had you not (been engaged) in the street, but did not speak. Did you say nothing (to each other)? Did not those rash children say—

#### Preterit.

I repented but too late of having taken such a step. Want thou not well entertained yesterday evening? He suffered for his imprudence. We met in the street, but did not speak. Did you say...
Of the Pronominal Verbs.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES.</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>FUTURE ABSOLUTE.</strong></td>
<td><strong>FUTURE ANTERIOR.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I shall repent.</td>
<td>I shall have repented.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je, nous, ils, vous, serei</td>
<td>je, vous, serez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>moi, vous, serez</td>
<td>moi, vous, serez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, elle, serez</td>
<td>ils, elle, serez</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

plaid themselves for their folly?
plaudir * de sottise m.

**PRETERIT ANTERIOR.** (As soon as) I discovered that they
sought to deceive me, I was on my guard.
chercher ind-2 tromper se tenir ind-3 garde f. pl.
What didst thou, when thou saw'st thyself thus forsaken?

s as * quand se trouver * ainsi abandonné
When she recollected all the circumstances, she was quite
se souvenir de f. ind-3 toute
ashamed. When we had rejoiced sufficiently, (we parted).
honteux. se réjouir assez se séparer ind-3
When you had amused yourselves sufficiently at his expense, did
s'amuser à dépens m. pl.
you not leave him quite? When they had walked enough,
laisser ind-3 tranquille se promener
they (sat down) at the foot of a tree.
s'assirent à

**FUTURE ABSOLUTE.** I will yield if they convince me.
se rendre on convaincre
Wilt thou remember the engagement that thou makest?
se souvenir de prendre
What will not be reproach (himself for)? We shall not forget
so reprocher à lui-même s'oublier
ourselves (so far as) to (be wanting) in respect towards him.

* jusque manquer de lui
Will you employ the means I (point out) to you? Will not
se servir de que indiquer
these flowers fade?

f. se flétrir

**FUTURE ANTERIOR.** Shall I have betrayed myself? Wilt
se trahir moi-même
thou not have degraded thyself in his eyes? He will have

s'avilir * à
Of the Pronominal Verbs.

### CONDITIONAL.

#### SIMPLE TENSES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je</td>
<td>je</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>te</td>
<td>tu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle</td>
<td>il, or elle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous</td>
<td>nous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous</td>
<td>vous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles</td>
<td>ils, or elles</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(je me repentais) | (je me serois) |
(te te repentais) | (tu te serois) |
(il, or elle se repentiroit) | (il, or elle se serait) |
(nous nous repentirions) | (nous nous serions) |
(vous vous repentiriez) | (vous vous seriez) |
(ils, or elles se repentirent) | (ils, or elles se seroient) |

(been proud) of this trifling advantage.  We shall have s'ennuyer * foible avantage m.

fatigued ourselves (to no purpose). In the end, you will have se fatiguer * inutilement  à

(been undeceived). Will your children have (loved each other) se désabuser

too much?

---

#### COMPOUND TENSES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>je</td>
<td>je</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>te</td>
<td>tu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle</td>
<td>il, or elle</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous</td>
<td>nous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous</td>
<td>vous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles</td>
<td>ils, or elles</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

(je me serais) |
(te te serais) |
(il, or elle se seroit) |
(nous nous serions) |
(vous vous seriez) |
(ils, or elles se seroient) |

(should I suffer myself to) se laisser * *

(be drawn) into the party of the rebels? Wouldst thou be entraîner parti m.

(so easily) frighten? Would not the nation sub-

soi de si peu de chose 2. s'effrayer 1

—to so just a law? We should not rejoice to see the mettre 3 4 1 2 se plaisirs voir

triumph of guilt. Would you dishonour yourselves by triomphe art. crimes m. se d'honorer

such an action? Would those lords (avail themselves) of 2 1 seigneurs se preuvaient de

their birth and fortune, (in order to) hurt naissance de leurs richesses pour faire violence

our feelings.

à sentiment.

---

### PAST.

Should I not have devoted myself entirely to se dévouer * entièrement

the service of my country? (Had it not been for) thy careless-

ment sans insouci-

ness, thou wouldst certainly have (grown rich). Would this s'enrichir

pleasing hope have vanished so soon? Should we have sourc sapir m. s'évanouir
Of the Pronominal Verbs.

IMPERATIVE.

AFFIRMATIVE

Repent (thou).

REPENTS-TOI

qu'il, or \( \hat{\text{se}} \) repent

REPENTONS-NOUS

qu'ils, or \( \hat{\text{se}} \) repenient

NEGATIVE

Do not repent.

NE TE REPENS

qu'il, or \( \hat{\text{se}} \) se repente

NE NOUS REPENTONS

qu'ils, or \( \hat{\text{se}} \) se repenient

SUBJUNCTIVE.

SIMPLE TENSES.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>PRESENT.</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>que ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repente</td>
<td>que ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repenti</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>je ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repente</td>
<td>je ( \hat{\text{se}} ) sois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>tu ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repentes</td>
<td>tu ( \hat{\text{se}} ) sois</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>il, or elle ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repente</td>
<td>il, or elle ( \hat{\text{se}} ) soit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repentions</td>
<td>nous ( \hat{\text{se}} ) soyons</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vous ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repentiez</td>
<td>vous ( \hat{\text{se}} ) soyez</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ils, or elles ( \hat{\text{se}} ) repennenent</td>
<td>ils, or elles ( \hat{\text{se}} ) soient</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

degraded ourselves to such a degree? You would have

reduced yourselves to every kind of want. They

would have (been drowned), if (they had not had assistance).

se noyer on ne les avons secourus.

IMPERATIVE. O man, remember that thou art mortal. Do

not flatter thine own self (that thou wilt succeed easily). Let

us take an exact account of our actions. Let us not deceive

ourselves. Rest yourself under the shade of this tree.

not souvenirs se rendre -2 compte 1 se réduire

nous-mêmes. Se reposer \( \ast \) à ombre

Do not expose yourself rashly.

s'exposer témérairement.

SUBJUNCTIVE. PRESENT. I must rise to-morrow at

Il faut que \( \hat{\text{se}} \) lever de
Of the Pronominal Verbs.

Simple Tenses.

**Imperfect.**

That I might repent.

que
je
tu
il, or elle
nous
vous
ils, or elles

me repentisse
te repentisses
se repentit
nous repentissions
vous repentissiez
se repentissent

**Compound Tenses.**

That I might have repented.

que
je
tu
il, or elle
nous
vous
ils, or elles

me fusse
te fusses
se fût
nous fussions
vous fussiez
se fussent

**Pluperfect.**

-

Repenti,
Repentis,
Repenties,

Repentis,
Repenties,

an earlier hour. I wish that thou may'st be
better. I wish him to conduct himself better. Is it not es-
sential that we should contain ourselves? They wish that
—il
se contemps
On désirer
you should habituate yourselves early to labour,
*s’habiter
* de bonne heure art. travail
It is time that they should (have relaxation) from the fatigue
se délasser

of business.

art. f. pl.

**Preterit.** Can I have (been deceived) so grossly?

It is astonishing that thou hast determined to stay. It is
ment?
* étonnant
se décider
rester On *
not said that be interfered in this business. It will never be
dit
* se mêler de
On
believed that we have conducted ourselves so ill. It is not
croira
* se comporter
mal. On *
suspected that you have disguised yourselves so ingeniously.
soupconner
* se déguiser
adroitement
It is not feared that they have behaved ill.

**Imperfect.** They required that I should (go to bed) at ten

On exigeait
se coucher à
o'clock. They wish that thou shoul'dst walk oftener.

heure. On voulait
* se promener

Did they not wish that he should practise fencing?

On
voulait

s’exercer à faire des armes

Was it necessary that we should (make use) of this method?

==
se servir
moyen m.
CONJUGATION OF THE PASSIVE VERBS.

There is but one mode of conjugating passive verbs; it is by adding to the verb être, through all the moods and tenses, the participle past of the verb active, which then must agree in gender and number with the subject; as,

Je suis aimé, or aimée  |  I am loved  
-----|-------------------
 tu étais estimé, or estimée  |  thou wast esteemed  
 il fut chéri de son peuple  |  he was beloved by his people  
 elle fut toujours chérie  |  she was always beloved  
 mon père fut respecté  |  my father was respected  
 ma mère fut révérée  |  my mother was revered  
 nous serons loués, or louées  |  we will be praised  
 vous en serez blâmés or blâmées  |  you will be blamed for it  
 ils seraient craints et redoutés  |  they would be feared and dreaded  
 elles seraient mieux instruites  |  they would be better informed  
 afin que mes fils soient connus  |  that my sons may be known  
 je voudrais que les portes fussent ouvertes.  |  I should wish the doors were opened

Did they wish that you should complain without reason?  
 on vouloit se plaindre  
 Did they not wish them (to make more haste)?  
 on désirer ind-2 que ils se hâter davantage?  

PLUPERFECT. Would they have wished that I had revenged myself?  
 I should have wished that thou hadst shewn  
 * désirer se montrer  
 thyself more accommodating. I should have wished that this  
 * moins difficile voulu  
 painter had (been less negligent). Would you have wished that  
 peindre se négler moins voulu  
 we should have ruined ourselves in the public opinion, (in order  
 se perdre 2 f. 1 pour  
 to) satisfy your resentment? I could have wished perhaps  
 satisfaire ressentiment désirer peut-être  
 that you had applied yourselves more to your studies.  
 s'appliquer davantage  
 We could have wished that they had extricated themselves  
 * se tirer  
 more skilfully from the difficulties (in which) they (had  
 adroitement embarras où  
 involved themselves)  
 s'étoient mis.
Of the Neuter Verbs.

I have been dangerously wounded.

Thou hadst been apprised of it when he had been bitten after she had been seduced the artifice will have been discovered we should have been heard

You should have been perceived you should have been perceived

Suppose they were contradicted

Although they were recognised although they were recognised that the walls might have been destroyed that the lights might have been put out

In the following exercises upon the verbs, the tenses will now be promiscuously intermixed.

EXERCISE.

That young lady is so mild, so polite, and so kind, that she is beloved by every body. He performed with (so much) ability, that he was universally applauded. He is known by nobody. How many countries, unknown to the ancients, have been discovered by modern navigators?

CONJUGATION OF SOME NEUTER VERBS.

There are about six hundred neuter verbs in the French language, fifty of which taking the auxiliary être in their compound tenses, their participles past must agree in gender and number with the subject; as,

Je sule tombé, or tombée quand tu fus venue, or venue il était arrivé avant moi elle était déjà arrivée I have fallen when thou hadst come he was arrived before me she was already arrived
Of the Impersonal Verbs.

---

mon frère n’était pas encore parti
ma sœur était partie avant lui
vous serrez revenus, or revenues
nous serons descendus, or descended
ils seroient repartis
elles seroient reparties
que mes frères soient sortis
que mes sœurs fussent sorties

my brother had not yet set off
my sister had set off before him
we shall have returned
you shall have come down
they would have set off again
that my brothers may have gone out
that my sisters might have gone out

And so through all the compound tenses.

Exercise.

They came to see us with the greatest haste.  When did they arrive?  That estate fell to his lot.  He fell from his horse, but happily received only a slight contusion on the knee.

ne que léger  — l.  à genou m.

---

OF THE IMPERSONAL VERBS.

Observe that, in impersonal verbs, il has no relation to a substantive, as may be seen by the impossibility of substituting a noun in its place.

Impersonal Verbs.

il pleut  it rains
il neige  it snows
il gèle  it freezes
il tonne  it thunders
il éclaire  it lightens
il glace  it freezes
il dégèle  it thaws
il arrive  it happens
il sied  it is becoming
il messial  it is unbecoming

it drizzles
it snows
it freezes
it thunders
it lightens
it becomes
it occurs
it suffices
it follows that
it is proper
it is necessary
t is, or are

Exercise.

Does it rain this morning?  Did it hail.

pluvoir  main m.
Of the Impersonal Verbs.

last night? It does not snow. I thought it had thundered. Does it not lighten? Do you think it freezes?

It is a remarkable thing. It was a terrible hurricane. It is ten o'clock. It (was not my friend's fault) that it was not a contraindicated, that it thaws. It (is fit) to act so. It (was of great importance) to succeed. Would it be proper to write to your friends? It appears that he has not attended to that business.

Perhaps it (would be) better to (give up) the undertaking. It (was sufficient) to know his opinion.

**CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERB**

*Falloir, il faut, it must, it is necessary.*

**INFinitive.**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>SIMPLE TENSES</th>
<th>COMPOUND TENSES</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>PRESENT . . . falloir</td>
<td>PAST . . . avoir fallu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PASTIC. PRES. wanted</td>
<td>PAST. . . . fallu, ayant fallu</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**INDICATIVE.**

| PRESENT . . . il faut | PRETERIT IND. il a fallu  |
| IMPERFECT . . . il falloit | PLUPERFECT il avoit fallu |
| PRETERIT DEF. il fallut | PRETERIT ANT. il eut fallu    |
| FUTURE ABSOL. il faudra | FUTURE ANT. il aura fallu    |

**CONDITIONAL.**

| PRESENT . . . il faudroit | PAST . . . il auraft fallu   |

**SUBJUNCTIVE.**

| PRESENT . . . qu'il faille | PRETERIT . . . qu'il ait fallu  |
| IMPERFECT . . . qu'il fallut | PLUPERFECT . qu'il eût fallu  |

**Remark.** The English verb *must*, not being impersonal, may take any noun or pronoun for its subject; whereas the French verb *falioir*, being always imper-
Of the Impersonal Verbs

sonal, a change of construction in the translation becomes necessary, and this may be done in two different ways:

The most common method is by putting the conjunction que after il faut, il fallait, etc. then transporting the subject of the English verb must to the second verb, which is to be put in the subjunctive in French: thus, I must sell my house, il faut que je vende ma maison.

The other way is by allowing the second verb to remain in the infinitive, as in English, and substituting in the place of the personal pronoun, which is the subject of the verb must, its corresponding objective me, te, lui, nous, vous, leur, which are to be placed between il and faut, fallait, etc. as I must begin that work to-day, il me faut commencer cet ouvrage aujourd'hui.

Observe. That all expressions implying necessity, obligation, or want, may be rendered by falloir; as I want a new grammar, il me faut une nouvelle grammaire.

EXERCISE.

You must speak to him about that affair. It was necessary for him to consent to that bargain. We were obliged to (set out) immediately. Children should learn every day some thing by heart. Shall I suffer patiently such an insult? He must have been a blockhead not to understand what is requisite. Do that as it (should be). What must he have for his trouble? You are the man I want. Do not give me any more bread, I have already more than I want. I need not ask you whether you will come. I do not
Of the Impersonal Verbs.

think that it is necessary to be a conjurer to guess his motives.
Crois il sub-1 sorcier pour deviner motif
I could not suspect that I ought to ask pardon for a
pouvoir sans pronomner sub-2 inf-1 — de
faute je que commise

CONJUGATION OF THE IMPERSONAL VERB

Y avoir, there to be.

INFINITIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>y avoir</td>
<td>there to be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past</td>
<td>y avoir eu</td>
<td>there to have been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partic. Pres.</td>
<td>y ayant</td>
<td>there being</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partic. Past</td>
<td>y ayant eu</td>
<td>there having been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

INDICATIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>il y a</td>
<td>there is, or there are*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Inf. Indef.</td>
<td>il y a eu</td>
<td>there has been, or there have been*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperfect</td>
<td>il y avoit</td>
<td>there was, or there were*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pluperf.</td>
<td>il y avoit eu</td>
<td>there had been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preterit Def.</td>
<td>il y eut</td>
<td>there was, or there were*</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preterit Ant.</td>
<td>il y eut eu</td>
<td>there had been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Future Absol.</td>
<td>il y aura</td>
<td>there will be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Future Ater.</td>
<td>il y aure eu</td>
<td>there will have been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CONDITIONAL.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>il y auroit</td>
<td>there would be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Past</td>
<td>il y auroit eu</td>
<td>there would have been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

SUBJUNCTIVE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Tense</th>
<th>Form</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Present</td>
<td>qu'il y ait</td>
<td>that there may be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Preterit</td>
<td>qu'il y ait eu</td>
<td>that there may have been</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imperfect</td>
<td>qu'il y eut</td>
<td>that there might be</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pluperf.</td>
<td>qu'il y eut eu</td>
<td>that there might have been</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This verb in English is used in the plural, when followed by a substantive plural; in French it remains always in the singular.

EXERCISE.

There must be a great difference of age between these two.
l'id est — f.
OF THE IRREGULAR VERBS.

For brevity's sake we shall give only the first person of each tense, whenever all the others are formed regularly from this first person.

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION.

Aller, to go.

Part. pres. allant. Part. past, allé.
Ind. pres. vais or vas, va, allons, allez, vont.
Imperf. allois. Pret. allai.
Fut. irai. Cond. irois.
Imper. va, aille, allons, allez, allent.
Subj. pres. aille, ailles, aille, allons, alliez, allent.
Imperf: allasse.

Remark. We say almost indifferently, je suis or j'allai, j'ai été or je suis allé, j'avais été or j'étais allé, and j'aurais été or je serais allé. This verb is, in its compound tenses, conjugated with the verb être.
The imperative va takes an a, when followed by y; as vas-y, go thither: but it takes no s, when the y is followed by a verb; as va y donner ordre, go and order that matter.

Aller, when united to a personal pronoun and the word en, forms the verb s’en aller, to go away; which is conjugated like aller.

S’en aller, s’en allant, allé. Je m’en vais, tu s’en vas, il s’en va, nous nous en allons, vous vous en allez, ils s’en vont. Je m’en allais, je m’en allai, and in conversation, je m’en fis. Je m’en suis allé, je m’en irai, je m’en irais. Imperative. Va-t’en, qu’ôl s’en aille, allons-nous-en, allez-vous-en, qu’ils s’en aillent. Que je m’en aille, que je m’en allasse.

Puer, to stink, is by no means irregular, but simply defective in the preterit of the indicative, and in the imperfect of the subjunctive.

Tisser, to weave, is a verb defective, which, to form its compound tenses, borrows the participle past tissu, from the obsolete verb tisir.

Envoyer and renvoyer make in their future absolute and conditional present, j’enverrai, j’enverrois, and je renverrai, je renverrois.

EXERCISE.

Will you go this evening into the country? I am going to pay some visits, and if I be early (at liberty) I shall certainly go home. Go there with thy brother. Go and do that errand. Go there and put every thing in order. Let him go to church on holidays. By being loaded with scents, and particularly amber, (he)

* faire ind. de bonne heure 2 lîbrs q.
* mettre en ordre. Let him go to church on holidays. By art. église f. art. jour.pl. de fête, à fuse.

* chargé de odeur f.pl. sur sous pr. ambre m.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

They have woven silk and cotton together, and made a very pretty stuff. I shall send spring flowers to those ladies. I would go to Rome, if I could. We would (send back) our horses. Why do they go away so soon? My brother and sister went yesterday to Windsor. I shall not go (any more) to hunting.

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE SECOND CONJUGATION.

Bénir, to bless, is regular through all its tenses, but has two participles past; the one regular, as béné en-
tre toutes les femmes, blessed among all women; and the other irregular, when speaking of things con-
secrated by the prayers of the church. In that case we say béné, bénite; as pain bénit, hallowed bread; eau bénite, holy water.

Fleurir, to blossom, used in its proper sense, is re-
gular; but used figuratively, that is, meaning to flourish, to be in repute, honour, esteem, the participle present makes always florissant, and the third persons of the imperfect of the indicative make often florissoit, floris-
soient.

Hâir, to hate. In the present of the indicative, the three persons singular je hais, tu hais, il hait, and in the imperative the second person singular hais, are pronounced as a vowel, having the sound of e grave open, je hès, tu hès, il hêt, hès, whilst in all other forms, the letters ai form two syllables, and have each their pro-
per sound; as, nous haîssons, vous haîssez, je haîss-
sois, je haïs, je haïrai, ha-i, etc.

Gésir is a defective verb which signifies être couché, to lie. It is no longer used, except in the following expressions, gisant, git, nous gisons, ils gisent, il gisoit; and is only employed in light and familiar poetry. When preceded by ci, however, it is very properly used in monumental inscriptions: ci-git, here lies.
May the same of that good king be blessed from generation to generation. These trees blossomed twice every year.

The arts and sciences flourished at Athens in the time of Pericles. Horace and Virgil flourished under the reign of Augustus. We discovered from the top of the mountain a vast plain full of flowery meadows. The empire of the Babylonian remnant de fleurissant 2 pré m. pl. 1 — nien ans was long a flourishing one. We did not hate the grandeur; Does she sincerely hate that vain pomp and all the parade of ?

appareil. art. — L

Bouillir, to boil.

Part. pres. bouillant. Part. past. bouilli.
Ind. pres. bons, bous, bout, bouillons, bouillez, bouillant.
Imperf. bouillons. Pret. bouillis.
Fut. bouillirait. Cond. bouillirait.
Imperf. bons. Subj. pres. bouille. Imperf. bouillisse.

m. b. Ébouillir, to boil away, and rebouillir, to boil again, are conjugated in the same manner. The first is commonly used only in compound tenses, and the infinitive mood; as cette sauce est trop ébouillie, this sauce has boiled away too much.

Courir, to run.

Part. pres. courant. Part. past. couru.
Ind. pres. cours, cours, court, courons, courus, courant.
Imperf. courons. Pret. courus.
Fut. courrai. Cond. courrais.
Imp. cours. Subj. pres. courre. Imperf. courresse.

m. b. In the same manner are conjugated secourir, to run to; concourir, to concur; discurir, to discourse; encourir, to incur; parcourir, to run over; recourir, to have recourse, and secourir, to assist.
EXERCISE.

Take that water off the fire, it boils too fast. Do not let the pot (boil away) (so much). That sauce has (boiled away) (too much). Boil that meat again; it has not boiled long enough. He runs faster than I. He ran about useless all the morning. We ran at the voice of that honest man, and assisted him. (The moment) he saw us in danger, he ran to us and delivered us. By so whimsical a conduct, should we not contribute to our destruction? He discoursed so long on the immortality of the soul, and the certainty of another life, that he did not leave anything unsaid. If we (were to act) thus, we should certainly incur the displeasure of our parents. I would not have recourse to so base a method:

Will men always run after shadows?

Avoir, to have. The authors of the Dictionary of the French Academy give all the tenses of this verb, observing only, that the greater part of them are obsolete. It is now only used in the present of the infinitive avoir, and participle past avoir, in the preterit definite je aquis, tu aquis, il aquis, nous aquisimes, vous aquisites, ils aquisirent, and in the compound tenses, j’ai aquis, j’eus aquis, j’avais aquis, etc.

NB. Its derivative défaillir, to faint, is conjugated in the same manner, but it is now only used in the plural of the present, nous défaillons, in the imperfect, je défaillis, and the two preterits, je défaillis, j’ai défailli, and in the present of the infinitive.

Fuir, to fly, to run away.

Part. pres. fu: ant. Part. past, fui.
Ind. pres. fuis, fuis, fuit, fuyons, fuyez, fuient.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Imperf. fuois. Pret. fuis.
Fut. fuirai. Cond. fuirais.
Imp. fuis, fuie, fuies, fuient.
Subj. pres. fuie, fuies, fuie, fuions, fuiez, fuient.
Imperf. fuisse; not commonly used.

Conjugate in the same manner its compound s'en-
Fuir, to run away.

Mourir, to die.

Part. pres. mourant. Part. past, mort.
Ind. pres. meurs, meurs, meurt, mourons, mourez, meurent.
Imperf. mouris.
Fut. mourrai. Cond. mourris.
Imper. meurs, meure, morons, mourrez, menrent.
Subj. pres. meure, meures, meure, mourions, mouriez, meurent.
Imperf. mourisse.

Remark. Mourir in its compound tenses is conju-
gated with the verb être. When mourir takes the
form of the reflected verb, it signifies être sur le point
de mourir, to be at the point of death; in this sense
it is very seldom used, except in the present and im-
perfect of the indicative, and it has no compound
tenses.

Exercise.

He (was near) losing his life in that renencounter. He
faillir perdre * art. rencontre f.
(was near) falling into the snare which was laid for him.
faillir ind-4 donner pièce m. qu'on ait tendu * lui
His strength fails him every day. Let us have
* art. f. pl. défaillir lui art. m. pl. Donnez-nous
something to eat directly; we are fainting with fatigue and
* manger 2 vite 1 de —
hunger. I cannot meet him, he flies from me. When
pr. faim ne puis rencontrer *
we have no employ, we endeavour to fly from ourselves.
on sait * s'occuper chercher se * soi-même
Would he not avoid flatterers, if he knew all their false-
faîruit art. flatterur m. pl. ind-2 faus-
hood. He died by a (very painful) disease. She died of
sete de cruel 2 maladie f. 1 ind-4
grief (for the loss of) her son. He is dying. She was expiring
chagrin m. d'avoir perdu se mourir. se mourir
with grief, when the fear of death at last wrested
de crainte f. art. enfin arracher ind-3
her secret from her.
— m. * lui
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Quérir, to fetch, is used in this form only, and after the verbs envoyer, venir, aller, as envoyer quérir, send for; aller quérir, go and fetch. This verb is confined to familiar conversation only.

Acquérir, to acquire.

Part. pres. acquérant. Part. past. acquis.
Ind. pres. acquier, —ier, —iért, acquier-rons, —ez, acquièrent.
Imparf. acquéros. Pret. acquis.
Fut. acquerrai. Cond. acquerrois.
Imparf. acquiers, acquière, acquier-ons, —ez, acquièrent.
Subj. Pret. acquièr-e, —es, —e, acquier-ions, —iez, acquièrent.
Imparf. acquisse.

S’enquérir, to enquire, and requérir, to request, to require, are conjugated as acquérir.

Conquérir, to conquer, is conjugated in the same manner, but it is almost obsolete in all simple tenses, except the preterit definitive of the indicative, je conquis, etc. and the imperfect of the subjunctive, que je conquisse, etc. It is very much used in the compound tenses.

Ouir, to hear, is obsolete in several tenses. It is only used in the present of the infinitive ouir, and participle past oui; in the preterit definite of the indicative, j’ouis, tu ouis, il ouit, nous ouimes, etc., and the imperfect of the subjunctive, que j’ouisse, que tu ouisses, qu’il ouit, que nous ouissions, etc. Its principal use is in the compound tenses, but then it is generally accompanied by a verb; as Je l’ai or je l’avoirs oui dire, I have or I had heard it said.

Vêtir, to clothe.

Part. pres. vêtant.* Part. past. vêtu.
Ind. pres. vêts.*, vêts.*, vét, vêtuns, vêtez, vêtent.
Imparf. vêtois. Pret. vêts.
Fut. vêtrai. Cond. vêtrois.
Imparf. vêts.*, vête,* vêtuns, vêtez, vêtent.
Subj. pres. vête. Imparf. vêtisse.

This verb may be used through all its tenses, but seldom in the forms marked with an asterisk.

It is oftener used as a reflected verb, se vêtir.
n. b. Conjugate in the same manner révéîr, to invest; which is used through all its tenses, and dévéîr, to divest, which is principally used as a reflected verb, and in some forms only.

EXERCISES.

Send for the physician and follow exactly his advice. Go and fetch my cane. Every day he acquired celebrity by works calculated to fix the attention of an enlightened public. That I would acquire riches at the expense of my honesty! He had acquired by his merit a great influence over the opinions of his contemporaries. I have inquired about that man (everywhere) and have not (been able) to hear anything of him. Who has requested it of you? Sesostris, king of Egypt, conquered a great part of Asia.

The formidable empire which Alexander conquered did not last longer than his life. I have heard that important news. He dressed himself in haste and went out immediately. I wish she would dress the children with more care. If his fortune permitted him, he would clothe all the poor of the parish. Two servants invested him with his ducal mantle. He only passed for a traveller, but lately he has assumed the character of an envoy. It begins to be very warm; it is time to throw off some clothing.

Cueillir, to gather.

Part. pres. cueillant. Part. past. cueilli.
Ind. pres. cueillie. Imperf. cueillois. Pret. cueillis.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Fut. cueillerai. Cond. cuellerai.

n. b. Conjugate in the same manner accueillir, to welcome, and recueillir, to collect.

Saillir, to project, is commonly used in the two participles, saillant, and sailli; however, it is sometimes used in the following forms of the third person, il saillie, il salloit, il sailler, il salieroit, qu’il saille, qu’il saillit. But saillir, to gush out, does not belong to this branch. It is a regular verb, conjugated like finir, je saillis, tu saillis, ils saillissoient, etc. Its principal use is in the third persons.

Assaillir, to assault.

Part. pres. assaillant. Part. past, assailli.
Ind. pres. assaille. Imperf. assailloit. Pret. assaillis.
Fut. assaillerait. Cond. assaillieroit.

n. b. Tressaillir, to start, is conjugated like assaillir.

Exercise.

I will gather with pleasure some of these flowers and fruits, since you wish to have some. Do not gather these peaches before they are ripe. That is a country f. pl. avant que ne subj-1 mûr Ce pays where they neither reap corn, nor gather grapes. We où on ne recueillir ni blé ni * raisin shall collect in ancient history important and valuable recueillir 2 1 de art. — 2 précieux 3 facts. He received us in the most polite manner. Po- faut 1 accueillir de 2 manière f. 1. art. verty, misery, sickness, persecution, in a word, all f. art. f. art. maladie f. art. f. en the misfortunes in the world (have fallen upon) him, malheur m. pl. de accueillir You will give six inches to that cornice; it will voulez pouce m. pl. corniche f. f. project too much. That balcony projected too much; it * darkened the dining-room. When Moses struck obscurcir ind-2 the rock, there gushed out (of it) a spring of (fresh ind-3 rocher m. il ind-3 en source f.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

The blood gushed from his vein with impetuosity. We shall assault the enemy to-morrow in their entrenchments. Were we not overtaken by a horrible storm? At every word they said to him concerning his son, the good vieillard leaped for joy. Shall you not shudder with vieillard tressailir ind-2 de joie tressailir peur f.

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION.

Avoir, to have, of which we have given the conjugation. See p. 95.

Ravoir, to have again, is only employed in the present of the infinitive, and even that in the familiar style. To make any other use of it, is to introduce a barbarous mode of expression.

Choir, to fall, is defective, and hardly ever used but in this form, and the participle past chu.

Déchoir, to decay.

(No Part. pret.) Part. past, déchus.
Ind. pres. déchois, déchois, déchoit, déchoyons, déchoyez, déchoient.
(No Imperf.) Pret. déchus. Fut. décherrai. Cond. décherrois.
Imper. déchois, déchoie, déchoyons, déchoyez, déchoient.
Sbj. pres. déchois, déchoies, déchoies, déchoie, déchoy-ons, —ez, déchoient.
Imperf. déchusse.

Échoir, to fall to, to expire, has only the third person of the present of the indicative now in use, il échoit or échet; no imperfect; pret. j'échus; fut. j'écherrai; cond. j'écherrois; no imperative; no present of the subjunctive; imperf. que j'échusse; infinitive, échoir; part. pres. échéant; part. past. échu.

These three verbs, choir, déchoir and échoir, are conjugated with être, in their compound tenses.

Falloir, to be necessary, is an impersonal verb, of which we have given the conjugation.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

EXERCISE.

I had apartments that I liked; I will endeavor to have them again. Beware of falling. How has he fallen into poverty? Since the publication of his last work, he has much wroth. Depuis dernier fallen in the esteem of the public. If he do not alter déchoir changer de his conduct, he will decline every day in his reputation déchoir de jour en jour de -f. and credit. He has put in the lottery, and he hopes pr-pron.-m. mis à loterie that a capital prize will fall (to his share). That bill of * art. gros lot m. échoir lui lettre exchange has expired. The first term expires at Midsummer. change échoir terme m. à la Saint Jean You have drawn on me a bill of exchange; when is it payable? tirer sur-moi échoir I did not believe that I must so soon (have taken) that journey. croyois sub-2 faire voyage m. He must have sunk under the efforts of (so many) ind-4 que succomber sub-2 tant de enemies.

Mouvoir, to move.

Part. pres. mouvant. Part. past. mou.
Ind. pres. nous, vous, il, mou-ous, -ez, meuvon.
Imperf. mouvais. Pret. mus.
Fut. mus. Cond. mouvais.
Imperf. nous, meuve, mouvons, meuvez, meuvon.
Subj. pres. meuv-e, -es, -e, mouv-ous, -iez, meuvon.
Imperf. musse.

N. B. Conjugate in the same manner émouvoir, to stir up, to move, and promouvoir, to promote, and démouvoir, to make one desist.

The first, whether employed in an actual or figurative sense, is much used. The second is the proper expression in speaking of a dignity. The third, which is a law-term, is now only used in the present of the infinitive.

Pleuvoir, to rain (impersonal).

Part. prés. pleuvant. Part. past. pleuv.
Ind. pres. il pleut. Imperf. il pleuoit. Pret. il plu.
Fut. il pleuvra. Cond. il pleuvroit.
Subj. pres. qu’il pleuve. Imperf. qu’il pluoit.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

EXERCISE.

The spring which moves the whole machine is very ingenious, though very simple. It was passion which moved him to that action. Can you doubt that the soul, though it is spiritual, moves the body at pleasure? That is a man whom nothing moves. We had scarcely lost sight of land émouvant à peine perdu vue l. 3 2 art. terre l. 1 when there arose a violent tempest. We were moved que il s'émouvoir ind-2 grand temps l. with fear and pity. When the famous d'Aguesseau was de crainte l. pr. pitié l. Quand célèbre promoted to the dignity of chancellor, all France shewed chancelier art. l. en témoigner the greatest joy. That bishop well deserved, by his ind-3 f. évêque mériter ind-2 talents and by his virtues, that the king should promote him to sub-2 the dignity of primate. The people think that it rains primat sing. croit de art. frogs and insects at certain seasons. It will grenouille f. pl. pr. art. insecte m. pl. en — temps pl. not rain to-day, but I (am fearful) of its raining to- aujourd'hui craindre que * ne sub-1 morrow.

Pouvoir, to be able.

Part. pres. pouvant. Part. past, pu.
Ind. pres. puis or peut, peux, peut, pouv-ons,—ez, peuvent. Imperf. pouvoirs. Pret. pus.
Fut. pourrai. Cond. pourrois. (No Imperative).
Subj. pres. puisse. Imperf. pusse.

REMARK. Conversation and poetry admit the expression je peux; but in interrogations, je puis alone is used. Say puis-je and not peux-je.

Savoir, to know.

Part. pres. sachant. Part. past, su.
Ind. pres. sais, sais, sait, savons, savez, savent.
Imperf. sauvons. Pret. sus. Fut. saurai. Cond. saurais
Imper. sache, sache, sachons, sachez, sachent.
Subj. pres. sache. Imperf. suisse.

Seoir, to become, to befit, is not used in the infinitive, except sometimes in the participle present, we-
ant. In other moods, it is only used in the third person of the simple tenses, *il sied, ils siéent, il seyoi, il siéra, il siéroit, qu'il siée.* It is without preterit in the indicative, without imperfect in the subjunctive, and without compound tenses. But seoir, to sit, is used only in these two forms, *séant* and *sis* of the infinitive.

Asseoir, to sit.

*Part. pres.* asseyant. *Part. past.* assis.

*Ind. pres.* assièdes, assièdes, assièd, assay-**ons,**—ez,**—ent.*


*Fut. assiérai, or assayerai.* *Cond. assiéroï, or assayeroï.*

*Imper. assièdes, assayée, assay-on,**—ez,**—ent.*

*Subj. pres. asseye.* *Imperf.* assisse.

N. B. This verb is oftener used as a reflected verb, *s'asseoir,* to sit down. The compound verb *rasseoir,* meaning either to sit again, to calm, or to sit down again, is conjugated in the same manner.

**Exercise.**

When he arrived at home, he (was quite exhausted), _ind-4 with être chez lui_ n'en pouvoir ind-2 plus

The minister had (so many) people at his _levée_ that I _ministre ind-2 tant de monde à audience_ could not speak to him. Are you afraid that he will _ind-3 * 2 craigniez 1 pouvoir_ not accomplish that affair? I _know_ that he is not your _sub-1 venir à bout de_ friend, but I _know likewise_ that he is a man of probity. _Let pl. aussi * bien _them know that their pardon depends on their submission,_ grâce dépendre de _soumission_ I could wish that he _knew a little better his lessons. Let_ _désirer cond-1_ sub-2

us see if this new-fashioned gown _becomes_ you, or _voyons d'un goût nouveau 2 robe f. 1_ not. Be assured that _colours too gaudy will not become you._

The head-dress which that lady wore _became_ her very ill. _coiffure f. que porter ind-2 ind-2 but part. pres._

These colours _become_ you so well, you (would do wrong) _avoir tort cond-1_ to wear any others. _Set that child in this arm-chair and de en porter de asseoir m. fauteuil m._

take care lest he fall. I _will sit down on the top of that_ _prenez garde que ne subj-1 s'asseoir sommeil m._
Of the Irregular Verbs.

hille, whence I shall discover a prospect no less magnifi-
cienteau m. décourvrir scene l. —
cent than diversified. We (were seated) on the banks
que varié s'asseoir ind-6 bord m. pl.
of the Thames, whence we (were contemplating) myriads
Tamise f. ind-2 de art. millier
of vessels, which bring, every year, the riches of the two
vaisseau appoter art.
hemispheres.

Voir, to see.

Part. pres. voyant. Part. past. vu.
Ind. pres. vois, vois, voit, voyons, voyez, voient.
Imper. vois, voie, voyons, voyez, voient.
Subj. pres. voie, voies, voie, voyons, voyiez, voient.
Imperf. visse.

Revoir, to see again, and entrevoir, to have a glimpse
of, are conjugated in the same manner; but prévoir,
to foresee, has a difference in the future and the
conditional, where it makes je prévoirai, etc. je pré-
voirois, etc.

Pourvoir, to provide, differs likewise in some things;
it makes in the preterit definite, je pourvus, tu pourvus,
etc., in the future, je pourvoirai, etc., in the condi-
tional, je pourvoiris, etc., and in the imperfect of the
subjunctive, que je pourvoisse, etc.

Surseoir, to supersede, though a compound of seoir,
is conjugated like voir, except in the future and con-
ditional, where it makes je surseoirai, etc., je surseoirais,
etc.; its participle past is sursis.

Valoir, to be worth.

Part. pres. valant. Part. past. valu
Ind. pres. vaux, vaux, vaux, valons, valez, valent.
Imper. vaux, vaille, valons, valez. vaillent.
Subj. pres. vaille, vailles, vaille, valions,—iez, vaillent.
Imperf. valuisse.

n. B. Revaloir, to return like for like, and équiva-
loir, to be equivalent, are conjugated in the same man-
ner; but prévaloir, to prevail, makes in the present of
the subjunctive que je prévale, que tu prévales, qu'il pré-
vale, que nous prévalions, etc.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Vouloir, to be willing.

Part. pres. voulant. Part. past. voulu.
Ind. pres. veux, venx, veut, voulons, voulez, veulent.
Imperf. voulois. Pret. voulas.
Fut. voudrai. Cond. voudrais.
Subj. pres. veull-e, -es, -e, veuillons, vouillez, veuillent.
Imperf. voullusse.

N. B. This verb is sometimes employed in the imperative, veuille, veuillons, veuillez, but then its signification is different, particularly in the second person plural. It means, have the intention, the goodness, the resolution.

EXERCISE.

See the admirable order of the universe: does it not announce — 2 m. 1.
a supreme architect? Has he again seen with pleasure his — 2 artisan m. 1.
country and his friends? (Had he had a glimpse of) the dawn pays aurora
of this fine day? To finish their affairs, it would be necessary
Pour fulloir
for them to (see one another). I clearly foresaw, (from that que * ils * s'entrevoir subj-2 bien dès-lors
time), all the obstacles he would have to surmount. Would you
— m. surmonter ind-2
have the judge (put off) the execution of the sentence that
* que surseoir subj-2 arrêt
he had pronounced? I shall not put off the pursuit of that
rendu poursuite f. pl.
affair. If men do not provide (for it), God will provide for art.
y it. Would this book be good for nothing? You have not paid
valoir *
for this ground more than it is worth, (are you afraid) that it is
* terre f. f. craindre que
not worth six hundred pounds? Let us take
sub-1 livre f. pl. sterling pions de art.
arbiter. One ounce of gold is equivalent to fifteen ounces of
argent once f.
silver. Doubt not that reason and truth will prevail
at last. I can and will tell the truth. If you are
à la longue pron. dire le
willing, he will be willing too. Let us resolve to resist our
le aussi vouloir * combattre.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

passions, and we shall be sure to conquer them. (Be so good aî)

de vaincre vouloir

to lend me your grammar.

* prêter

IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE FOURTH CONJUGATION.

Branch 1. Rendre.

Résoudre, to resolve.

Part. pres. résolvant. Part. past. résolu or résous.
Ind. pres. résous, résous, résout, résolv-ons,—ez,—ent.
Imperf. résolvois. Pret. résolu.
Fut. résoudrai. Cond. résoudrois.
Imper. résous, résolve, résolv-ons,—ez,—ent.
Subj. pres. résolve. Imperf. résolasse.

N. B. This verb has two participles past, viz. résolu, when it means decided, and résous, when it means reduced into; in this last sense, it has no feminine.

Absoudre, to absolve, defective, is conjugated like résoudre; it has neither preterit definite in the indicative, nor imperfect in the subjunctive; its participle past is absous, for the masculine, and absoute, for the feminine.

Dissoudre, to dissolve, is conjugated like absoudre, has the same irregularities, and wants the same tenses.

Coudre, to sew.

Part. pres. cousant. Part. past. cousu.
Ind. pres. couds, coudu, coude, cousons, cousez, cousent.

N. B. Découdre, to unsew, and recoudre, to sew again, are conjugated in the same manner.

Mettre, to put.

Part. pres. mettant. Part. past. mis.
Ind. pres. mets, met, mettons, mettez, mettent.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

N. B. Conjugate in the same manner *admettre*, to admit; *commettre*, to commit; *compromettre*, to compromise; *démetter*, to turn out, to put out of joint; *omettre*, to omit; *permettre*, to permit; *promettre*, to promise; *remettre*, to put again, to restore; *soumettre*, to subject; *transmettre*, to transmit; and *s'entremettre*, to intermeddle.

**Exercise.**

Wood which is burned *résout* itself into art. *bois* on *brûler* ind-1 se résoudre *en* ashes and smoke. Have they *résolu* on peace or cendre f. *pr fumée f.* on *art.* *f.* *art.* war? The fog has *résolu* itself into rain. Could f. *brouillard m.* se résoudre ind-4 *en plus f.* that judge thus lightly *absout* the guilty?

*si légèremment* cond. 1 *coupable m.* pl. *art.* Strong waters *dissolvent* metals. Those drugs (were fort 2 f. pl. 1 *drolgus* 3 dissolved) (before they were put) into that medicine. My ind-4 2 avant que de les *mettre* remède m. daughter was *sewing* all day yesterday. That piece is not well ind-3 *hier m.* sewed; it must (*be sewed over again*). Unpick that lace, la *inf-1* découdre dentelle f. and sew it again very carefully. Does he set a great 2 1 avec beaucoup de *soin* mettre value upon riches? I never *admis* those principles. Has prix m. à *art.* he *committed* that fault? If he would take my advice, he would *faut f.* me *croyais* resign his charge in favour of his son. He se *démets* cond-1 de *f.* en = put his arm (out of joint) yesterday. I will se *démets* ind-3 *art bras m.* *omit* nothing that depends on me to serve you. God de *ce* dépendre ind-7 de pour frequently permits the wicked to prosper. Put *souvent* que *méchant m.* pl. *prospérer subj-1 remettre this book in its place again. Under whatever form of govern- *en =* quel que *gouvernement* you (may live), remember that your first duty *ment m. que vivies* devoir m. is to be obedient to the laws. It frequently happens that *de soumis* *arriver* fathers *transmit* to their children both their vices and their *art.*
Of the Irregular Verbs.

virtues. He has long meddled with public affairs; but his efforts have not been crowned with success.

Moudre, to grind.

Part. pres. moulant. Part. past, moulu.
Ind. pres. mouds, mouds, moud, moulons, —ez, —ent.
Cond. moudrois.
Imper. mouds, moule, moulons, moulez, moulent.
Subj. pres. moule. Imperf. moulusse.

N. B. In the same manner are conjugated émoudre, to grind (knives, razors, etc.), and remoudre, to grind again.

Prendre, to take.

Part. pres. prenant. Part. past, pris.
Ind. pres. prends, prends, prend, pren-ons, —ez, —rent.
Imper. prends, prenne, prenons, prenez, prennent.
Subj. pres. prenn-e, —es, —e, pren-ons, —iez, —ent.
Imperf. prise.

N. B. Conjugate in the same manner apprendre, to learn; comprendre, to comprehend, to understand; déprendre, to separate; désapprendre, to unlearn; entreprendre, to undertake; se méprendre, to mistake, to be deceived; reprendre, to take again, to reply; and surprendre, to surprise.

Rompre, to break.

Part. pres. rompant. Part. past, rompu.
Ind. pres. romps, romps, rompt, romps-ons, —ez, —ent.
Imperf. rompais. Pret. rompis.
Fut. romprai. Cond. romprois.
Imper. romps, rompe, rompons, rompez, rompent.
Subj. pres. rompe. Imperf. rompisse.

N. B. In the same manner are conjugated corrompre, to corrupt, and interrompre, to interrupt.

EXERCISE.

I took great pains; but, at last, I ground all the coffee.

Grind those razors with care. Those knives (are just)

ind-3 beaucoup de sing. enfin café m.
rasoir m. couleau m. venir d'être
ground. This grain is not sufficiently ground, it should be *falloir ind-1 le
aux

ground again. I wish that you may take courage. What news

vouloir

have you learnt? Philosophy comprehends logic,

inf-1

f. pl. art.

art. logique f. art.

ethics, physics, and metaphysics. It is (with difficulty)

morale f. art. physique f. art. métaphysique f. ce
difficilement

that he divests himself of his opinions. He has forgotten all
que

déapprendre

that he knew. I fear you will undertake a task above
ce que

ind-2

que

ne subj-1
tâche f. ou dessus de

your strength. Could he have been mistaken so grossly? I

f. pl.

* cond-2
grossièrement

réproved him continually for his faults, but (to no purpose.)

reprendre ind-2

sans cesse de

defauts

insulement

We surprised the enemy, and cut them in pieces. In the

ind-3

taille en

à

middle of the road the axletree of our carriage broke.

chemin

essieu m.
carrosse se rompre art.

Bad company corrupts the minds of young people. Why do

f. pl.

gens

Pourquoi

you interrupt your brother, when you see him busy?

quand

occupé

Suivre, to follow.

Part. pres. suivant. Part. past, suivi.

Ind. pres. suis, suis, m. suis, suivez, suivez, suivez.


Imper. suis, suive, suivons, suivez, suivent.

Subj. pres. suive. Imperf. suivisse.

N. B. S'ensuivre, to ensue, only used in the third

person singular and plural of every tense; and poursuivre, to pursue; are conjugated in the same manner.

Vaincre, to conquer, to vanquish.

Part. pres. vainquant. Part. past, vaincu.


Imperf. vainquions. Pret. vainquis.

Fut. vaincrai. Cond. vaincrons.

Imper. vaincre, * vainque, vainquons, * vainqu-ez, -ent.

Subj. pres. vainque. Imperf. vainquisse.

N. B. All the persons of this verb, marked with an

asterisk, are very little used. Conjugate in the same

manner convaincre, to convince; which is used in all

its tenses and persons.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Battre, to beat.

Part. pres. battant. Part. past. battu.
Ind. pres. bats, bat, batte, battons, battez, battent.

Conjugate in the same manner, abattre, to pull down; combattre, to fight; s'ébattre, to rejoice (an old word, almost out of use); and rebattre, to beat again, to repeat tediously.

étre, to be, which has already been conjugated at length.

Vivre, to live.

Part. pres. vivant. Part. past. vécu.
Ind. pres. vis, vü, viv, vivons, vivez, vivent.

m. b. Conjugate in the same manner revivre, to revive; and survivre, to survive.

EXERCISE.

(For a long while) we followed that method, which was long-temps 2 ind-3 1 f. 2 only calculated to mislead us. What (is the consequence?) See ne que propre égarer Que s'ensuive the errors which have sprung from that proposition, s'ensuivre ind-4 f. pl. —f. which appeared so true. We pursued our course, when some ind-2 suivre ind-2 chemin lorsque de art. cries which came from the midst of the forest excited cri m. pl. * sortis fond m. forêt f. porter ind-3 terror into our souls. The Greeks vanquished the Persians art. effroi m. Grec Perse at Marathon, Salamis, Platea, and Mycale. I have, at à pr. Salamine, pr. Platée pr. last, convinced him, by such powerful reasons, of the de art. si fort 2 f. pl. 1 enormity of his fault, that I (have no doubt) but he will = faute f. ne douter nullement que ne repair it. It is during winter that they thrash the réparer subj-1 C'est pendant art. on battre corn in cold countries. The enemy was so completely froid : art. pays m. pl. 1 pl. —ment beaten in that engagement, that he was forced to abandon thirty rencontre f. pl. do
Of the Irregular Verbs.

leagues of the country. The cannon (beat down) the tower.
lieue f. * pays canon abattre ind-3 tourf. They were fighting with unexampled fury, when a
* ind-2 un sans exemple 2 acharnement m. 1 panic terror made them take flight, and dispersed them
panique 2 = f. 1 ind-3 leur art. suits f.
in an instant. Beat these mattresses again. Happy those who
m. rebaître matelas m. pl. *
live in solitude! Long live that good king?
art. retraite f. que f. long-temps 4 mhj-1 3
He did not long survive a person who was so dear to him.
ind-3 et f. art.
Fathers live again in their children. He was in a strange dejection of mind; the news which he has received has
ment f. pl. f. pl. ont fait revived him.
inf-1

Branch II: Plaire.

Braire, to bray, a verb defective, is only used in the present of the infinitive; in the third persons of the present, and the future of the indicative, il brait, ils braient, il braire, ils brairont; and the present of the conditional, il brairoit, ils brairoient. However it may be used with propriety in the other persons, when a comparison with an ass requires it.

Faire, to do, to make.

Part. pres. faisant. Part. past, fait.
Ind. pres. fais, fait, faisions, faitez, font.
Imper. fasse, fassiez, fassions, fassiez, fassent.
Subj. pres. fasse. Imperf. fasse.

n. b. In the same manner are conjugated contre-
faire, to counterfeit, to mimic; défaire, to undo; re-
faire, to do again; satisfaire, to satisfy; surfaire, to
exact, to ask too much; and redéfaire, to undo again.
These four verbs, forfaire, to trespass; malfaire, to do
ill; méfaire, to misdo; and parfaire, to perfect; are
only used in this form, and the participle past, forfait,
malfaît, méfait and parfait.

Traire, to milk (defective).

Part. pres. trayant. Part. past, trait.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Ind. pres. trais, trais, trait, traiens, traye, traient.
Imperf. traiens. (No pret.) Fut. trairai. Cond. trairent.
Imper. trais, traye, traiens, trayez, traient.
Subj. pres. traye. (No imper.)

N. b. Conjugate in the same manner attraire, to allure; abstraire, to abstract, used only in this form, the participle past, the present and the future of the indicative, and the present of the conditional; distraire, to divert from; extraire, to extract; renouer, to fine-draw; retraire, to redeem; soustraire, to subtract, to take from. All these verbs are principally used in the compound tenses; though some of them may be used in the simple tenses which they have.

Exercise.

What will you have him do? Do not make (so much) noise. Do they never exact? That woman mimicked all the persons whom she had seen: that levity rendered her odious. It was with difficulty he (dissuaded himself) of the false opinions which had been given him in his infancy. Could it be possible that we should not again make a journey to Paris?

Rome, and Naples? He says that you have offended him, and that, if you do not satisfy him quickly, he will find means to satisfy himself. Every night she milked her sheep, which gave her a great quantity of wholesome milk.

Have you milked your goats? Are the cows milked? Salt is good to entice pigeons. You will never know the nature of bodies, if you abstract not their accessory qualities from those which are inherent (in them). The least thing (diverts his attention). Will you not extract that charming
Of the Irregular Verbs.

passage? Have you dairied your gown? Should be not redeem rentrare
that land? What! would you have me screen those Quoi- ind-1 * que je soustraire sub-1
guilty persons from the rigour of the laws? coupable m. pl. * a rigueur f.

BRANCH III. Paroitre,

Naitre, to be born.

Part. pres. naissant. Part. past. né.
Ind. pres. nais, naïse, naït, naissen, naissiez, naissent.
Imper. nais, Subj. pres. naâse. Imperf naïssisse.

This verb is conjugated in its compound tenses with être.

Reparaître, to be born again, is conjugated in the same manner: but it has no participle past, and, consequently, no compound tenses.

Paire, to graze (defective).

Part. pres. paissant. Part. past. païs.
Ind. pres. pais, païs, paït, païssiez, païssent.
Imper. païs, Subj. pres. païsse. (No Imperf.)

N. B. Repaire, to feed, to bait, is conjugated in the same manner, but it has all its tenses. It makes, in the preterit definite of the indicative, je repus, etc.; and in the imperfect of the subjunctive, que je repusse, etc.

EXERCISE.

Was not Virgil born at Mantua? It is from that poisoned ind-3 Mantoue Ce empoisonné 2
source that have arisen all the cruel wars that have devastated f. 1 que naitre f. pl. f. pl. désolé
the universe. The fable says, that as soon as Hercules had f. dit aussitôt que Hercule à m,
(cut off) one of the heads of the hydra, others couper tête f. pl. hydre f. d'autres 2 il
sprang up. While their united flocks en renaitre ind-2 1 tandis que réuni 2 troupeau m. pl. 1
fed on the tender and flowery grass, they sung paître ind-2 * 2 fleuri 3 herbe f. 1 chanter ind-2
under the shade of a tree the sweets of a rural life. d'ombre douceur f. pl. champêtre 3 f.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Your horses have not fed to-day; you must have
repasit d'aujourd'hui * il * faire
them fed. That is a man who thirsts - (after nothing
inf-1 ce
but blood and slaughter.
que l * pr. carnage m.

BRANCH IV. Réduire.

Bruire, to roar, is defective, being only used in this
form; in the present, bruyant, which is oftener used
as a mere adjective, des flots bruyans; and in the third
person of the imperfect of the indicative, il bruyait,
ils bruyaient. Luire, reluire, to shine, to glitter; are
only irregular in the participle past; lui, relui, these
two verbs have neither the preterit definite, nor the
imperfect of the subjunctive, at least in use.

Nuire, to hurt, has the same irregularity; its parti-
ciple past is nui, but it has all the tenses.

Confire, to pickle.

Part. pres. consisant. Part. past. consis.
Ind. pres. conf-is,-is,-it—isons,—isem,—isent.
Imperf. confisos. Pret. consis.
Fut. confirai. Cond. confirois.

Its derivative déconfise, to discomfit, to rout, is now
almost obsolete.

Circconcrire, to circumcise; and suffire, to suffice;
are conjugated like confire, except in the participle past,
where they make circconcis and suffi.

EXERCISE.

The thunder which roared from afar, anunciare m. bruire ind-2 dans art. lointain m.
nounced a dreadful storm. They heard roar the waves
ind-2 terrible 2 orage m. 1 on ind-2 inf-1 flot m. pl.
of an agitated sea. That street is too noisy for those who
agit 2 mer f. 1 rue bruyant
love retirement and study. I (have a glimpse of) some-
art. retraite f. art. entrevoir quelque
thing that shines through those trees. A ray of hope
chose au travers de rayon m.
shone upon us in the midst of the misfortunes which over-
ind-4 * a mi lieu malheur m. pl. ac-
whelmed us. Every thing is well rubbed in that house: every
cabler ind-2 frotte
Of the Irregular Verbs.

thing shines, even the floor. Would be not have hurt you in that affair? Jesus-Christ was circumcised eight days after his birth. Will you preserve these peaches with sugar, with honey, or with brandy? Have you pickled cucumbers, parsley, and sea-fennel? If he loses his lawsuit, all his property will not suffice.

bien

Dire, to say.

Part. pres. disant. Part. past. dit.

Ind. pres. dis, dis, dit, discous, dites, disent.


Imper. dis, dis, discous, dites, disent.

Subj. pres. disce. Imperf. disse.

n. b. Conjugate redire, to say again, in the same manner; also the other compounds of dire, viz. dédire, to unsay; contredire, to contradict; interdire, to forbid; médire, to slander; and prédire, to foretell; except that the second person plural of the present of the indicative and of the imperative is regular: vous dédissez, contredisez, interdisez, médisez, prédisez. Maudire, to curse, varies by taking two s in the following forms; nous maudissons, vous maudissez, ils maudissent; je maudissois; qu'il maudissez: maudissons, maudissez, qu'ils maudissent; que je maudisse, que tu maudisses, etc., maudissant.

Écrire, to write.

Part. pres. écrivant. Part. past. écrit.

Ind. pres écrits, écriis, écrit, écrivons, -ez, -ent.

Imperf. ecrivois. Pret. écrivis.

Fut. écrivons. Cond. écrivions.


n. b. Conjugate in the same manner circonscrire, to circumscribe; décrire, to describe; inscrire, to inscribe; prescrire, to prescribe; proscrire, to proscribe; récrire, to write again; souscrire, to subscribe; transcrire, to transcribe.

Lire, to read.

Part. pres. lisant. Part. past. lu.
Of the Irregular Verbs.

Ind. pres. In, lit. ibons, ibez, ibent.

II. b. Conjugate in the same manner relire, to read over again, and dîre, to elect.

Rire, to laugh.
Part. pres. riant. Part. past, ri.
Ind. pres. ris, rii, rit, rions, riez, rient.
Imp. ris. Subj. pres. rie. Imperf. risse.

II. b. Sourire, to smile is conjugated in the same manner.

Fârir, to cry, is defective, having only the present of the infinitive, and the participle past, frît; in the indicative, the three persons singular of the present tense, je fris, tu fris, il frît; all the persons of the future and the conditional, je frirai, nous frirons, tu frirais, vous fririez, etc.; and in the imperative, the second person singular, fris: to supply the place of the other forms, we make use of the verb faire, and the infinitive frîre; as, faisant frîre, je faisais frîre, etc. This verb is used through all its compound tenses.

Exercise.
Always speak the truth, but with discretion. Never contradict.

dîre art. f.

(any one) in public. You thought you were serving me in personne en penser ind. 4 * * inf. 1 en speaking thus: well, (let it be so); you shall not be con-prâler ainsi eh bien soit en dé-tradicted. What! would you forbid him a communication dire quoi! * interdire —f. with his friends? That woman who slandered every one ind. 2 do soon lost all kind of respect. You had foretold that ind. 3 espèce f. considération event. Let us curse no one; let us remember that our law ne personne se rappeler forbids us to curse even those who persecute us. Write every dé enviire* de persécution tout art, day the reflections which you make on the books which you pl.
read. Did he not read that interesting history with (a great 2 1
Of the Irregular Verbs.

deal) of pleasure? God is an infinite being who is circum-
scribe neither by time nor place. Shall you not de-
scribe in that episode the dreadful tempest which assailed your
— m. horrible f. 1
hero? Have those soles and whitings fried. If you wish
* faire 1 — pron. marlan. 3 inf.-1 2 vouloir
to form your taste, read over and over, unceasingly, the
* retirer
ancients. He was elected by a great majority of voices. We
* sans cesse
have laughed heartily and have resolved to (go on). He
* de bon cœur nous répondre nous de continuer
did not answer him (any thing); but he smiled at him,
* répondre ind-3 lui rien ind-3 * lui
as a sign of approbation, in the kindest manner.
* en*
* de gracieux 2 sir m. 1.

Boire, to drink.

Part. pres. buvant. Part. past, bu.
Ind. pres. bois, bois, boit, buvons, buvez, boivent.
Imper. bois, boire, buvons, buvez, boivent.
Subj. pres. boive, —es, —e, bavions, buvies, boivent.
Imperf. busse.

n. b. Conjugate in the same manner reboire, to drink again; and emboire, to imbibe, to soak in. This
last is a technical term, principally employed in paint-
ing.

Clorre, to close, becomes obsolete, except in the
three persons singular of the present of the indicative,
je clos, tu clos, il clot; in the future, je clorrai, tu clor-
as, etc. and the conditional, je clorois, tu clorois,
etc. and in the second person singular of the impera-
tive, clos.

Déclorre, to unclose; enclorre, to enclose; and for-
clore, to debar, are defective in the same tenses as
clore. The two former have the same tenses as
clore; but the third, which is a term of law, is sel-
dom employed, except in the present of the infinitive
and in the participle past.
Écloré, to be hatched, to blow like a flower, is defective; it has in the infinitive only the present; and the participle past, éclos; in the indicative the two third persons of the present, il éclot, ils éclosent; of the future, il éclora, ils écloront; and of the conditional, il éclaroit, ils écloroinent; and in the subjunctive the two third persons, qu’il éclose, qu’ils éclosent: the compound tenses which are much used are formed with être.

Conclure, to conclude.

Part. pres. concluant. Part. past, conclu.
Ind. pres. conclus, conclus, conclut, conclu-ons, —es, —ent.
Imperf. conclusoïs. Pret. conclus.
Fut. conclusrai. Cond. conclusois.

N. B. Exclure, to exclude, is conjugated like conclure, except that the participle past is exclu, or exclulus.

Croire, to believe.

Part pres. croyant. Part. past, cru.
Ind. pres. crois, crois, croit, croyons, croyez, croient.
Imper. crois, croie, croyons, croyez, croient.
Subj pres. croie, croies, croie, croyions, croyies, croient.
Imperf. croisse.

Its derivative accroître is only used in the present of the infinitive with the verb faire, when it signifies faire croire ce qui n’est pas, to induce a belief of what is not.

EXERCISE.

Sated under the shade of palm-trees, they were milking Assis à art. palmier pl. * ind-2 their goats and ewes, and merrily drinking chèvre f. pl. prom. brebis f. pl. avec jolie 2 ind-2.1 that nectar, which (was renewed) every day. Should they se renouveler ind-2 tout art. pl. not have drunk with ice? This window does not shut well; cond-2 à art. f. f.

when you have made some alterations (in it) it will shut better.

ind-3 réparation f. pl. y à mieux.
Of the Irregular Verbs. 179

He had scarcely closed his eyes, when the noise which they made at his door awoke him. Have they not enclosed the suburbs within the city? Will you enclose your park with a wall, or a hedge? Put the eggs of those silk-worms in the sun, that they may hatch. Those flowers just blown, spread the sweetest fragrance. When did they conclude this treaty? His enemies managed so well, that he was unanimously excluded from the company. Did you think me capable of so black an act? He possesses some kind of knowledge, but (not so much as he thinks).

savoir il en faire trop accroître.

OBSERVATIONS

UPON THE FOLLOWING TABLES.

The following tables, which exhibit at one view all the primitive tenses, both of the regular and irregular verbs, and most of the defective, with references to the pages, where the other tenses are to be found, will, it is presumed, prove useful to those who will consult them.
### Table of the Primitive Tenses of the Four Regular Conjugations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>INFIN.</th>
<th>PARTICIPLES</th>
<th>INDICATIVE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PRESENT.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### First Conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verbs</th>
<th>Infinitive</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Je parle</th>
<th>Je parle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Parler</td>
<td>Parlant</td>
<td></td>
<td>Parlé</td>
<td>Je parle</td>
<td>Je parle</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Second Conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verbs</th>
<th>Infinitive</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Je parle</th>
<th>Je parle</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Punir</td>
<td>Punissant</td>
<td>Punir</td>
<td>Je punis</td>
<td>Je punis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sensir</td>
<td>Sensant</td>
<td>Sensé</td>
<td>Je sens</td>
<td>Je sens</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mêner</td>
<td>Mênant</td>
<td>Mênti</td>
<td>Je mènes</td>
<td>Je mèntis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bi répondre</td>
<td>Bi répondant</td>
<td>Bi répondi</td>
<td>Je me réponds</td>
<td>Je me répondis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Partir</td>
<td>Partant</td>
<td>Parti</td>
<td>Je pars</td>
<td>Je partis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sortir</td>
<td>Sortant</td>
<td>Sorti</td>
<td>Je sors</td>
<td>Je sortis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dormir</td>
<td>Dormant</td>
<td>Dormi</td>
<td>Je dors</td>
<td>Je dormis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Servir</td>
<td>Servant</td>
<td>Servi</td>
<td>Je sers</td>
<td>Je servis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ouvrir</td>
<td>Ouvrant</td>
<td>Ouvri</td>
<td>Je ouvre</td>
<td>J’ouvre</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Offrir</td>
<td>Offrant</td>
<td>Offri</td>
<td>Je offre</td>
<td>J’offre</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Souffrir</td>
<td>Souffrant</td>
<td>Souffri</td>
<td>Je souffre</td>
<td>Je souffris</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tenir</td>
<td>Tenant</td>
<td>Teni</td>
<td>Je tiens</td>
<td>Je tins</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Venir</td>
<td>Venant</td>
<td>Venu</td>
<td>Je viens</td>
<td>Je viens</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Third Conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verbs</th>
<th>Infinitive</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Je reçois</th>
<th>Je reçois</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Recevoir</td>
<td>Recevant</td>
<td>Recev</td>
<td>Je reçois</td>
<td>Je reçois</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Devoir</td>
<td>Devant</td>
<td>Devi</td>
<td>Je dois</td>
<td>Je dus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Fourth Conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Verbs</th>
<th>Infinitive</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Present</th>
<th>Past</th>
<th>Je répands</th>
<th>Je répands</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Répandre</td>
<td>Répandant</td>
<td>Répandu</td>
<td>Je répands</td>
<td>Je répands</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rendre</td>
<td>Rendant</td>
<td>Rendu</td>
<td>Je rends</td>
<td>Je rends</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fondre</td>
<td>Fondant</td>
<td>Fondo</td>
<td>Je fondo</td>
<td>Je fondo</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Répondre</td>
<td>Répondant</td>
<td>Répondu</td>
<td>Je réponds</td>
<td>Je réponds</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tondre</td>
<td>Tondant</td>
<td>Tondu</td>
<td>Je tonds</td>
<td>Je tondis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Perdre</td>
<td>Perdant</td>
<td>Perdu</td>
<td>Je perdi</td>
<td>Je perdis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mordre</td>
<td>Mordant</td>
<td>Mordu</td>
<td>Je mordi</td>
<td>Je mordis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Toirdre</td>
<td>Toirdant</td>
<td>Toirdu</td>
<td>Je toirdi</td>
<td>Je toirdis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Plaire</td>
<td>Plaisant</td>
<td>Plu</td>
<td>Je plais</td>
<td>Je plus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Taiir</td>
<td>Taiant</td>
<td>Tai</td>
<td>Je tai</td>
<td>Je tus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paroitre</td>
<td>Paroissant</td>
<td>Paru</td>
<td>Je parois</td>
<td>Je parus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Croître</td>
<td>Croissant</td>
<td>Cru</td>
<td>Je crois</td>
<td>Je crus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Connoître</td>
<td>Connoissant</td>
<td>Connu</td>
<td>Je connais</td>
<td>Je connas</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repaire</td>
<td>Repaissant</td>
<td>Repu</td>
<td>Je repais</td>
<td>Je repus</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Réduire</td>
<td>Réduisant</td>
<td>Réduit</td>
<td>Je réduit</td>
<td>Je réduis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Instruire</td>
<td>Instruisant</td>
<td>Instruit</td>
<td>J’instrui</td>
<td>J’instruis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Craindre</td>
<td>Craignant</td>
<td>Crain</td>
<td>Je crains</td>
<td>Je craignis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Peindre</td>
<td>Peignant</td>
<td>Peint</td>
<td>Je peins</td>
<td>Je peignis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joindre</td>
<td>Joignant</td>
<td>Joint</td>
<td>Je joins</td>
<td>Je joignis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Primitive Tenses of the Irregular with Some Defective Verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Infinitive</th>
<th>Present Participle</th>
<th>Indicative Present</th>
<th>Indicative Future</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>Aller</strong></td>
<td>Allant</td>
<td>Allé</td>
<td>Je vais</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Second Conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Fleurir</th>
<th>Fleurissant</th>
<th>Fleur</th>
<th>Je fleurs</th>
<th>Je fleuris</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Hair</td>
<td>Haisant</td>
<td>Haïs</td>
<td>Je hais</td>
<td>Je haïs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gésir*</td>
<td>Gisant</td>
<td>Il git</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bouillir</td>
<td>Bouillant</td>
<td>Bouilli</td>
<td>Je bouïs</td>
<td>Je bouillir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ébouillir</td>
<td>Ébouillant</td>
<td>Ébouilli</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Courir</td>
<td>Courant</td>
<td>Couru</td>
<td>Je cours</td>
<td>Je couru</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faillir</td>
<td>Faillant*</td>
<td>Failli</td>
<td>Je failli*</td>
<td>Je faillir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Défailir</td>
<td>Défailant</td>
<td>Défaili</td>
<td>Nous défailons</td>
<td>Je défailir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fuir</td>
<td>Payant</td>
<td>Fui</td>
<td>Je fuis</td>
<td>Je fuis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mourir</td>
<td>Mourant</td>
<td>Mort</td>
<td>Je meurs</td>
<td>Je mourus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Acquérir</td>
<td>Acquérant</td>
<td>Acquis</td>
<td>J' acquiers</td>
<td>J' acquis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conquérir</td>
<td>Conquérant</td>
<td>Conquis</td>
<td>Je conquiers</td>
<td>Je conquis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Oirr</td>
<td>Oyant*</td>
<td>Oui</td>
<td>J' oïr</td>
<td>J' oïs</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vêtir</td>
<td>Vêtant</td>
<td>Vêtu</td>
<td>Je vêts</td>
<td>Je vêts</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rebêtir</td>
<td>Rebêtant</td>
<td>Rebêtu</td>
<td>Je rebêts</td>
<td>Je rebêts</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cueillir</td>
<td>Cueillant</td>
<td>Cueilli</td>
<td>Je cueille</td>
<td>Je cueillis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sailleir</td>
<td>Sailant</td>
<td>Saille</td>
<td>Il saille</td>
<td>Il saillit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tressailleir</td>
<td>Tressailant</td>
<td>Tressaille</td>
<td>Je tressaille</td>
<td>Je tressailis</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

#### Third Conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Avoir</th>
<th>Ayant</th>
<th>En</th>
<th>J' ai</th>
<th>J' eus</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ravoir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Choisir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Déchoir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Échoir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Falloir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mounoir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Promonoir</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pleuvoir</td>
<td>Pleuvant</td>
<td>Plu</td>
<td>Il pleut</td>
<td>Il plût</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pouveir</td>
<td></td>
<td>Pu</td>
<td>Je puis</td>
<td>Je pus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Savoir</td>
<td>Sachant</td>
<td>Su</td>
<td>Je sais</td>
<td>Je sus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sicir*</td>
<td>Seyant</td>
<td>Si</td>
<td>Il sied</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Senir*</td>
<td>Sianant</td>
<td>Sis</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Asseoir</td>
<td>Asseyant</td>
<td>Assis</td>
<td>J' assis</td>
<td>J' assis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surseoir</td>
<td>Suris</td>
<td>Je suris</td>
<td>Je suris</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Voir</td>
<td>Voyant</td>
<td>Vu</td>
<td>Je vois</td>
<td>Je vis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prévoir</td>
<td>Prévoyant</td>
<td>Prévu</td>
<td>Je prévois</td>
<td>Je prévis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pourvoir</td>
<td>Pourvoyant</td>
<td>Pourvu</td>
<td>Je pourvois</td>
<td>Je pourvis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Valoir</td>
<td>Valant</td>
<td>Valu</td>
<td>Je vaut</td>
<td>Je valu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vouloir</td>
<td>Voulant</td>
<td>Voulu</td>
<td>Je veux</td>
<td>Je voulus</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**N. B.** The forms marked with an asterisk are obsolete.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>INFIN.</th>
<th>PARTICIPLES.</th>
<th>INDICATIVE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>PRESENT.</td>
<td>PAST.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Résoudre</td>
<td>Résolvant</td>
<td>Résolu, résolu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Absoudre</td>
<td>Absolvant</td>
<td>Absous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dissoudre</td>
<td>Dissolvant</td>
<td>Dissous</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contre</td>
<td>Cousant</td>
<td>Cousu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mettre</td>
<td>Mettant</td>
<td>Mis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mourir</td>
<td>Mouulant</td>
<td>Moulu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Prendre</td>
<td>Prénant</td>
<td>Pris</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rompre</td>
<td>Rompant</td>
<td>Rompu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suivre</td>
<td>Suivant</td>
<td>Suivi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S'ensuivre</td>
<td>S'ensuivant</td>
<td>S'ensuivi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vaincre</td>
<td>Vainquant</td>
<td>Vaincu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Battre</td>
<td>Battant</td>
<td>Battu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Etre</td>
<td>Etant</td>
<td>Étendu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vivre</td>
<td>Vivant</td>
<td>Vécu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Braire</td>
<td>Faisant</td>
<td>Fait</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faire</td>
<td>Faisant</td>
<td>Fait</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Traire</td>
<td>Travant</td>
<td>Trait</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Naitre</td>
<td>Naissant</td>
<td>Né</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Renaitre</td>
<td>Renaissant</td>
<td>Renais</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Paltrre</td>
<td>Palissant</td>
<td>Pu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Bruire</td>
<td>Bruyant</td>
<td>Bruit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Luire</td>
<td>Louisant</td>
<td>Lui</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nuire</td>
<td>Nuisant</td>
<td>Nul</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Contre</td>
<td>Confiant</td>
<td>Confie</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Suffire</td>
<td>Suffixant</td>
<td>Suffit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Circire</td>
<td>Circissant</td>
<td>Circèce</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Direc</td>
<td>Direct</td>
<td>Dit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Médire</td>
<td>Médiat</td>
<td>Médit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vaudire</td>
<td>Vaudissant</td>
<td>Vaudit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Errire</td>
<td>Ecrivant</td>
<td>Ecrit</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Lire</td>
<td>Lisant</td>
<td>Lu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rire</td>
<td>Riant</td>
<td>Rir</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frier</td>
<td>Frisant</td>
<td>Fris</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Boire</td>
<td>Buissant</td>
<td>Bu</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Clare, claire</td>
<td>Clos</td>
<td>Clos</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Conculre</td>
<td>Conculant</td>
<td>Conclus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Exculre</td>
<td>Exculvant</td>
<td>Exclus, exclus</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Croire</td>
<td>Croyant</td>
<td>Cru</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

N. B. The derivatives, which are not in this Table, will be found with the primitives, to which we have given references.
Of the Prepositions.

CHAP. VI.

OF THE PREPOSITIONS.

Prepositions, which are so called, from being prefixed to the nouns, which they govern, serve to connect words with one another, and to shew the relation between them. Thus, in this phrase, le fruit de l'arbre, the fruit of the tree, de expresses the relation between fruit and arbre. Likewise in this, utile à l'homme useful to man; à forms the relation between the noun homme and the adjective utile. De and à are prepositions, and the word, to which they are prefixed, is called their regimen.

There are different kinds of prepositions.

Some are used—to denote place, as,
Chez. Il est chez lui, he is at home.
Dans. Il se promène dans le jardin, he is walking in the garden.
Devant. Il est toujours devant mes yeux, he is always before my eyes.
Derrière. Il ne regarde jamais derrière lui, he never looks behind him.
Parmi. Que de fous parmi les hommes! how many fools among men!
Sous. La taupe vit sous terre, the mole lives under ground.
Sur. Il a le chapeau sur la tête, he has his hat on (his head).
Vers. L'aimant se tourne vers le nord, the lodestone points towards the north.

EXERCISE.

We find less real happiness in an elevated condition than in a middling state. One is never truly prosperous but at a moyen 2 1 véritablement tranquille que home. He walked before me to serve me as a guide. De 2 pour

There was a delightful grave behind his house. Among them 2 bouquet m. 1
Of the Prepositions.

(so many) different nations, there is not one that has not
tent de 2 1 y en avoir subj-1
a religious worship. Nature displays her riches with
2 culte m. 1 art. déployer
magnificence under the torrid zone. Eternal snows
torride 3 f. 1 de art. 3 5 f. pl. 4
(are to be seen) on the summit of the Alps. Towards
on 1 voir ind-1 2 sommet
the north, nature presents a gloomy and wild as-
art.
triste 2 sauvage 3 as-
pect.
pect m. 1.

Some—to mark order,
Avant. La nouvelle est arrivée avant le courrier, the
news is come before the courier.
Après. Il est trop vain pour marcher après les autres;
he is too proud to walk after other people.
Entre. Elle a son enfant entre les bras, she holds her
child in (for between) her arms.
Depuis. Depuis la création jusqu'à nous, from the
creation to the present time.
Dès. Dès son enfance, from his infancy; dès sa source,
from its source.
Some—to denote union, as,
Avec. Il faut savoir avec qui on se lie, we ought to
know with whom we associate.

EXERCISE.

We (were up) before day-light, (in order to) enjoy
se lever ind-6 art. * pour
the magnificent spectacle of the rising sun. After such
de magnifique 2 — m. 1 levant 2 1 de si
great faults, it only remained for us to repair
faute f. pl. ne rester ind-2 * que réparer
them (as well as we could). Between those two mountains is
de notre mieux
a deep hollow road. Many very astro-
profond 3 et creux 2 chemin m. 1 * de art. 2 4
nishing events (have taken place) within these ten years.
3 il se passer ind-4 1 depuis *
From my earliest infancy I have had an abhorrence of
art. tendre * horreur art.
lying.
mensonge m.
Of the Propositions.

Durant. Durant la guerre, during the war; durant l'été, during the summer.

Pendant. Pendant l'hiver, in winter; pendant la paix, in time of peace. This preposition denotes a duration more limited than durant.

Outre. Outre des qualités aimables, il faut encore, etc., besides amiable qualities, there ought still, etc.

Suivant. Je me déciderai suivant les circonstances, I shall determine according to circumstances.

Selon. Le sage se conduit selon les maximes de la raison, a wise man acts according to the dictates of reason.

EXERCISE.

With wit, politeness, and a little (readiness to de art. pr. art. peu de prévenance oblige), one generally succeeds in the world. We are fit réussir on propre for meditation during winter. (In the course of) that siege d'art. f. pendant siège m. the commandant of the city made some very successful ind-3 de art. deureux 2millies. Besides the exterior advantages of figuer and sortie f. pl 1 2 1 art.

the graces of département, she possesses an excellent heart, a art. ensinien m. avoir 2 1 correct judgment, and a sensible soul. Always act saun 2 jugement 1 2 1 se conduire according to the maxims which I have given you. f. pl. inculquer f. pl.

Some—to express opposition, as,

Contre. Je plaide contre lui, I plead against him.

Malgré. Il l'a fait malgré moi, he has done it in spite of me.

Nonobstant. Nonobstant ce qu'on lui a dit, notwithstanding what has been said to him.

EXERCISE.

We cannot long act (contrary to) our own character; savoir cond-1 agir contre * notwithstanding all the pains we take to disguise it, it que pour shows itself, and betrays us on many occasions. In se montrer trahir en bien de art.

r. 2
Of the Prepositions.

Vain we dissemble; in spite of ourselves, we are known at last.

Sans avoir beau faire on nous connaît à la langue.

Some—to express privation, or separation, as, Sans. Des troupes sans chefs, troops without commanders.

Excepté. Excepté quelques malheureux, except some wretches.

Hors. Tout est perdu hors l’honneur, all is lost save honour.

Hormis. Tous sont entrés hormis mon frère, they are all come in except my brother.

Exercises.

(Had it not been for) your care, I should have been ignorant all my life. All the philosophers of antiquity, except a few, have held the world to be eternal. All have laid down their arms, except two regiments, who preferred (making their way) through the enemy. Everything is absurd and ridiculous in that work, except a chapter or two.

Some—to denote the end, as, Envers. Il est charitable envers les pauvres, he is charitable to the poor.

Touchant. Il a écrit touchant cette affaire, he has written respecting that business.

Pour. Il travaille pour le bien public, he labours for the public good.

Exercises.

I have written to you concerning that Business, in which I take the most lively interest; and as I know your benevolence towards the unfortunate, I (make not the least doubt)
Of the Prepositions.

that you (will carefully attend) (to it), (not so much) for the ne donner tous vos soins sub-1 y moins satisfaction of obliging me, as for the pleasure of justifying inf-1 justifier inf-1 innocence, and confounding calumny.
art. pr. confondre art. f.

Others—to mark the cause and means, as,
Par. Il l'a fléchi par ses prières, he has softened him by his prayers.
Moyennant. Il réussira moyennant vos avis, he will succeed by means of your counsels.
Attendu. Il ne peut partir attendu les vents contraires, he cannot sail on account of contrary winds.

EXERCISE.

Is there any man that has never been softened by tears sub-1 aucun fléchir art. or disarmed by submission? Through the précautions ni désarmer art.
which we took, we avoided the rocks of that dangerous que ind-3 ind-3 écueil m. pl. 2 coast. Owing to the bad state of my father's health, 1 shall côte f. 1 not travel this year.
voyager année f.

The use of the prepositions, —à, —de, —en, is very extensive.

A is generally used to express several relations, as destination, tendency, place, time, situation, etc. being often a substitute for various other prepositions; ex. destination -to: aller à Londres, to go to London.—Tendency -to, toward: courir à sa perte, to hasten to one's ruin.—Aim -to, for: aspirer à la gloire, to aspire to glory.—Residence -at, in: être à Rome, to be at Rome.—Time -at: à midi, at twelve o'clock.—Concern -on: à ce sujet, on this subject.—Manner -with: supplier à mains jointes, to intreat earnestly.—Means -with: peindre à l'huile, to paint in, or with oil; -with: pas à trois fils, three thread-stockings, that is, with three threads.—
Situation -at, with : être à son aise, to be at ease.
Purpose -for: une table à manger, a dining table.
Suitableness -for, to : homme à réussir, a man likely to succeed: — desert: crime à ne pas pardonner, a crime not to be forgiven, etc.

EXERCISE.

Fathers! give good counsel, and still better encore 3 pr. meilleur 1
examples to your children. A good minister only aims 2 ne s'aspirer
at the glory of serving his country well. When we were
fus d'inf 1 pays 3 1
in the country, we devoted the morning to ind 2
campagne f. consacrer ind 2 matinée f. art.
study, we walked at noon, and at three or four se promener ind 2 midi
o'clock we went a hunting, or fishing.ς Michael
heures pl. ind 2 art. chasse f. pr. art. pêche f. Michel
Angelo has painted (a great deal) in fresco. It is a bed with
Ange beaucoup art. fresque f. ce lit m.
ivory posts and mahogany feet. That man, with his
colonne d'ivoire pr. pied d'acajou art.
gloomy looks and surly behaviour, seems sombre 2 regard m 1 pr. art. brun 2 maintien m 1 ne semble
fit only to serve as a scarecrow.
propre que de * épouvantail

De is generally used to express separation, extraction, possession, appartenence, cause, shift, result, etc. and supplies the place of several prepositions, as—from: je viens de France, I come from France; d’un bout à l’autre, from one end to the other.—Of: le palais du roi, the palace of the king; les facultés de l’âme, the faculties of the soul; un homme d’esprit, a man of wit. In a partitive sense—of: moitié de, quart de, etc. the half of, the fourth of, etc.: it is used for par—by: il est aimé de tout le monde, he is beloved by every body; for through, or by, etc.: mourir de faim, de soif, to die of hunger, of thirst:—on, upon, with: vivre de fruits, to live upon fruit.—On account of, or for: sauter de joie, to leap for joy.
Of the Prepositions.

EXERCISE.

I come from London, where I have spent a week very agreeably. From one end of the horizon to the other, the sky was covered with thick black clouds. The marble of Paros is not finer than that which we get from Carrara. Montaigne, Mad. de Sévigné, and La Fontaine, Carrare were writers of truly original genius. One half of the terrestrial globe is covered with water, and above this heat, or through excessive cold. In that happy retreat, we lived on the milk of our flocks, and the delicious fruits of our orchards.

EN serves to mark the relations of time, place, situation, etc. and is variously expressed, as c'étoit en hiver it was during winter; être en Angleterre, to be in England; aller en Italie, to go into Italy; elle est en bonne santé, she is in good health; il vaut mieux être en paix qu'en guerre, it is better to be at peace than at war; il l'a fait en haine de lui, he did it out of hatred to him, etc.

EXERCISE.

He had for a (long while) lived in France; the troubles which agitated that fine kingdom obliged him to retire to Switzerland, whence he soon after (set off) for Italy. We were at peace, and enjoyed all its blessings, when ambition rekindled the flames of war, and forced us to put our frontier in a state art.
Of the Adverb.

Of defence. The savage is almost continually at war; he con-
not remain at rest. He has acted on this occasion, like
dans
a great man.

CHAPTER VII.

OF THE ADVERB.

The Adverb is a word which is united to verbs, ad-
jectives, or even adverbs themselves, to express their
manner and circumstances.

Remark. There are adjectives which are sometimes
used as adverbs. We say, il chante juste, he sings right;
elle chante faux, she sings out of tune; ils ne voient pas
clair, they do not see clear; cette fleur sent bon, this
flower has a good-smell, etc. These adjectives, juste,
faux, clair and bon, are employed as adverbs.

Adverbs are of different kinds: the most numerous
are those which express manner.

These adverbs are formed from adjectives in the
following manner.

RULE I. When the adjective ends, in the mascu-
line, with a vowel, the adverb is formed by adding
ment as modeste-ment, modestly; poli-ment, politely;
ingenu-ment, ingenuously, etc.

Exceptions. 1st. Impuni makes impunément.

2dly. These six adverbs, aveuglément, blindly; com-
modément, commodiously; conformément, conformably;
énormément, enormously; incommodément, incommod-
iously: and opiniâtrément, obstinately; take before
ment an è close, instead of the è mute in the adjective.

3dly. Follement, foolishly; mollement, effeminately;
nouvellement, newly; and bellement, softly; are formed
from the adjectives fol, mol, nouvel and bel; and, con-
sequently, according to the following rule.

RULE II. When the adjective ends with a conso-
nant, in the masculine, the adverb is formed from the
feminine termination, by adding *ment*; as *grand, grandemment, greatly; franc, francemment, frankly; rai, naïvement, artlessly, etc.

**Exception.** 1st. *Gentil makes gentiment, prettily.*

2d. These eight adverbs, *communément, commonly; confusément, confusedly; diffusément, diffusely; expressément, expressly; importunément, importunately; obscèrément, obscurely; précisément, precisely; and profondément, deeply; take the *é* close instead of the mute *e* in the feminine of the adjectives from which they are formed.

**Remark.** The adverbs *incessamment, presently; notamment, especially; profusément, lavishly; sciemment, knowingly; and nuitamment, by night; are not derived from adjectives.

3d. The adjectives ending in *ant* and *ent*, form their adverbs by changing *ant* into *amment*, and *ent* into *ement*; as constant, const-amment, constantly; éloquent, éloqu-emment, eloquently. *Lent* and *présent* are the only two of this class that follow the general rule.

**Remark.** In general, adverbs denoting a manner, and a few of the other classes, have the three degrees of comparison. **We say** profondément, aussi, plus or moins profondément, fort, bien, or très-profondément, and le plus profondément.

**Exercice.**

Bourdoloue and Masillon have both spoken very eloquently on evangelical truths; but the former has primarily to convince the mind; the latter has generally had in view to touch the heart. Several of...
Of the Adverb.

Brayere's characters are as finely drawn as they are delicately expressed. Buffon is one of the best writers of the last age:

2 siècle m. 1 be thinks deeply, describes forcibly, and expresses himself (with peindre fortement no-dignity). Corneille and Racine are the two best French tragic blemont 3 tragi-poets; the pieces of the former are strongly, but incorrectly que 2 1 f. 2 3 written; those of the latter are more regularly beautiful, more beau purely expressed, and more delicately conceived.

There are likewise various other sorts of adverbs.

1st. Those denoting affirmation; as certes, certainly; oui, yes; soit, be it so; volontiers, willingly.

Doubt. Peut-être, perhaps.

Denial. Non, ne, ne pas, ne point, no, not.

Exercise.

Certainly, either I mistake, or the business passed

ou se tromper se passer ind-4 (in that manner). Do you think that he listens willingly to ainsi

this proposition? Have you ever read in Racine the famous

scene of Phædra's delirium? Yet, I have, and I own

Phèdre 2 art. délire m. 1 la lue avouer que it is one of the finest of the French theatre. Perhaps you will ce 2 m. 1 discover, on a second perusal of la Fontaine's fables,

dans lecture f. 2 art. 1 de art. beauties which you have not perceived at first. Will you f. pl. que aperçus à art. f. have some? No. Will you not have some? The man who

en (is willing) to do good is not stopped by any obstacle. I will vouloir * * art. arrêté aucun pay him what I owe, but not all at once.
lui ce que lui non pas à art. fois f.

2dly. Some denote order or rank: as premièremen, first: seconde ment, secondly, etc. d'abord, at first; après, ensuite, after, afterwards; avant, auparavant, before, etc.
3dly. Others denote place or distance: the former are où, where; ici, here; là, there; deça, on this side: delà, on that side; partout, every where: the latter, près, near; loin, far; proche, nigh, etc.

**Exercise.**

We ought first to avoid doing evil; afterwards we ought to do good. Read books of instruction first, and art. afterwards you may proceed to those of entertainment. If you will go, settle first what is to be done. The painter had (brought together) in the same picture several different objects: here, a troop of Bacchantes: there, a troop of Bacchantes young people; here, a sacrifice; there, a disputa of philosophs. Sesostris carried his conquests further than Alexander did afterwards. Call upon your cousin; he lives near here. I cannot see that, if I be not near it. When he knew where he was, he began to fear the consequences of his imprudence. Contemplate (at a distance) lofty mountains, if you wish to behold prospects ever varied and ever new.

4thly. There are some that denote time, either in a determinate or in an indeterminate manner. Those denoting a determinate time are, for the present; maintesant, now.; à présent, at present; actuellement, this moment, etc. for the past: hier, yesterday; avant hier, the day before yesterday; the day before yesterday; autrefois, formerly, etc. and, for the future: demain, to-morrow; après demain, the day after to-morrow, etc. Those denoting an indeterminate time are, souvent, often; d’ordinaire, generally; quelquefois, sometimes; matin, early; tôt, soon; tard, late, etc.
EXERCISE.

I have finished the work you prescribed me; what do vous achever que ordonner ind-6 que you wish me to do now? Formerly, education was vouloir 1 que je * subj-1 3 2 neglected; it is now (very much) attended to; it is (to be hoped) on * 3 beaucoup 2 s'occuper en 1 faillir esperer that new views will soon (be adopted). They grieved on on 4 2 adopter ind-7 1 de 3 on s'affliger ind-2 (at it) yesterday; now, they laugh (at it); to-morrow, it will no en rire en on longer (be thought) of. It is one of those accidents which plus penser ind-7 y it is sometimes impossible to avoid. The dew incommoded de oder m. ind-4 me (very much); I shall not (in future) walk so late. derormais se promener Rude and coarse criticism generally (does greater injury) malhonnete 2 grossier 3 un f. 1 2 avoir plus to the person who indulges himself in it, than to him who is se permettre * celle the object (of it).

5thly. Some express quantity: as peu, little; assez, enough; trop, too much; beaucoup, much, very much; tant, so much, etc.

And, lastly, some express comparison; as plus, more; moins, less; aussi, so; autant, as much, etc.

EXERCISE.

There are many people who have pretensions: but very beaucoup de * a * few who have such as are well founded. To embellish a en subj-1 * * * de bonde * 2 subject too much, frequently betrays a want of judgment and 1 souvent être faute taste. One very often experiences disgust in the midst of trouver art. à the most riotous pleasures. She is a giddy and thought-

bruyant 2 1 ce léger 2 inconsé-

fuse woman, who speaks much and reflects little; she has réfléchir. so much goodness, that it is impossible, not to love her. de; de
These stunts are beautiful; consequently are dear. This steak is a definite du
aussi elles coûtent cher
book has merit; but there are others as good. If he has done en
ant ant en
meant less to give you pain than to apprise you of the pour faire de art.
avertir
language that is used. She is six years younger than her propos en tenir avoir de moins
brother. Nobody is more interested than you are (in the ne
"à ce que réussir
croire" de success) of the affair. You do not offer enough for this garden;
sujet 2 * 1 affirer de
give something more. The more ignorant we are, the less we de
* 1 4 on 2 3 *
croire l'être

CHAPTER VIII.

OF CONJUNCTIONS.

The conjunction is a word which serves to connect sentences. When we say, Il pleure et rit en même temps, he cries and laughs at the same time, the word et unites the first sentence il pleure with the second il rit. Likewise when we say, Pierre et Paul rient, Peter and Paul laugh, the word et unites these two sentences into one, Pierre rit, and Paul rit.

There are different kinds of conjunctions.

1st. To unite two words, under the same affirmation, or under the same negation, we use et for the affirmation, and ni, neither, nor, for the negation.

2dly. To denote an alternative, or distinction between objects, we use ou, either, or; soit que, whether, or; tantôt, sometimes, etc.

3dly. To restrict an idea; sinon, but, except; quoique, encore que, though, although; à moins que, unless, till.

EXERCISE.

Gold and silver are metals less useful than iron. To art. de art art.
listen with joy to a slanderer, and to applaud him, is to warm méditant * lu ce * réchauffer
Of Conjunctions.

The serpent who bites, that he may sting more effectively; I piquer afin que plus sûrement
like neither flatters nor the wicked. Those who have never flatteur
suffered, know nothing; they know neither good nor savoir connaître art bien pl. art.
evil. You may choose either a happy mediocrity, or a mal pl. avoir à choisir de f. de sphere more elevated, but exposed to many dangers. He is s.
bien de art. ce
an inconsistent man; he is sometimes of one opinion and sans consistance 2 tantôt avis
sometimes of another. I have (nothing more) to say to you, autre chose
only that I will have it so. I shall not yet pass to the pre-
sinon que vouloir encore lecr
rusal of the authors of the second class, unless you advise true l. ordre in. ne constiller

4thly. To express the opposition of an object to another; mais, but; cependant, yet, nevertheless; néanmoins, for all that, however; pourtant, howsoever, though; toutefois, bien que, although.

5thly. To express a condition; si, if; sinon que, except that; pourvu que, save that; à condition que, upon the condition that.

6thly. To express consent; à la vérité, indeed; à la bonne heure, very well.

7thly. To explain something; savoir, c'est-à-dire, viz. that is to say; comme, as.

Exercice.

The serpent bites; it is only a bite; but from this bite ce ne que morsure the venom communicates itself to the whole body: the fiend;
speaks; it is but a word, but this word resounds everywhere. ne que peuple se retentir
(That is) certainly a superb picture; nevertheless, there is some vaill tableau
inconcevable "of design." Although Homer, according to no incorrection pl. dessin,
race, numbers (at times), he is, nevertheless, the first dommiller sub-1 quelquefois et ne pas moins
Of Conjunctions.

of all poets. You will succeed, provided you act

with vigour. We have within us two faculties seldom united,

imagination and judgment.

8thly. To express relation or party between two propositions; comme, as; ainsi, thus so; de même, as, just as; ainsi que, as: autant que, as much as; si que, so as, etc.

9thly. To express augmentation or diminution; for augmentation, d'autre, besides, moreover; de plus, au surplus, besides, furthermore; and for diminution, au moins, du moins, pour le moins, at least.

10thly. To express the cause or the wherefore of a thing; car, for; comme, as; parce que, because; puisque, since; pour, that, in order that, etc.

EXERCISE.

The most beautiful flowers last but a moment: thus hum

man life passes away. The (greatest part) of mankind have,

like plants. hidden qualities that chance discovers.

art. de art. caché 2 propriété f. 1 art. hasard faire découvrir
Mad. de Sévigné's letters are models of elegance. sim-

t. 2 art. de pr. plicity, and taste; besides, they are replete with interesting

pr. plein de 2 anecdotes. Nothing is more entertaining than history; besides f. 1 * de art.

nothing is more instructive. Circumstances show

* de art. occasion pl faire

us to others, and still more to ourselves. I shall

connaitre encore always advise you to take the ancients as your guides; at least, conseiller de pour *

quit. but seldom the way which they have traced for pr. s'écarter de ne que route f. que tracer *

you. We must, at least, know the general principles of a lan-

* falloir 2 1 guage, before (we take upon ourselves) to teach it. Certain

que f. de se mêler de * enseigner f.
Of Conjunctions.

people hate *grandeur*, because it *nécessité* and *humilité*
(lit. *art.* --f. *pron.* *rabaisser* *pron.*
them, *et* makes them feel the *privation of the advantages*
*que elle leur* *bien pl.*
which they love.

11thly. To draw a conclusion; or, now; done, then;
*pour conséquent*; consequently; *c’est pourquoi* therefore.

12thly. To express some circumstance of order or
time; *quand lorsque*; when; *pendant que*, *tant que*;
*while*; *tant que*, as long as; *depuis que*, ever
since; *avant que*, before; *dès que*, *aussitôt que*, *d’abord que*;
as soon as; *à peine*, hardly, scarcely; *après que*,
after that; *enfin*, in fine, finally, to conclude, etc.

13thly. To express the transition from one circumstance to another; *car, fur*; *en effet*, indeed, in effect;
*ainsi*, besides, otherwise; *à propos*, now I think of it; *après tout*, after all.

Exercice.

We ought *to love* what is *immoral*; now *Virtue is*
*faire* ind-1 *art.*
*immoral*; therefore we ought to love *virtue*. We ought to
*faire* *practise* what the *Gospel* commands us; now it commands
*Évangile* *m.*
us not only to forgive *our enemies*, but *who to love*
*non de pardonner a* *encore de*
them. *Despréaux was extremely* *particular* in *not*
dé la plus grande *exactitude* a
*coming* late, *when* he was invited to dinner; *he said*, that
*inf-1 trop* *ind-2* *ind-2*
all the *faults* of those who (are waited for) present themselves
defaut *se faire attendre*
to those who *wait* for them. The *pride which possesses us*
*attendre* *postédir*
visible as it is, escapes our eyes, while it manifests itself
*tout que a*
to the eyes of the public, and displeases every one. *After*
*choquer* *tout art. exprès pl.*
we had examined that singular effect, we (enquired into) its
*ind-5* 2 1 *rechercher ind-3 en art.*
causes. We had hardly done, when (he came in). *Pride while*
*ind-2* *fuir que entrer *cont-
Of Interjections.

verbally, for all our imperfections; for, whether it hides them, 
for, whether it discovers them, it glories in knowing them. None 
but an Englishman can (be a judge of) Shakespeare: 
for, what foreigner is sufficiently versed in the English language 
to discover the sublime beauties of that author?

The conjunction que serves to conduct the sense to 
its completion. It is always placed between two ideas, 
both necessary in order to complete the sense; Il est 
très-important que tout le monde soit instruit, it is of great 
importance that everybody should be well instructed. 
It differs from the relative pronoun que, inasmuch as 
it can never be turned into lequel, laquelle. The conjunc-
tion que is generally repeated before every num-
ber of a period.

EXERCISE.

(As long as I live), this image will be before my eyes; 
toute ma vie

and, if ever the gods permit me to reign, I shall not forget, after

so terrible an example, that a king is not worthy to govern

nor happy in his power, (but in proportion as) he

et n'est puissance f. qu'autant que

subjects it to reason. I am very glad to see that you do

soumettre art. de

not love flattery, and that one (runs no risk) in speaking to

ne hasarder rien à

you with sincerity.

CHAPTER IX.

OF INTERJECTIONS.

Interjections are words, which serve to express the 
sudden emotions of the soul. They have no fixed 
place in speech, but show themselves accordingly as 
the sentiment that produces them comes to manifest 
itself externally. The only thing to be attended to, is 
not to place them between words which custom has
made inseparable. There are interjections for every feeling, viz.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pain</th>
<th>ahh, ah! onf! ah!</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Grief</td>
<td>hélas! mon Dieu, etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fear</td>
<td>ha! hé!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Joy</td>
<td>ah! bon, bon! o!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aversion</td>
<td>fi! fi done! oh, oh!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disgust</td>
<td>pouah, pouah!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indignation</td>
<td>foin de</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Imprecation</td>
<td>peste de, la peste de</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Disbelief</td>
<td>chansons, tarare</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Surprise</td>
<td>ouais;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Astonishment</td>
<td>oh! bon Dieu! miséricorde! peste!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Warning</td>
<td>gare! hem! holà! ho!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Checking</td>
<td>tout ben! holà.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Encouraging</td>
<td>alerte! allons! ça, courage!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Applauding</td>
<td>bravo vivat!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Encoring</td>
<td>bis, bis.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Calling</td>
<td>holà! ho! hem, hem!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Derision</td>
<td>oh! eh! zest! oh! oh! oh!</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Silence</td>
<td>chut! paix! sit.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
PART II.

THE SYNTAX,

OR

WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

CHAP. I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

There are some substantives which are never used in the plural; such are—1. The names of metal, considered in their original state; as l'or, gold; le platine, platina. 2. The names of virtues and vices; as la chasteté, chastity; l'ivrognerie, drunkenness. 3. Some words of a physical or moral nature; as l'ouie, hearing; l'odorat, smelling; le sang, blood; le sommeil, sleep; la pauvreté, poverty. 4. The infinitive of verbs, and adjectives used substantively, together with some other words, which cannot be reduced to any particular class.

Others, on the contrary, which likewise cannot be reduced to any particular class, are never used in the singular; as annales, annals; ancêtres, ancestors; mouchoir, handkerchief, etc.

II.

OF COMPOUND NOUNS.

Of the formation of their plural.

1. When a noun is compounded of a substantive and an adjective, they both take the sign of the plural; as un gentilhomme, a nobleman; des gentilhommes, noblemen.

2. When a noun is compounded of two substantives, united by a preposition, the first only takes the sign of the plural; as un arc-en-ciel, a rainbow; des arces-en-ciel, rainbows.
3. When a noun is compounded of a preposition, or verb, and a substantive, the substantive alone is put in the plural; as _un entresol_ (a low room between two floors), _des entresols_; _un garde-fou_ (rails on bridges), _des garde-fous_.

**Remark.** There is a small number of substantives composed of a verb and an adverb, as _un passe-partout_, a master or general key; or of a verb repeated, as _passe-passe_, slight of hand: they never take the sign of the plural.

**Exercise.**

_Gold_ is the most pure, the most precious, the most ductile, art. _parfait_ and, after platina, the heaviest of all metals. _Chastity_ is an oblique * gation of all times, all ages, and all conditions. art. pr. art. * pr. art. _état_ m. pl. art. * _Intoxication_, which proceeds from beer, is of longer duration * venir art. than that which proceeds from wine. It is the sense of art. _ce_ art.

_feeling_, which teaches to guard against the errors of art. _touche_ apprendre se garantir de art. _sight_. _Sleep_ is the image of _death_. Early art. de bonne heure art. _learn_ to distinguish truth from false. That is art. apprendre 1 —guer art. vrai art. faux more bitter than _wormwood_. Dignity of art. _amer_ de art. _absinthe_ art. _élévation_ art. mind was formerly the (distinguishing mark of) sentiment m. pl. ind-2 ce qui * distinguer ind-2 noblemen. One of the buttresses of the vault has fallen. art. arc boutant m. pl. _tomber_ He is always making (cock and bull stories). The Tartars art. * fait de art. cog-à-l’âne m. pl. Tartare always form the scouts of an army. The _fish- _ôtre avant-coureur m. pl. _chasse- carriers_ did not arrive on time. This door is only _serré_ m. pl. ind-3 à ne que fastened with a _latch_, and all (the persons) in the house **forme** à *art. loquet m.* _ceux de_ have each their _key_.

_passe-partout_ m.,
CHAP. II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

1. The difficulty attendant on rendering into French the a, or an, which precedes a substantive, when it follows the verb to be, will easily be removed by examining whether that substantive be restricted by a particular idea; if it be not restricted, the a or an is not expressed in French; thus, I am a Frenchman, I am a Prince, must be translated by je suis Français, je suis prince. But if it be restricted, then the a or an must be expressed by the word un placed before the substantive, as I am a Frenchman of an illustrious family, I am a very unfortunate prince, must be translated by je suis un Français d’une illustre maison, je suis un prince très-malheureux.

2. When the verb être is preceded by the demonstrative ce, in phrases of this kind, un is always required before the substantive, as c’est un trésor, etc.

3. The French do not use the article before substantives expressing the quality of a preceding noun; though, in cases of this kind, the English usually employ the article the, and still more frequently a or an; as Télémaque, fils d’Ulysse, roi d’Ithaque, Telemachus, the son of Ulysses, king of Ithaca; le Duc d’York, prince du sang, the Duke of York, a prince of the blood.

EXERCISE.

I am a Frenchman and a merchant: after having (been at) the most famous (trading towns) in the Levant, my commercial concerns have brought me here. I am an unhappy Frenchman who, a striking example of the vicissitudes of fortune, seek an asylum where I may end my art.
days in peace. He was a man of uncommon probity and of tried virtue; (as a) reward for the services he un éprouvé 2 1 pour le récompenser de que had rendered to the church and state, the king has made m pl. église pr art. him a bishop. Neoptolemus had hardly told me, that he was évêque Néoptolémè 1 a peine dit a Greek, when I (cried out) O! enchanting words, after que s'écrier ind-3 dous parole f, pl. so many years of silence and unceasing pain, O my de sans consolation 2 pr. 1 son, what misfortune, what storm, or rather what propre malheur m. tempêtes f. gloutons f. fera- tious wind has brought you hither to end my woes? He rable 2 1 conduire pour mal m. pl. replied, I am of the island of Scyros, I am returning: répondre ind-3 les retourner thither; (I am said) (to be) the son of Achilles. on dit que ind-1

Without entering more minutely into this subject, the following comparative table, in which the same words are exhibited, according to circumstances, both with and without the article, in conjunction with the phrases which have been inserted at the end of this grammar, will, it is presumed, be considered as a sufficient illustration of custom.

### COMPARATIVE TABLE.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>WITH THE ARTICLE.</th>
<th>WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>The writings of Cicero are full of the soundest 2 ideas 1.</td>
<td>The writings of Cicero are full of sound 2 ideas 1.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Direct yourself of the prejudice défaire préjugé dices_of_childhood.</td>
<td>Have no prejudice (with regard to) this question.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The different kinds of animals that are upon the earth.</td>
<td>There are different kinds of animals upon the earth.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He enters into a detail of the rules of a good grammar.</td>
<td>He enters into a long detail of frivole 2 rules 1.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He affects circumlocutions. chercher de détourner.</td>
<td>He affects long 1 circumlocutions 2 in order to explain the simplest 2 things 1.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Syntax of the Article.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>WITH THE ARTICLE.</th>
<th>WITHOUT THE ARTICLE.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>He loads his memory with the verses of Virgil and the phrases of Cicero.</td>
<td>He loads his memory with insipid 3 verses 1 and phrases 2.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Essays supported by strong expressions.</td>
<td>Essays supported by lively 1 expression.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He has collected precepts of morality.</td>
<td>A collection of precepts in morals.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Make use of the tokens se servir de signe (dont) accorded upon.</td>
<td>We are obliged to use some exterior 2 signs. In order to make ourselves understood.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The choice of studies, proper, etc.</td>
<td>He has made a choice of books, which are etc.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Knowledge has always been connaissance pl.</td>
<td>It is an object of esteem, of praise, and admiration.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The riches of the mind can only be acquired by study.</td>
<td>There is in Peru a prodigious abundance of useless riches.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The gifts of fortune are uncertain.</td>
<td>Gifts of fortune.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The connexion of proofs enchainement preuve makes them please and persuade.</td>
<td>There is in this book an admirable connexion of solid proofs.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>It is by meditation upon what we read, that we acquire fresh knowledge.</td>
<td>It is by meditation that we acquire fresh knowledge.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The advantages of memory.</td>
<td>There are different kinds of memory.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The memory of facts is the most showy.</td>
<td>He has only a memory of facts.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The aim of good masters should be to cultivate the devoir ind-1 de</td>
<td>He has an air of pedantry.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to maitre</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
## Syntax of the Article.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>WITH THE ARTICLE</th>
<th>WITHOUT THE ARTICLE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>mind and reason of their pupils.</td>
<td>that shocks you at first</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>The taste of mankind is liable to</strong></td>
<td>Society of chosen 2 men</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>homine pl.</strong></td>
<td><strong>hominis</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>to great changes.</td>
<td><strong>he has no need of lesson</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He has no need of the lessons you wish to give him.</td>
<td><strong>avoir besoin</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>France, Spain, England, etc.</td>
<td><strong>Kingdom of France, of England, etc.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Island of Japan.</td>
<td><strong>Island of Candia.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He comes from China.</td>
<td><strong>He comes from Poland</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He arrives from America.</td>
<td><strong>He arrives from Italy.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The extent of Persia.</td>
<td><strong>He is gone to Persia.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He is returned from the East Indies, from Asia, etc.</td>
<td><strong>He is returned from Persia, etc.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He lives in Peru, in Japan, in the Indies, in Jamaica, etc.</td>
<td><strong>He lives in Italy, in London, in Avignon, etc.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The politeness of France.</td>
<td><strong>The fashions of France.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The circumference of England.</td>
<td><strong>The horses of England.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The interest of Spain.</td>
<td><strong>The wines of Spain.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The invention of printing is attributed to Germany.</td>
<td><strong>The empire of Germany divided into a great number of states.</strong></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>He comes from French Flanders.</td>
<td>He comes from Flanders.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

### III.

1. The English make use of **a**, or **an**, before of measure, weight and purchase; as **wheat is a crown a bushel**; **butter sells for six pence a pound sold yesterday for forty crowns a hogshead, six shillings a groat a bottle**. But the French make the article **le, la**; as **le blé se vend un écu le beurre se vend six sous la livre; le vin se vend quarante écus le muid, c'est plus de quatre sous l'heurte**.

2. When speaking of **time**, **a** or **an** is expressed by the preposition **par**, as **so much a tant par semaine.**
Syntax of the Adjective.

3. In English, a is sometimes put between the pronoun which expresses admiration and the substantive that accompanies it, as what a beauty! but, in French, the un is never expressed in similar cases, as quelle beauté!

4. In English, when the adverbs more and less are repeated to express a comparison, they must be preceded by the article, as the more difficult a thing is, the more honourable it is. But, in French, the article is omitted, as plus une chose est difficile, plus elle est honorable.

EXERCISE.

Corn sells for eight shillings a bushel. Veal and art. blé m. se vendre * schelling boisseau art. veau mutton cost ten pence a pound. This lace is sold at art. couler seu livret. f. se vendre = half a guinea an ell. The best French wines are sold at demi 2 l. f. aune de France 2 l ind-1 from twelve to fifteen shillings a bottle. My father goes to bouteille f. va en Ireland four or five times a year. He gives his son seven Irlande fois an shillings a day. It (is necessary), if you desire to (im- faire des prove fast), that you take a lesson three times a week.

progrès rapides prennex *
The more I contemplate those precious remains of antiquity, the more I am struck with wonder. What a beautiful morning! come, let us go and walk into the fields.

CHAP. III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

1. It has been said (p. 67), that an adjective agrees in gender and number with the substantive which it qualifies; from this rule, however, must be excepted su, bare, and demi, half, when placed before a substantive, and seu, late, when before the article or a pronominal adjective; as il va nu-pieds, he goes bare-
foot; je suis à vous dans une demi-heure, I will be with you in half an hour; feu la reine, the late queen; feu ma mère, my late mother. But the agreement takes place, if nu and demi be placed after the substantive, and feu between the article or pronominal adjective and the substantive; as il a les pieds nu, his feet are bare; je suis à vous dans une heure et demie, I will be with you in an hour and a half; la feu reine, ma feue mère.

2. An adjective frequently serves to qualify two or more substantives expressing either persons or things of different genders.

If it be used to qualify more than two substantives, it must agree with them; for, either these substantives perform the office of subject, as la grammair, la logique, et la rhétorique, méthodiquement enseignées, ne s'oublient guère, grammar, logic and rhetoric, when taught with method, are seldom forgotten; or they constitute the regimen, as c'est un homme d'une valeur, d'une vertu et d'une fidelité éprouvées, he is a man of tried courage, virtue and fidelity.

If it be used to qualify only two substantives, the substantives of persons must be distinguished from the substantives of things; with the first, the rules of agreement are to be observed in all cases: with the second, custom allows, when the substantives form the regimen, to make the adjective agree with the last only; as elle avoit les yeux et la bouche ouverte. Nevertheless, modern grammarians prefer the agreement even in this case.

3. With respect to phrases like the following, les langues Angloise et Françoise sont fort cultivées, though they are in opposition to the rules of grammar, yet it is allowable to use them. However, in strict propriety it seems better to say, la langue Françoise et l'Angloise sont très-cultivées.

**EXERCISE.**

_He ran through the streets like a madman, bare-foot and lad-2_ — rue f. pl.
Syntax of the Adjective.

bare-headed. His legs were bare. Give me il * art. jambe f. 2 avoir 1 tête half a guinea, and then you (will only owe) me a guinea ne devoir plus que and a half. I shall be at home in half an hour. Come chez moi dans before half past one. The late queen was idolized. The 2 une heure. et I 2 1 ind-2 adore late queen was universally regretted. His impetuosity and ind-3 courage, long restrained, soon surmounted all obsta- pron. enchaîné ind-3 art. aces. The imagination and genious of Ariosto, although in- l’Arioste quoique art, regular in their course, yet interest, (hurry along,) and marche néanmoins attacher entrainer captivate the reader, who can never be tired of admiring them lector se lasser inf-1.

There are in Gessener’s idylls sentiments and a 2 art. idylle 1 de art. grace altogether affecting. The good taste of the Egyptians tout-à-fait charmant (from that time) made them love solidity and unadorned dès lors ind-3 leur art. = tout au 2 regularity. In those climates, the dry and the rainy son s. pl. se diviser années. mons.

II.

DIFFERENCE OF CONSTRUCTION BETWEEN THE ENGLISH AND FRENCH LANGUAGES.

1. In English, the substantive of measure is placed before the substantive or adjective expressing the dimensions, as a tower two hundred feet high, or in height. In French, the word which expresses dimension is placed first, if it be an adjective, and the preposition de is added to it as a regimen; as une tour haute de deux cents pieds. But if it be a substantive, or an adjective used substantively, it is placed after, with the preposition de either before the noun of measure or of dimension; as une tour de deux cents pieds de haut, or de hauteur. This last mode is the most elegant.

2. The English manner of expressing dimensions,
to use the verb to be; as the walls of Algiers are twelve feet thick, and thirty feet high. The French in general make use of the verb avoir, then there are two constructions; as les murs d’Alger ont douze pieds d’épaisseur, et trente de hauteur; or les murs d’Alger ont douze pieds d’épaisseur sur trente de hauteur. This second mode of expression is most generally adopted.

3. In comparative sentences, to express difference, the English sentence often runs thus; she is taller than her sister by the whole head. The French in this manner; elle est plus grande que sa sœur de toute la tête.

EXERCISE.

This box, which is six feet long, is very convenient. You will be stopped in your march by a river three hundred feet broad.

This observatory, which is twelve hundred) feet high, is very proper for knowing the true position of the stars. It is a terrace (a hundred and eighty) feet broad, and (twelve hundred) feet long. The walls of our garden are twenty feet high and three broad. It is one of the finest stones that was ever seen: it is twenty feet long and six thick. This ditch is nine feet six inches deep, and six feet broad. My son is taller than yours by two inches.

REGIMEN OF THE ADJECTIVE.

Several adjectives have a regimen; some require the preposition de, and others the preposition à before a noun, or a verb, which then is called the regimen or government of the adjective.
Syntax of the Adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Digne de récompense  Worthy of reward.
Utilé à l'homme, Useful to man.
Digne de régner, Worthy of reigning.
Content de son sort, de vivre, Satisfied with his lot, with
etc. living.
Beau à voir, bon à manger, Fine to the sight, good for
eating.
Apré au gain, averse d'honneur, Eager after gain, greedy for
honour.
Propre à la guerre, Fit for war.

Récompense is the government of the adjective digne, as it is joined to that adjective by the word de: l'homme is the government of the adjective utile, because it is joined to that adjective by the word à, and so of the rest.

EXERCISE.

Virtuous men are always worthy of esteem. A weak art. Vertueux 2. toujours estime f. faible 2 mind is liable to many contradictions. A heart free from 1 m. sujet bien des — f. pl. cœur m. libre de cares enjoys the greatest possible felicity. Voltaire was seul m. pl. jouit de 1 — 3 — f. 2 — fut always greedy of praise, and insatiable of glory. Rousseau avertit l'ouvrage f. pl. — — beau, endowed with a strong and fiery imagination, was doué de fort 2 bouillant 3 — f. 1 all his (life-time) subject to frequent fits of misan-
vie f. soulin à de — accès m. pl. — thropy, and liable to all the variations attendant upon it. sujet — f. pl. qui en sont la suite.

FROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON THE ARTICLE AND THE ADJECTIVE.

THE FAULTS OF INFANCY.

defaut m. pl. art. enfance.

The amiable Louisa and her young brother Charles were Louise — ind-2 gentle, humane, and sensible. To the most interesting doux sensible spirituel intéressant 2 art. person, Louisa joined all the modesty, the pleasing ungén-
figure f. 1 ind-2 — f. heureux ingén-oumness and artless graces of her sex; and Charles, the nuit f. naïf 2 art. — f. sexe m.
vivacity, the fire, and the manly gracefulness of

fé. feu m. mâle agrément m. pl. 
his. But these advantages, the precious gifts

avantage m. pl. * —2 don m. pl.
of nature, were obscured by great defects.

art. —f. ind-2 un peu obscurci de défaut m. pl. 
They were both inclined to idleness, and liable

ind-2 l'un et l'autre encêin art. paresse f. sujets 
to fits of idleness and ill humour when they were con-
des accès bouterie f. de * à m. lorsque 
dontradicted. Faults are diseases of the soul, the sure

têrit art. défaut des maladies 
guéri-

(of which) is the work of time. 

son f. 2 dont 1 outrage art. m. 
In good dispositions, it is generally the fruit of the
les âmes bien nées elle d'ordinaire —m.
developpement m. art. de m. inf-1.
Though their parents were persuaded (of this), they em-

Quoique — sub-2 2 —dé 3 en 1 employ-
doyer ind-3 pour hâter 2 la 1 moyen m. leur réussir ind-3 
If they were satisfied with them, contentment and

* 2 ind-2 1 content de art. satisfaction f. 
joy were painted in their countenances; if

dissatis-

f. point sur figure f. pl. * en étaient-ils mécon-
sified, they did not scold, but they received them

tent * les gronder ind-2 ind-2 
with a sorrowful air, a dejected countenance, and every

triste 2 regard 1 abattu 2 maintien 1 tous 
sign of chagrin and trouble. Louisa and

art. ligne m. pl. art. —m. de art. douleur 
Charles were naturally kind and feeling; they could not

long support the idea of having afflicted such ten-

long-temps résister à idée inf-1 affligé des si ten-
der parents. They felt their error, burst into tears,

dre 2 —1 ind-2 faute f. fondre en larme 1 pl. 
and asked pardon. All was immediately forgotten, and

—m. 2 3 aussitôt 1 oublié art. 
satisfaction again smiled around. It was by this

contentement m. renaitre ind-2 autour d'eux Ce fut 
means that these amiable children soon became

moyen sing. que 
bientôt 2 devenir 1 des 
models of docility, complaisance, and application.

modèle m. pl. = de — —
CHAP. IV.

OF THE PRONOUNS.

§. I.

OF PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

Of the Place of Personal Pronouns.

There is no difficulty in placing personal pronouns, when they act as subjects: the person who speaks always names himself last, and the person addressed is generally named first:

EXAMPLES.

Vous et moi, nous irons à la campagne,
Nous irons ce soir à la promenade, vous, votre frère, et moi,
You and I will go into the country.
We will take a walk this evening, you, your brother and I.

EXERCISE.

My sister and I were walking by the last rays of the setting sun, and we were saying: what a sweet splendour does it still spread over all nature! In the long winter evenings, my father, my brothers and I (used to spend) two hours in the library and to read there, in order to unbend our minds) from the serious studies of the day, those amiable poets who interest most the heart, by the charms of a lively imagination, and make us love truth, by disguising it under the mask of an ingenious fiction. You

Vos * ind-2 d rayons m. pl.
Nous * disisons éclat m.
2 pas 3 4 ne répond 1 art.
2 soirées f. pl. 1 nous passer
4 bibliothèque f. nous * disions y
5 jour n délasser
1 le plus
2 charmes de l'âne imagination, et make us love truth, by
rêvant 2 1 art.
en disguising it under the mask of an ingenious fiction.
Vous déguiser inf-3 trait m. pl.

2
and your friend shall accompany me to the museum, and there

we shall study nature in her three kingdoms

RULE. The pronouns *il* and *ils* always represent a
substantive masculine, the former, if it be singular, the
latter, if it be plural; and *elle* and *elles*, on the contra-
ry, represent a substantive feminine, *elle*, if it be singu-
lar, *elles*, if plural.

Thus, in speaking of the *rose*; say, *elle a un parfum
exquis, aussi est-elle la fleur la plus recherchée*, it has an
exquisite fragrance, and is indeed the choicest of flow-
ers; because *rose* is feminine and singular; and in
speaking of several ladies, *elles ont autant de modestie
que de beauté, d'esprit et de grâce*, they have as much
modesty as they have beauty, wit, and accomplish-
ments; because *dames* is feminine and plural.

EXERCISE.

*(Look at)* that magnificent building; it unite gracefulness
*Regardez* ... grace *f.*
to beauty, and elegance to simplicity. *Ignorance
art.* = *f.*... *art.* = *f.*
is jealous, presumptuous, and vain: *it sees* difficulties
*présuméux* = *ne de* = *f. pl.*
in nothing, *is surprised* at nothing, and stops at nothing.
*rien* = *ne s'arrêter à*
Let us gather these roses; Heavens! what a sweet fragrance
*Ciel* quel *parfum*
they exhale! Never judge from appearances; they are often
*ler* sur *art.*
deceitful: the wise man examines them, and does not decide
* * se *décider*
upon them, till he has had time to fix his judgment.
*d'après f. que lorsque* art. *m. défixer*

With respect to pronouns, when used as a regimen;
custom has established the following rules.

RULE I. The pronouns *me, te, se, leur, le, la, les,*
*and en*, are generally placed before verbs, as are
*nous, vous,* and *tou, when* without a preposition.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

EXAMPIE.

It me dit, | He tells me.
Je te vois, | I see him.
Je les écoute, | I listen to them.
Je lui parle, | I speak to him.
J’y songerai, | I will think of it.
J’en suis ravi, | I am delighted at it.

EXERCISE.

(As soon as) he had explained to us the maxims of Socrate, he said; you see that it is not without reason he is looked upon as truly wise. He was continually saying to me, yet a little patience, and you will disarm even envy itself. You have, no doubt, (some foundation) for reproaching Aim, with his faults; but is there (any man) on earth that is exempt (from them?) To please her, you must never flatter her. To abandon one self to metaphorical abstractions, is to plunge into an unfathomable abyss.

RULE II. The pronouns moi, toi, soi, nous, vous, lui, eux, elle and elles, are placed after verbs, when they are preceded by a preposition.

EXAMPLES.

Cela dépend de moi, | That depends on me.
Je pense à toi, | I think of thee.
On s’occupe trop de soi, | We are too attentive to ourselves.
Que dites vous d’eux, | What do you say of them.

EXERCISE.

My father loved me so tenderly that he thought of me, but me ne (was wholly taken up) with me, and saw none but me ne que ne s’occuper ind-2 que de.
in the universe. If you wish to obtain that favour, you must de
speak to him himself. It depended on you to excel your
ind-2 de de l'emporter sur
rivals, but you would not. Philip, father of Alexander,
la vouloir ind-4 Philippe 2
being advised to expel from his dominions a man, who
comme on conseilloit à 1 de chasser être m. pl.
(had been speaking) ill of him; I shall take care not to do that,
penser ind-6 se garder bien * * * en
said he, he would go and stand me every where.
ind 3
Y médire de

RULE III. In imperative phrases, with affirmation, moi, toi, nous, vous, lui, leur, eux, elle, elles, le, la,
es, y and en are placed after verbs; but, if with negation, me, te, se, nous, vous, lui, leur, le, la, les, y and en,
are placed before verbs.

EXAMPLES.

Dites-moi ce qui en est, Tell me how things stand.
Donnez-en, Give some.
Songez-y, Think of it.

But we say:

Ne me dites pas ce qui en est, Do not tell me how things stand.
Ne m'en donnez point, Do not give me any.
N'y songez pas. Do not think of it.

REMARK. 1st. When the pronouns me, te, moi, toi,
are placed betwixt an imperative and an infinitive,
we make use of me, te, when the imperative is with-
out a regimen direct.

EXAMPLES.

Venez me parler, Come and speak to me.
Va te faire coiffer, Go and get thy hair dressed.

But we make use of moi, toi, if the imperative have
regimen direct.

EXAMPLES.

Laissez-moi faire, Let me do it.
Fais-toi coiffer, Get thy hair dressed.

2dly. If moi, toi, be placed after the imperative
followed by the pronoun en, they are changed into me, te.

**EXAMPLES.**

Donnez-m'en.  
Retournez-t'en.  
Give me some.  
Go back.

3dly. When there are two imperatives joined together by the conjunctions et, ou, it is more elegant to place the second pronoun before the verb.

**EXAMPLES.**

Polissez-le sans cesse et le repolissez.  
Gardez-les ou les renvoyez.  
Polish and repolish it continually.  
Keep them or send them back.

**EXERCISE.**

Listen to me, do not condemn me, without a hearing.  
Comme écouter * * m'écouter se plaindre, thou hast just cause of complaint; however, do not faire un sujet plaintes complain too bitterly of the justice of mankind. Give 

amèrement  
art. homme pl.

some. Do not give any. Think (of it). Do not think of it.

Repeat to them continually that, without honesty, one can never succeed in the world. Do not repeat to them continually the same things. Acknowledge him as your master, and obey him.

Tread upon that spider and kill it.

marcher  
araignée f.  
écrouer

**RULE IV.** When several pronouns accompany a verb, me, te, se, nous, vous, must be placed first; le, la, les, before lui, leur; and y before en, which is always the last.

**EXAMPLES.**

Prenez-moi ce livre; je vous le rendrai demain; si vous me le refusiez, je saurais m'en passer.  
Aurez-vous la force de le leur dire?  
Je n'a pas voulu vous y mener;  
Je vous y aurais porté.  
Lend me that book; I will return it to-morrow; if you refuse me, I can make shift without it.  
Will you have resolution enough to tell them it?  
He would not take you there.  
I will bring you some there.
Exception. In an imperative sentence, with affirmation, le, la, les, are always placed first, as donnez-le moi, give it me; offrez-la-lui, offer it to him; conduisez-les-y, conduct them thither: and moi is placed after y, as menez-y-moi, carry me thither; but we say menez-nous-y, carry us thither.

Exerçise.

You wish to make a present to your sister. (There is) a beautiful fan, you should present her with it. How many people are there without merit and without occupation, who would be more nothing in society, did not gaining ne tenir à rien cond-1 art. si * art. jeu. introduce them (into it). I shall speak to them (about it) and give you a faithful account of it. It is certain that je rendre ind-7 exact 2 compte in. 1 old Géronde has refused his daughter to Valère; but because he does not give her to him, it does not follow that he will give her to you.

Remark. The expression même is sometimes placed after the personal pronouns, moi, toi, soi, nous, vous, eux, lui, elle, elles, to mark more particularly the person or thing spoken of.

Examples.

Ils se sont perdus eux-mêmes. They have ruined themselves.
Le monde estime bien des choses. The world prizes many things qui, en elles-mêmes, sont fort which, in themselves, are méprisables; worthless.

§ II.

Of the relative pronouns.

We have seen that the relative pronouns are qui, que, dont, lequel, quoi.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

RULE I. Qui, when a relative, is always of the number, gender and person of its antecedents.

EXAMPLES.

Moi qui suis son fils,
Thou who am his son.

Toi qui es si jeune,
Thou who art so young.

L’ enfant qui joue,
The child who plays.

Nous qui étudions,
We who study.

Vous qui riez,
You who laugh.

Les livres qui instruisent,
The books which instruct.

In the first example, qui is singular, and of the first person, because the pronoun moi is in the singular, and of the first person. In the second it is singular, and of the second person, for the same reason; and it is farther masculine or feminine, according to the sex of the person addressed.

EXERCISE.

I who did not suspect (so much) falsehood, cunning,

* soupçonner ind-2 tant de fausseté f. pr. ruse f.

and perfidy, in a man whom I loved, blindly followed;

pr. = f.

ind-2 aveuglément 3 je suivre ind-2

his counsels. Thou who art candour and innocence itself,

conseil m.

art. = art. — f. même

trust not too lightly. The great empire of the Egyptians,


ta conquérir légèrement

— m. — ten

which was (as it were) detached from all others, was not of

comme détaché

art.

long duration. We who know the value of time,

durée f.

connaître prix m. art.

ou, ought to make a good use (of it), instead of wasting it in

devoir ind-1 * emploi m. au lieu perdre dans

idleness and frivolity. What is it you, my daughter, who

art. oisiveté f. art. inutilité f. Quoi ce

(would wish) that I (should love) you less? The greatest men,

vouloir con-1 que subj-2

who were the ornament and glory of Greece, Homer, Pyr-

ind-4 ornement f. art. — f. art. Grèce f. Homère,

thagoras, Plato, even Lycurgus and Solon, went to learn

— gare, Platon. même — gue — ind-3 * apprendre

— wisdom in Egypt.

art. sagesse f. en Égypte.
RULE II. Que, when a relative, is of the number and gender of its antecedent.

EXAMPLES.

C'est moi que l'on demande, It is I whom they ask for.
C'est toi qu'on appelle, It is thou whom they call.
La femme que je vois si bien The woman whom I see so well
parée, dressed.
C'est nous que vous offensez, It is we whom you offend.
C'est vous que je cherche, It is you I am seeking.
Les dames que vous voyez, The ladies whom you see.

EXERCISE.

I whom temptation surrounded on every side sell
art. séduction f. environner ind. de tout part f. pl. je tombai
into the snare. It is thou whom the public voice calls to that
dans piège m. Ce 2 f. 1 appeler
employ. A power which terror and force have
place f. puissance f art. = f. art. = f.
sounded, cannot be of long duration. It is we whom they per-
foncé f. ne peut durée f.
on pour-
secute with unexampled rage. You whom every body
suivre avec une sans exemple fureur f. 1 tout le monde
respects, hasten to (show yourself). (Every thing) in the
respecter se hâter de paroître Tout dans
universe alters and perishes; but the writings which
univers m. s'altérer périr écrit m. pl. art.
genius has dictated, shall be immortal.
génie m. dicté pl. —tel

Dont represents occasionally de qui, duquel, de laquelle, desquels, desquelles, and even de quoi.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme dont vous parlez est The man of whom you are
parti,
La tour dont nous apercevons The tower whose battlements
les créneaux doit être très-
elevée,
Ce dont je vous ai parlé l'autre What I was speaking to you of
jour n'a pas réussi.

Observe 1st, That qui, que and dont may equally apply to persons and things; but qui can never apply to things when it ought to be preceded by a preposition: in this case we must make use of lequel, duquel,
auquel, etc.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

2dly. *Lequel, laquelle, apply both to persons and things.

3dly. *Quoi applies only to things.

There is likewise an adverb which is employed as a relative pronoun; it is où. On this occasion, it is of both genders and both numbers, and signifies dans lequel, auquel, dans laquelle, etc.

**Examples.**

*Voilà le but où il tend,* | That is the object he has in view.

*Ce sont des affaires où je suis embarrassé,* | Those are affairs with which I am perplexed.

**Remark.** *Où* is united with the preposition de and par.

**Examples.**

*Voilà une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public,* | That is an affair on which the public happiness depends.

*Tels sont les lieux par où il a passé,* | These are the places through which he passed.

**Exercises.**

Persons of a middle condition have not the same art. personne f. pl. commun 2 — f. 1 même need of being cautioned against the dangers to which besoin inf. précautionné f. pl. contre écueil m. pl. elevation and authority expose those who are destined art. — f. art. autorité f. exposer ceux destiné m. pl. to govern mankind. The protection on which he relied gouverner art. homme pl. — f. sur compter has been too weak. That after which a true philosopher ind-2 foible ce après vrai —phe m. sighs most ardently, is to spread that sentiment of uni-soupirer art. ardemment de répandre. — m. versal benevolence which should unite and (bring together) —sel 2 bienveillance f 1 devroit unir rapprocher all men. These are conditions without which the thing art. Ce sont des sans f. would not have been concluded. Nature, of whose secrets fait f. art. — f. * 1 art. — m. we (are ignorant), will be always a source of conjecture pl. 4 2 ignorer 3 — f. 3 f. pl. 4 to mankind. That of which we complain the most pour l'art. homme 2 Ce se plaints bitterly is not always what affects us the most. The only sentiment ce qui affecter
Syntax of the Pronouns.

moments in which his soul still opens to pleasure
— m. pl. encore 2 s'ouvrir 1 art.
are those which he devotes to study. The mountains from
coex consacrer art. étude f. f. pl.
whence gold (is extracted) are not in general fruitful.
on 1 art. or 3 tire 2 en — infertile pl.
The different countries through which he has passed have
— pays m. pl. par passé
furnished his pencil with romantic and picturesque
fourni à pinceau m. de art. —lique 2 pittoresque 3
scenes.
— 1.

§ III.

OF PRONOUNS ABSOLUTE.

We have seen that the pronouns absolute are, qui, que, quoi, quel, lequel.
Qui signifies quel homme, what man; quelle personne, what person.

EXAMPLES.

Qui vous a dit cela? | Who told you that?
J'ignore qui a fait cela, | I don't know who did that.
Que signifie quelle chose, what thing.

EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on? | What do they say?
Je ne sais qu'en penser, | I don't know what to think of it.
Quoi has the signification of que.

EXAMPLES.

A quoi s'occupe-t-on? | What are they engaged in?
Dites-moi en quoi je puis vous servir, | Tell me how I can serve you.

REMARK. If que or quoi be followed by an adjective,
the preposition de is placed before that adjective.

EXAMPLES.

Que dit-on de nouveau? | What news is there?
Qui de plus instruit et de plus amusant? | What is more instructive and amusing?

EXERCISE.

Who will not agree that life has few real pleasures and
convénir art. f. peu de vrais
many dreadful pains? (Some one) entered secretly ;
beaucoup de affreux 2-pains 1 pl. 1 On — extra secretement
guess who it was. _What have you read in that book_

deviner * * m.
that can have excited in your soul emotion and _enthu-
quit puisse porté art. —f. art. enthous-
iasm? I know not _what to think (of it)._ In _what did you_
_saisie m. savoir * A ever
find them occupied? There is in that discourse I know not
trouvez occupé m. pl. discours m. savoir
_what which appears to me designing._ _What have you remarked_
sembler * insidieux remarqué
_good, beautiful and sublime in Homer?_ _What more_
pr. pr. pr.
brilliant, and, at the same time, more false, than the expressions
brillant en * même pr
_of a man, who has (a great deal) of wit, but wants_
beaucoup esprit qui manque de
judgment?
jugement?

In interrogations, and after a verb, _quel_ is used to
ask the name or qualities of a person or thing.

**EXAMPLES.**

_Quel homme est-ce ?_ What man is it?
_Quel temps fait-il ?_ What weather is it?
_Je ne sais quel homme c'est._ I don’t know what man it is.
_Il sait quel parti prendre._ He knows what steps to pursue.

We have already seen, that the adverb _où_ is employ-
ed as a relative pronoun; it is likewise used as a kind
_of absolute pronoun.

_Où_ represents _en quel endroit_, in what place, or à
quoi, to what.

**EXAMPLES.**

_Où allez-vous ?_ Where are you going?
_Où cela nous menera-t-il ? Where will that take us?
_J’ignore où l’on me conduit, I don’t know where they are_
taking me.
_Il n’a pas prévu où cette con-
duite le menerait._ He did not foresee where such
_a conduct would lead him.

**Remark I.** When _où_ is joined to the preposition _de_,
it marks the place or cause, according to circumstan-
ces of which you are speaking.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

**EXAMPLES.**

D'où vient-il ?
Where does he come from ?
D'où va sa haste procède-t-elle ?
From whence proceeds his hatred.
Voilà d'où il vient,
It was there he came from.
Le mal me vient d'où j'attends mon remède,
The evil proceeds from that quarter whence I had expected a remedy.

**REMARK II.** When où is preceded by the preposition par, it marks the place or means, according to the different circumstances of which you are speaking.

**EXAMPLES.**

Par où avez-vous passé ?
Which way did you come ?
Par où me tirerai-je d'affaire ?
Which way shall I extricate myself?
Voilà par où j'ai passé,
That is the way I came.
Je ne suis par où je me tirerai
d'affaire,
I don't know which way I shall extricate myself.

**EXERCISE.**

What grace, what delicacy, what harmony, what colour—

grace f. délicatesse f. =f. coloring, what beautiful lines in Racine! What then must

terms m. — 1 donc 3 doit 2 have been that extraordinary man to whom seven cities

=2 1 se sont
contested the glory of having given birth? He does not

dispute =f. avoir donné art. jour m. * know what model to follow. I have told you what man it is.
savoir modèle m. * suivre ce

Which of those ladies do you think the most amiable?

f. dames f. * 2 trouver 1 f.

Choose which of those two pictures you like best.

Choisir—m. 4 5 6 tableau m. 7 1 aimer 2 art. mieux 3

Where am I? He knows not where he is. He is gone I don't

savoir en aller ne

know where. Where does he get that pride? (It is) there

savoir De * lui vient orgueil m. voilà de

he derives his origin. (Which way) did you come? (That is)
tirer origine. Par êtes-vous arrivé ? Voilà

(the road) I came.

par venir ind-4

By the manner in which we have employed these

pronouns, it will be seen they are only interrogative

when at the beginning of a sentence, and consequently,
the most proper name for them is that of pronouns absolute.

§ IV.

OF DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

_Ce, cette, ces, very often are joined to the adverbs of place, ci, here, and là, there in order to point out in a more precise manner the thing spoken of; and then the demonstrative pronoun is placed before the substantive, and ci and là are placed after.

EXAMPLES.

_Ce livre-ci,
Cette fleur-ci,
Cet homme-là,
Ces femmes-là,

| This book. |
| This flower. |
| That man. |
| Those women. |

_Celui, celle, ceux, celles, are followed by the preposition de, when placed before a substantive, and by a pronoun relative, when placed before a verb.

EXAMPLES.

_Les maladies de l’âme sont plus dangereuses que celles du corps._
_L’homme dont je vous ai parlé est celui que vous voyez._
_De toutes les choses du monde, c’est celle que j’aime le moins._

The disorders of the mind are more dangerous than those of the body.
The man of whom I spoke to you is he whom you see.
Of all the things in the world, it is that which I like least.

REM. The pronouns _celui, celle, ceux, and celles, when followed by a pronoun relative, are expressed in English by the personal pronouns, _he, she, they, or by that which, those which, such as, etc._

EXERCISE.

_The pleasures of the wise resemble in nothing those of a dissipated man. He that suffers himself to (be ruled) by his passions, must renounce happiness. This stuff will_
Syntax of the Pronouns.

Become you wonderfully. That action is worthy of blame.
Cette scene is calculated to interest all men, but that
—f.-ci faire pour intéresser art. —là
cannot succeed.
ne sauroit réussir.

Celui-ci and celui-là adopt the gender and number of the substantive whose place they supply. When they are opposed to each other, celui-ci marks the object which is the nearest; and celui-là that which is the most distant.

EXAMPLE.

Celui-ci plait, mais celui-là capte; This pleases but that captive;
Ci and là coalesce with ce, and form the two other demonstrative pronouns ceci and cela, the first of which signifies cette chose-ci, this object; the second, cette chose-là, that object.
They are used alone; but when they are opposed to each other, ceci expresses the nearest object, and cela the most distant.

EXAMPLE.

Je n'aime point ceci, donnez-moi cela;

REMARK. When cela is alone and not opposed to the pronoun ceci, it is, like ceci, used of an object which we point to.

EXAMPLES.

Que dites-vous de cela?
Cela est fort beau,

What do you say of that? That is very handsome.

EXERCISE.

(Have) are certainly two charming prospects; this
Voilà certainement beau perspective f. pl.
has something more cheerful, but many people
quelque chose de riant bien de art. personne f. pl.
think that more striking and more majestic. The body
trouver imposant majestueux
perishes, the soul is immortal; yet all our cares are for
périr s. —tel cependant soit
that, while we neglect this. What means this? That
tandis que ne gêner veut dire
is true. It is not that. This is low and mean, but that is
Ces has rampant
grand and sublime.
§ V.

OF INDEFINITE PRONOUNS.

1st CLASS.

Those which are never joined to a Substantive.

Quelqu'un means un, une, one.

EXAMPLES.

Nous attendons des hommes, il en viendra quelqu'un;
Several ladies have promised me to come, some will come.

Plusieurs femmes m'ont promis de venir, il en viendra quelqu'une;

Quelqu'un taken absolutely and substantively, is said alike of both genders, and means une personne, a person.

EXAMPLE.

J'attends ici quelqu'un. I wait here for some body.

We no longer say, un quelqu'un.

Quelques-uns signifie plusieurs dans un plus grand nombre, several out of a great number.

EXAMPLES.

Quelques-uns assurent,

Entre les nouvelles qu'il a débitées, il y en a quelques-unes de vraies,

Quiconque, whoever, signifies quelque personne que ce soit, qui que ce soit, any person whatever. It takes no plural, and is never used but of persons.

EXAMPLE.

Ce discours s'adresse à quiconque is addressed to whoever is guilty.

Chacun, each, every one, is used either distributively or collectively. It has no plural.

When used distributively, it means chaque personne, chaque chose, each person, or thing. It is used in the feminine, and must be followed by the preposition de.
Syntax of the Pronoun.

Examples.

Chacun de nous vit à sa mode. Each of us lives as he pleases.
Voyez séparément chacune de ces médailles.

Used collectively, it signifies toute personne, every person.

Example.

Chacun a ses défauts. | Every one has his faults.

We no longer say, un chacun.

Exercise.

Can any one (be still ignorant) that it is from the earliest infancy that we ought to form the mind, the heart and the taste. Will not some one of these ladies be of the party. Some people like to read (every thing new).

partie f. aimer toutes les nouveautés.

(These are) beautiful pictures; I could wish to buy some. Whoever has studied the principles of an art, knows that

voilà de superbe tableau m. * voudroit en acheter.

it (is only) (by length of time) and by deep reflexions that he can succeed in making it his own. All the réussir à se rendre propre.

ladies at the ball were very finely dressed, and each had m. ind. 2 * superbement paré.

differently. Every one should, for (the sake of) his own happiness, listen only to the voice of reason and of propre.

n'écoute que * voix f. art. raison f. a truth. What is the price of each of these medals?

art. vérité f. prix m. f. médaille f.

Autrui means les autres personnes, other people; it only applies to persons, is never accompanied by an adjective, has no plural, and is never used in a sentence without being preceded by a preposition.

Example.

La charité se réjouit du bonheur. Charity rejoices in the happiness of others.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

**Personne**, which is always masculine and singular, means either *nul*, nobody, or *qui que ce soit*, whoever, any body. In the first sense, it is preceded or followed by the negative *ne*, which is placed after *personne*, when this word stands before the verb; and before the verb when *personne* stands after. The same observation applies to *rien*.

**Examples.**

*Il ne faut nuire à personne.* | We must injure nobody.
*Personne n'est assuré de vivre.* | Nobody is certain of living till to-morrow.

**Remark I.** The negative is sometimes understood; as *y a-t-il quelqu'un ici?* is there any body here? *personne*, nobody. *Personne* stands for *il n'y a personne*, there is nobody here.

**Remark II.** In interrogative phrases with an affirmation, or in those expressing doubt, *personne* signifies *quelqu'un*, any body.

**Examples.**

*Personne oserait-il nier, etc.* | Would any body dare deny?
*Je doute que personne soit assez hardi.* | I doubt whether any body be bold enough.

**Remark III.** In comparative sentences, when *personne* is placed in the second member of the comparison, it means *any body*.

**Example.**

*Cette place lui convient mieux que qu'à personne.* | That place suits him better than any body.

*Rien*, nothing, which is masculine and singular, is used with or without a negation. When with a negation, it means *nulle chose*, nothing.

**Example.**

*Il ne s'attache à rien de solide.* | He applies himself to nothing fixed.

When used without a negation, it means *quelque chose*, *some thing.*
Syntax of the Pronouns.

Example.

Je doute que rien soit plus pro... I doubt whether any thing be pro et faire impression que... more suited to make an im...

etc.

The negation is sometimes understood; que vous a... cela? rien; how much did you pay for it? nothing.

It always requires the preposition de before the adjectival or participle that follows it, and then if there be no verb in the sentence, the negation is not expressed; as rien de beau que le vrai, nothing is noble but truth.

Exercise.

Pour la plupart de art. mal m. ne but a dream. Do not to others what you would not wish que sonne m. vouloir to be done to you. No one knows whether he desires qu'on vous fit savoir si est digne de love or hatred. An egotist loves nobody, not even his own de egoiste pas meme propre children; in the whole universe he sees no one but himself. dans * univers ne voit * que lui seul He is more than (any body) worthy of the confidence (with digne confiance f. which) the king honours him. I doubt whether any one ever dont honorer que ait painted nature, in its amiable simplicity, better than jamais peint art. — f. sens... nature. — * 2 est il venu 1 chez this morning? Nobody. There was nothing but great matin m. que de grand in the designs and works of the Egyptians. I dans dessin m. pl. art. ouvrage m. pl. — tien... doubt whether there is any thing better. I exalt que * soit 2 1 plus propre elever the soul than the contemplation of the wonders of nature. f. merveille f. art. f.

2d class.

Those which are always joined to a Substantive.

Quelque, some, signifies, vs. une entre plusieurs, one out of several; it is of both genders, and adopts the number of the substantive.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

EXAMPLE.
Adresses-vous à quelqu'un autre | Apply to some body else.
personne

Chaque, each, every, which is of both genders, has no plural.

EXAMPLE.

Chaque pays a ses coutumes, | Each country has its customs.

Quelconque signifie nul, aucun, no, not any; quel que ce soit, whatever it be; quel qu'il soit, whoever he be.
It is of both genders, is generally used with a negative, and always placed after a substantive. When thus employed, it is always singular.

EXAMPLE.

Il ne veut se soumettre à aucune autorité quelconque, | He will submit to no authority whatever.

Certain signifie quelque, certain, some. In this sense it is used alike of persons and things; but it is always placed before the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

J'ai oui dire à certain homme, | I have heard some man say.
à un certain homme,

Un, when it is not an adjective of number, and signifies a or an, is used indefinitely, to express some person, or some thing indeterminately. In this acceptation it means quelque, certain, and takes the gender of the substantive with which it is joined. It makes in the feminine une.

EXAMPLES.

J'ai vu un homme qui courait, | I saw a man who was running.
Je ne suis promene dans une grande et belle prairie, | I walked in a large fine mea-
dow.

EXERCISE.

Some enlightened people among the Egyptians
éclairé 2 esprit m. pl. 1 parmi — tiens
preserved the idea of a first being, whose attributes they
conserver ind-2 idée être art. — but m. pl. 3 1
represented under various symbols; this (is engraved)
représentant ind-2 & différent symbol les c'est ça que prouve
Syntax of the Pronouns.

by the following inscription upon a temple: "I am all that has been, is, and shall be; no mortal ever removed the veil that covers me." Every nation has (in its turn) shone on the theatre of the world. There is no reason whatever that can bring him to it. Some figures appear monstrous and deformed, considered separately, or too near; but, if they are put in their proper light and place, the true point of view restores their beauty and grace. Yesterday I saw a lady remarkably beautiful.

d'une rare beauté. 1

3d class. Those which are sometimes joined to Substantives, and sometimes not.

Nul, and pas un, no, not one, are employed either alone or in conjunction with the substantive. They are accompanied by the negation, assume the feminine, but have no plural, and may be followed by the preposition de.

EXAMPLES.

Nul de tous ceux qui y ont été n'en est revenu, Not one of those who went there has returned.

Pas un ne croit cette nouvelle, Not one believes that intelligence.

Je n'en ai nulle connaissance, I have no knowledge of it.

Il n'y a pas une seule personne qui le croit, There is not a single person that believes it.

Aucun signifie nul, no, none. It is generally accompanied by the negation, and may be followed by the preposition de.

EXAMPLE.

Vous n'avez aucun moyen de réussir dans cette affaire, You have no means of succeeding in that affair.

This pronoun is seldom employed in the plural, except before substantives which have no singular, or
are always employed in the plural in some particular sense.

**EXAMPLE.**

It n'a fait aucune disposition. | He has made no dispositions.

**REMARK.** Aucun may be employed without a negation in interrogative sentences, or those which express doubt or exclusion.

**EXAMPLES.**

* Aucun homme fut-il jamais plus heureux? | Was ever any man more successful?

* On doute qu'aucune de ces affaires réussisse. | They doubt whether any of those affairs will succeed.

* Le plus beau morceau d'éloquence qu'il y ait dans aucune langue, etc. | The finest piece of eloquence that exists in any language, etc.

**EXERCISE.**

No one likes (to see himself) as he is. No expression, no se voir tel que — f. truth of design and colouring, no strokes of genius in that f. dessin de coloris trait great work. He is as learned as any one, Not one of these * ouvrage m. savant engravings announces any great skill. None of his works will gravure f. pl. annoncer un talent m. descend to posterity. He is so ignorant, and at the same passer art. = f. en même time so obstinate, that he will not (be convinced) by any rétemps obtenu se rendre à raison. Did any man ever attain to such a pitch sonnement m. jamais 2 parvenir 1 ce * comble m. of glory? I doubt whether there be in any science a more évident principle.

mineux 2 — pe m. 1

Autre, other, expresses distinction, the difference between two objects, or between one and several: as quelle autre chose souhaitez-vous de moi, what else do you wish for from me.

**REMARK.** Autre is sometimes used to express a person indeterminately; as j'aime mieux que vous l'appreniez de tout autre que de moi, I had rather you learn it of any other person than me.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

Un is sometimes opposed to autre; in which case, these two words are preceded by the article, supply the place of the substantives to which they relate, adopt their gender and number, and form the pronouns Un l'autre, l'un et l'autre, and ni l'un ni l'autre.

L'un l'autre, each other, one another, applies both to persons and things: it takes both gender and number, and requires the article before the two words of which it is composed. If there be any preposition it must be placed before the last. When these two words are used in conjunction, they express a reciprocal relation between several persons or things.

EXAMPLE.

Il faut se secouvrir l'un l'autre | We ought to assist each other.
When used separately, they denote a difference.

EXAMPLE.

Les passions s'entendent les unes avec les autres; si l'on se laisse aller aux unes, on attire bien les autres;

Rem. In the latter case l'un is used for the person or thing first mentioned, and l'autre for the person or thing last spoken of.

L'un et l'autre, both: these two words mark union. They require the verb to be in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

L'une et l'autre sont bonnes. | Both are good.

Ni l'un ni l'autre, neither: these two words, on the contrary, mark separation. The verb must be in the plural.

EXAMPLE.

Ni l'un ni l'autre n'ont fait leur devoir. | Neither has done his duty.

EXERCISE.

Ask another. Would any other have been so self-conceited as to think that his private opinion could counterbalance the public sentiment? Reason and faith balance opinion.

Demander à autre. * aurait-il eu * avoir
self-conceited as to think that his private opinion could * pour penser * penser
counterbalance the public sentiment? Reason and faith
balance * opinion * art. * raison * art. * foi *
equally demonstrate that we were created for another life.

They speak ill of one another. The happiness of the people

constitutes that of the prince; their true interests are connected

with each other. Presumption and pride easily insinuate

themselves into the heart; if we allow one (the entrance

it is much to be feared) that we shall soon abandon our-

bien craindre on * bientôt 2 ne se li-

selves) to the other. Both relate the same story, though

neither believes it to be true.

ne pense que * soit

Même signifies qui n'est pas autre, which is not dif-

different. It is of both genders, and takes the plural.

EXAMPLES.

C'est le même homme, | It is the same man.
La même personne, | The same person.
Ce sont les mêmes raisons, | They are the same reasons.
Ce poème est le même que celui | This poem is the same that I
 dont je vous ai parlé, | was mentioning to you.

Tel signifies pareil, semblable de même; such, like,
similar, same. It assumes both genders and both num-
bbers.

EXAMPLES.

Un tel projet ne saurait réussir, | Such a scheme could not suc-
ed.
Il n'y a pas de tels animaux, | There are no such animals,
de telles coutumes; | such customs.

When used alone, it either preserves its proper sig-
nification, or it expresses a person indeterminately.

EXAMPLES.

Vous ne sauriez me persuader | You cannot persuade me of any
rien de tel, | such thing.
Tel fait des libéralités, qui ne | The same man dispenses his
paye pas ses dettes, | bounty, who does not pay his
debts.

Plusieurs, several, which is plural and of both gen-
ders, is used indifferently of persons and things.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

united to a substantive, or relating to it, it generally signifies an indeterminate number, without relation to another number.

**Examples.**

*Plusieurs motifs l'ont détermi-
miné,*  
*Je crois cela pour plusieurs ra-
isons,*  

| Several reasons determined | I believe that for several rea-
| him. | sons. |

But it is used likewise of a greater or less number forming part of a number still greater.

**Example.**

*Parmi un si grand nombre de gens, il y en eut plusieurs qui s'y opposèrent;*  
Out of so great a number of persons, several objected to it.

When *plusieurs* is employed absolutely, without either substantive or relative, it always means *plusieurs personnes,* several persons, and supplies the place of a substantive.

**Example.**

*Plusieurs aiment mieux mourir que de perdre leur réputation,*  
Many had rather die than forfeit their character.

*Tout* is employed either alone or in conjunction with a substantive.

When employed alone, it signifies *toutes choses,* all things; *toute sorte de choses,* every kind of things.

**Example.**

*Tout nous abandonne au moment de la mort; il ne nous reste que nos bonnes œuvres;*  
Every thing forsakes us at the moment of death; we retain nothing but our good works.

When united to a substantive, it is used either collectively or distributively.

Considered collectively, *tous* signifies the totality of a thing; in this acception, it is followed by the article.

**Examples.**

*Tout l'univers,*  
*Tous les corps célestes,*  

| The whole universe. | All the celestial bodies. |

Considered distributively, *tous* signifies *chaque,* each and in this case is not followed by the article.
Syntax of the Pronouns

**EXAMPLE.**

*Tout bien est désirable,* | Every good is desirable.

**EXERCISE.**

Does he always maintain the same principles? Yes, they are

*soutenir* —pe *Oui ce* absolutely the same. That general is the same that commanded

—ment pl. —*der* last year. Such a conduct is inexplicable. There

*art. dernier 2 année f. 1 2 1 conduite f.* —

are no such customs in this country. I never heard

*de coutumes f.* *pays m. ai entendu dire* any thing similar. The same man sows who often reaps

*rien de * *semer* recevoir nothing. I this morning received several letters. Of those

*1 3 matin 4 ind-4 2 lettre f. pl. Pau mi* manuscripts, there are several, much esteemed. Many by

*—grils il y en a qu'on beaucoup 2 estime 1 en* endeavours to injure others injure themselves more

*s'efforcer de nuire à art. ne nuisent à t'an they think.* All is in God and God is in all. The whole

ne penser en course of his life has been distinguished by generous actions.

*sours m. f. marqué des =2 —f. 1* Every vice is odious.

—m. =

4th CLASS.

Those which are followed by *que.*

*Qui que,* whoever, is only used of persons, and sig-

nifies *quelque personne que,* whatever person, in affirm-

ative sentences; it requires the following verb in the subjunctive.

**EXAMPLES.**

*Qui que ce soit qui ait fait cela,* | Whoever has done that, is a

*c'est un habile homme ;* man of talents.

*Qui que je soit,* | Whoever I may be.

*Qui que c'aît été,* | Whoever it may have been.

*Qui que ce soit,* | Whoever it might have been.

*Qui que ce puisse être,* | Whoever it may be.

**Rem.** When *qui que,* followed by *ce soit,* is used with

a negative, it signifies *aucune personne,* nobody; as *je*

*n'y trouve qui que ce soit,* I find nobody there.

*Quoi que,* whatever it be, is only used of things, and

signifies *quelque chose que,* whatever thing, in affirm-

ative sentences; it requires also the following verb in

the subjunctive.
Syntax of the Pronoun.

Examples.

Quoi que ce soit, qu'il fasse ou qu'il dise, on se défie de lui; distrusted.
Quoi que vous disiez, je le ferai; whatever he may say, I will do it.

Remark. When quoi que, followed by ce soit, is used with a negation, it signifies aucune chose, not any thing; as sans application, on ne peut réussir en quoi que ce soit; without application, it is impossible to succeed in any thing whatever.

Exercise.

Whoever has told you so, he is mistaken. Passenger, le se tromper indû. Passant, whoever thou be, contemplate with religious veneration contempler un = 2 respect m. 1. this monument erected by gratitude; it is the tomb —m. élevé art reconnaissance s. ce tombeau m. of a just and benevolent man. How can he hope to 2 bienfaisant 3 1 Comment espérer de be beloved who has regard for no one? Whatever he may lui ne d'égards do or say, he (will find it) very difficult to destroy qu'il aura bien de la peine détruire des prejudices so deeply rooted. A mind vain, presumptuous, préjugé m. si profondément enraciné — présomptueux and inconsistent, will never succeed in any thing whatever. sans consistance * réussir Whatever a frivolous world may think of you, never swerve frivole 2 monde 1 puisse vous détournes from the path of virtue. chemin m. art. 1.

Quel que signifie de quelque sorte, de quelqu'espèce que ce soit, of whatever sort, of whatever kind it may be, when relating to things; or qui que ce soit, whatever it may be, when relating to persons. It assumes both gender and number, according to the person or thing it relates to.

Examples.

Quelles que soient vos affaires, whatever business you may venus; have, come.
Je n'en excepte personne, quel I except nobody, whoever qu'il soit; he may be.
Syntex of the Pronouns.

Remark: We can likewise say, lequel que, whatever, whichever; as lequel des trois que vous choisissiez, peu m'importe; whichever of the three you choose, I care little.

quelque que, of both genders, when united to a substantive, signifies quel que soit le, quelle que soit la, etc. whatever be the. It assumes both numbers.

Examples.

Quelque raison qu'on lui apporte, il n'en a pas rien; Whatever reason is adduced, he believes nothing about it.
Quelques efforts que vous fassiez, Whatever attempts you may make, you will never succeed.
yous ne réussirez point; you will not succeed.

When united to an adjective, it operates as an adverb, and signifies à quelque point que, however great a degree; it neither takes gender nor number.

Examples.

Quelque belle qu'elle puisse être, However beautiful she may be, elle ne doit pas être vaine; she ought not to be vain.
Quelque puissans qu'ils soient, However powerful they may be, je ne les crains point; I am not afraid of them.

Tel que, such as, serves to mark the relation or resemblance of two objects which are compared.

Example.

C'est un homme tel qu'il vous le faut: He is just such a man as you want.

Tout que signifie quelque, encore que, though; quelque, however. On this occasion, tout is considered an adverb, and is employed with adjectives of every kind, and even with some substantives.

Examples.

Tout artificieux qu'ils soient, je I doubt whether the public will be long their dupe.
doutes que le public soit long-temps leur dupe.
Tout te femme qu'elle est, Woman as she is.

Exercise.

Let the laws be (what they may), we must always respect them. Whatever efforts you make, I doubt whether you respect quel 1. subj 1 que.

Que 2
loi 1. 4 subj 1 quel 1
respect 1 them. Whatever efforts you make, I doubt whether you respect quel 1. subj 1 que.
Syntax of the Pronouns.

will succeed. All men, however opposite they may be, * réussir subj-1 art. * opposé * soient, agree on that point. The man who descends into himself s'accorder — m. ne rentrer en only to discover his defects and correct them, likes to se corriger en see himself as he is. However surprising that phenomenon, surpréhant phénomène m. 3 may be, it is not against the order of nature. Children are — l. contre ordre m. art. — f. they are, they behaved remarkably well. se sont conduits fort bien.

A GENERAL EXERCISE ON THE PRONOUNS.

The Evening Walk.

du 2 soir 3 promenade f. 1.

On a fine summer evening, my brother, my sister, and moi nous nous promenons le long bois m. qui n'est not far distant from the castle which we inhabit. We pas bien éloigné château m. habiter (were contemplating) with rapture the majestic scenery contempler ind-2 transport — lieu 2 scène f. 1 which nature exhibits at the approach of night, when we art. déployer approche f. art. nuit f. quand perceived, at the foot of an ancient oak, a boy of a most apparaître à pied m. vieux chêne m. enfant 2 interesting countenance. His beauty, his air of ingenuous-interestant 3 art. figure f. 1 = f. — m. ingénuité ness and candour, his gracefulness struck us, and we de = grâce pl. frappèrent nous approached him. What! alone here, my boy? said we, nous approached en nous enfant lui dites Whence art thou? Whence comest thou? What art thou d'où being here alone? I am not alone, answered he, smiling. suis répondre d'un air riant I am not alone; but I was fatigued and I (have sat myself) under fatigué me suis assis à the shade of this tree, while my mother is busy in gathering ombre f. arbre m. tandis que occupé à cueill- ing simples to give some relief to the pains lir des — pour apporter soulagement m. douleur f. pl. which her aged father suffers. Ab! (how many) troubles 2 vieux 3 à souffrir 1 — qua de quête f. pl.
my good mamma has! How many troubles! Did you
know them, there is not one of you that would not be touched
connoissies qui * fût touché
with pity, and who could refuse the tribute of your tears.
de pitié * lui refusât un tribut * larme f. pl.
We said to him, lovely child, thy ingenuousness, candour,
* aimable = f. pro. = f. pro.
innocence, (every thing) interests us in thy misfortunes and
— f. intéresser à malheur m. pl. à those of thy mother. Relate them to us, whatever they be.
raconter 2 * 1 soient
fear not to afflict us. (Woe be) to whoever cannot (be
creins de affliger malheur ne sait pas s'ast-
affect) by the misfortunes of others. He immediately related
sends sur mal m. pl. 2 aussiôt l
the history of his mother, with an expression, an artlessness,
— f. f.
a grace, altogether affecting. Our hearts felt the live-
— f. tout-à-fait touchant f. s. éprouver vif-
liest emotions, tears (trickled down our cheeks), and we
— f. nos coulèrent
gave him what little money we had about us.
* art. peu de argent que ind-2 sur
(In the mean time) the mother returned. (As soon as) he
cependant revenir dès que
saw her, he exclaimed, run, mamma, run; see what these
apercevoir s'écrier accourir ce que
good little folks have given me; I have related to them thy
— ens f. pl.
misfortune., they have been affected (by them), and their sen-
touché en
sibility (has not been satisfied) with shedding tears. See,
ne s'est pas borne f. à * des
mamma, see what they have given me. The mother was
moved; she thanked us, and said: Generous feeling
attendri remercier nous dit = 2 et 3
soul. the good action which you (have just been doing)
dans f. pl. 1 — f. venir de faire
will not be lost. He who sees (every thing) and judges
perds juger
(every thing) will not let it go unrewarded.
* laisser * sans récompense.

X
CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB.

Agreement of the Verb with the Subject.

We have already seen, that the subject is that of which something is affirmed, and it may always be known by the answer to this question, qui est-ce qui? who or what is it? When we say, Pierre vit, Peter lives; l'oiseau vole, the bird flies; if we ask, qui est-ce qui vit? who is it that lives? qui est-ce qui vole? what is it that flies? The answers, Pierre and l'oiseau, shew that Pierre and l'oiseau are the subjects of the verbs vit and vole.

RULE. The verb must be of the same number and person as its subject.

EXAMPLES.

Je ris, I laugh. | Nous parlons, We speak.
Tu joues, Thou playest. | Vous plaisantez, You jest.
Il aime, He loves. | Ils sont fous, They are mad.

La vertu est aimable, virtue is amiable.

Ris is in the singular number and the first person, because je, its subject, is in the singular and the first person. Joues is in the singular and the second person, because tu is in the singular and the second person, etc.

EXERCISE.

The freest of all men is he who can be free even in slavery. Are we not often blind to our defects? Esclavage m. * s'aveugler ind-1 sur défaut. All men (are inclined) to laziness, but the savages of art. tendre ind-1 art. sauvage art. hot countries are the laziest of all men. Do you think of chaud 2 pays 1. Imposing long en imposer long-temps d. =f. m. pouvoir not deny that he is a great man. nier ne subj-1.
Remark I. When a verb has two subjects in the singular number, it is put in the plural.

Example.

Mon père et ma mère m’aiment. My father and mother love me tenderly.

Exercise.

His uprightness and honesty make him courted by every body. Strength of body and of mind meet not always together. A good heart and a noble soul are precious gifts of nature.

f. de art. = dem m. pl. art. — f.

Remark II. When a verb relates to subjects of different persons, it agrees with the first in preference to the other two, and with the second in preference to the third. We name the person to whom we are speaking first, and always name ourselves last. On this occasion, we place generally before the verb the pronoun plural nous, if the first person has been mentioned before, or the pronoun plural vous, if no first person has been mentioned.

Examples.

Vous, votre frère et moi, nous lisons ensemble la brochure nouvelle.

Vous et votre ami, vous viendrez avec moi.

You, your brother and I read together the new pamphlet.

You and your friend will come with me.

Exercise.

You, your friend, and I, have each a different opinion.

In our childhood, you and I (were pleased) with playing together. Neither I, nor (any one else) has been able to understand (any thing) in that sentence. (Take good care), you and your brother, not to (give way) to the impetuosity of your temper.

caractère m.
Syntax of the Verb.

Remark III. When a verb has the relative pronoun qui for its subject, it is put in the same number and person as the noun or pronoun to which qui relates.

Examples.

_est-ce moi qui ai dit cette nouvelle?_ Is it I who told this news?

_est-ce nous qui l'avons voulu?_ Is it we who desired it?

_Ceux qui aiment sincèrement leur vertu sont heureux._ Those who sincerely love virtue are happy.

Exercise.

He that complains most of mankind, is not always he that (has most reason) to complain (of them). You that wish to enrich your mind with thoughts vigorously conceived and nobly expressed, read the works of Homer and Plato.

Of the Regimen of Verbs.

We have said that an active verb was that after which we could put quelqu'un or quelque chose; and that the word which is put after the verb is called the regimen of that verb. We then observed, that this regimen might be known by asking the question, _qu'est-ce que?_ This regimen we call direct, and it may be either a noun or a pronoun.

Rule. When the regimen of the active verb is a noun, it is always placed after the verb; when it is a pronoun it is generally placed before it.

Example.

_Ma mère aime tous ses enfants._ My mother loves all her children.

_Je vous aime, and not, as in English, j'aime vous, I love you; il m'aime, and not il aime moi._

Exercise.

He has discovered to all other nations his ambitious design of enslaving them, and has left them to suffer.

*montrerart. * _peuple m. pl._

_design of enslaving them, and has left_
Syntax of the Verb.

us no means of defending our liberty, but by endeavors
aucun moyen inf-1 que en tacher inf-3 to overturn his new kingdom. Homer represents Nestor de renverser royaume m. he that restrained the ungovernable wrath of Achilles, the celui modérer ind-2 bouillant courroux in. pride of Agamemnon, the haughtiness of Ajax, and the impetuous fierté f. courage of Diomed. He dared not (lift up) his eyes, —m. 1 Diomède muer ind-2 lever * art. lest they should meet those of his friend, whom de peur de * rencontrer inf-1 very silence condemned him. He caresses them, because art. même 2 m. 1 ind-2 he loves them.

Besides this regimen direct, some active verbs may have a second, which is called indirect, and is marked by the words à or de.

EXAMPLES.

Il a fait un présent à sa sœur, He has made a present to his sister.
Il accuse son ami d'impudence, He accuses his friend of imprudence.

This second regimen is known by the answer to these questions; à qui ? to whom ? à quoi ? to what ? de qui ? of whom ? de quoi ? of what ?

EXAMPLES.

À qui a-t-il fait un présent ? To whom did he make a present ?
À sa sœur, To his sister.
De quoi accuse-t-il son ami ? Of what does he accuse his friend ?
D'impudence, Of imprudence.

EXERCISE.

In submitting to the yoke of Asia, Greece would have en subir inf-3 * joug m. art. art. thought virtue subjected to voluptuousness, the mind croire art. 2 assujettir inf-1 1 art. volupté f. to the body, and courage to a senseless force, which com art. insensé 2 — f. 1isted only in numbers. Three hundred Lacedemonians ind-2 art. multitude f. — niens hastened to Thermopile to certain death, contest à dem. courir ind-3 art. — pl. un assuré 2 f. 1 en x 2.
to have sacrificed to their country an infinite number of
barbarians, and to have left to their countrymen the ex-
ample of an unheard bravery. You know the im-
portance which your parents attached to the success of that
affair: why have you not hastened to announce it
(tom them)?

The regimen of the passive verb is de or par, be-
fore the noun or pronoun that follows them.

EXAMPLES.

La souris est mangée par le chat. The mouse is eaten by the cat.
Un enfant sage est aimé de tout le monde. A good child is loved by every body.

REMARK. We ought never to use the word par, by, before Dieu, God. We say, les méchants seront punis de Dieu, which, in order to avoid making use of by may be thus Englished, God will punish the wicked.

EXERCISE.
The city of Troy was taken, plundered, and destroyed by the Greeks 1184 before the Christian era: this event has been celebrated by the two greatest poets of Greece and Italy. You will only be beloved, esteemed, and courted by men, (in proportion as) you join the qualities of the heart to those of the mind. God punished the Jews every time that, deaf to the voice of the prophets, they fell into idolatry and impiety.

Some few neuter verbs have no regimen; as dormir, to sleep; but many of them have.
Syntax of the Verb.

RULE. We put à or de before the noun or pronoun that follows the neuter verb.

EXAMPLES.

_Tout genre d’excès nuit à la santé._ Every kind of excess is hurtful to health.

_Il médite de tout le monde._ He slanders everybody.

EXERCISE.

This sentiment has pleased the king and all the nation.

In his retirement, he (has the full enjoyment) of the faculties of the soul. To slander (any one) is to assassinate him in cold blood. The honest man seldom (permits himself) to jest, because he knows the most innocent jests may sometimes hurt his reputation. It is only in retirement that one truly enjoys one’s self. On véritablement _jouir de soi_ his work has pleased everyone, because it unites to a real utility the charms of style, and the beauties of sentiment.

The reflected verbs have for their regimen the personal pronouns, _me, te, se, nous_ and _vous_, and this regimen it sometimes direct, and sometimes indirect.

OF THE NATURE AND USE OF MOODS AND TENSES.

Of the Indicative.

The indicative is that mood which expresses the different tenses, with a mere simple affirmation. It contains eight tenses, viz. the present, the imperfect, the _preterit_ definite, the _preterit_ indefinite, the _preterit_ anterior, the _plusperfect_, the _future simple_, and the _future anterior_.

EXAMPLES.

_J’aime._ I love.

_Il joue._ They play.
The imperfect expresses a present with respect to something past.

**Example.**

*J'entrois au moment où vous sortiez.* 
I came in at the moment you were going out.

Or it expresses a past but habitual thing, without fixing the time of its duration.

**Example.**

*César était un habile général.* 
Cæsar was an able general.

The preterit definite is that which marks a thing as done or as having happened at a time completely past.

**Example.**

*J'écrivis hier à Rome.* 
I wrote yesterday to Rome.

The preterit indefinite is that which expresses a thing as done, or as having happened at a time which is neither precise nor determinate.

**Example.**

*Il m'a fait un vrai plaisir en venant me voir.* 
He has given me real pleasure by coming to see me.

Or at a time which is not absolutely past.

**Example.**

*J'ai vu cette semaine beaucoup de monde.* 
I have seen many people this week.

**Exercise.**

My sister is in her chamber, where she is occupied in reading ancient history, the study of which pleases her extremely. Benefits bestowed are (so many) trophies erected in the hearts of those whose felicity (has been promoted) (by them). The great Corneille was on 2 busy in his study tracing the plan of one of his tragedies, occupied cabinet à l'ind-1 —m.
when a servant, terrified, came to tell him that his house was on fire: go and find my wife, replied he; I do not understand household correspondance. Some Hungarian noblemen revolted from the emperor Sigismund; this prince heard it, and marched boldly against them: Which, among you, said he (to them), will lay hands upon his king? If there be one bold enough, let him advance. This noble firmness struck the rebels (with awe), who returned immediately to their duty. I have travelled through almost all Europe, and I have visited the most celebrated places in Asia and Africa; if, on the one hand, I admired the master-pieces of art, of every kind, which the protection of enlightened governments has produced, on the other, I shed tears, (on seeing) the ravages of ignorance and barbarism.

The preterit antérieur expresses that a thing was done or had happened immediately before a time which is passed, and this tense is either definite or indefinite. There is the same difference between its two forms as between the two preterits, the definite and the indefinite.

**Examples.**

**J**’**e** _une* _dîné_ _hier à midi,** I had dined yesterday at twelve o’clock.

_**J**ai eu _déjeuné_ _ce matin à dix heures,** I had done breakfast this morning at ten o’clock.

The pluperfect is that past tense which expresses a thing as done, or having happened, at any period an-
Syntax of the Verb.

tecedent to the time when another thing was done; or it expresses a thing done immediately before another, but indicating a habit.

EXAMPLES.

J'avais soupe quand il entra, | I had sopped when he came in.
Lorsque j'étais à la campagne, | When I was in the country, as
dit que j'avais déjeuné, j'allais à la chasse; | soon as I had breakfasted, I used to go a hunting.

The future absolute is that tense which expresses an action to come; that is to say, that a thing will be done or will happen at a time which does not yet exist.

EXAMPLE.

J'irai demain à la campagne, | I shall go to-morrow into the country.

The future anterior is the tense which expresses that at a time when a thing will be done or will happen, another thing will have been done, or will have happened.

EXAMPLE.

Quand j'aurai fini, je sortirai, | When I have done, I shall go out.

EXERCISE.

I had done yesterday at noon. I (went out) (as soon as) I finir midi sortir ind-à dès que had dined. As soon as Caesar had crossed the Rubicon, he had passer —
no longer to deliberate; be (was obliged) to conquer or to do plus
I had finished the task that he had imposed upon me, when tâche f. imposer f. * he came in. Those who had contributed most to his elevation —buer le plus
with the most eagerness to precipitate him (from it). I de acharnement en
shall shortly go into the country, where I intend to ne point tarder à à campagne se proposer de (collect plants), (in order to) (make myself perfect) in the handicap inf-1 pour se perfectionner
knowledge of botany. When I have done—
art. botanique f. achever ind-8 de
Syntax of the Verb.

reading the divine writings of Homer and Virgil, and my
mind has imbibed their beauties, I shall read the other
epic poets.

OF THE CONDITIONAL.

The *conditional* is the mood which expresses affirmation in a dependance on a condition; it has two tenses the *present* and the *past*.

The *present of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would be done or would happen on certain conditions.

**EXAMPLE.**

*Je serais votre affaire avant qu'il se soit peu, si elle dépendait uniquement de moi;* I would settle your business before long, if it only depended upon me.

The *past of the conditional* is that tense which expresses that a thing would have been done or would have happened at a time which no longer exists, dependent on certain conditions.

**EXAMPLE.**

*J'aurais ou j'eusse fait votre affaire si vous m'en aviez ou eussiez parlé,* I would have settled your business if you had mentioned it to me.

**EXERCISE.**

What would not be the felicity of man, if he always sought *quel* happiness in himself? I should be glad to see you harmonious and happy, and comfortable. A dupe to my imagination, I should have (been bewildered) (but for) you, in my search after *s'égare sans* art. *cherche* the truth. Enquire whether he would have consented to those conditions, in case he had thought himself able to fulfil them.

*de remanier*
OF THE IMPERATIVE.

The imperative is that mood which, besides affirmation, expresses command, exhortation, entreaty. It has only one tense, which expresses a present with respect to the action of commanding, and a future with respect to the thing enjoined.

EXERCISE.

Be not fond of praise, but seek virtue, which procures to it. Let us remember that unless virtue guide us, our choice must be wrong. Let us not be deceived by the first appearances of things; but let us take time to fix our judgment. Arbiters of the destinies of men, do good, if you wish to be happy; do good, if you wish that your memory should be honoured; do good, if you wish that heaven should open to you its eternal gates. Never forget that the truly free man is he, who, superior to all fears and all desires, is subject only to the gods and to reason.

N. B. In many verbs we may use a compound of the imperative to express a command to do something previously to some other thing; as ayez dîné avant que je revienne, have dined before I return.

OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE.

The subjunctive is that mood which expresses the affirmation as subjoined to something that precedes. This dependance appears from its forming sense in conjunction with the word which precedes, whilst it would form no sense without it. Je voudrois qu'il lût, forms sense, but qu'il lût alone and unconnected does not.
Syntax of the Verb.

This mood contains four tenses, the present or future, the imperfect, the preterit, and the pluperfect.

The present and the future of the subjunctive can only be distinguished by the sense: in this phrase, *il faut que je vous sois bien attaché pour venir vous voir par le temps qu'il fait*, I must have a great esteem for you to come and see you in such weather as this; *je sois expresses a present time; but in this, *je ne crois pas que vous obteniez eela de lui*, I do not think you will obtain that of him, *vous obtiendiez expresses a future and stands for vous obtiendrez.*

The imperfect, the preterit, and the pluperfect of the subjunctive express also a past or future according to circumstances: in this phrase, *soupconnez-vous qu'il ne le fit pas*, did you suspect he would not do it, *fit expresses a past; but in this, *je désirerois qu'il vit du monde*, I wish him to see company, *vit marks a future.*

**Exercise.**

Men must be (very much) blinded by their passions, not to acknowledge that they ought to pour 

art. 3 il 1 que 2 subj-1 bien aveuglé 

(pay one another) as parts of a whole: and as (the members of our body) (would do) if (every one) had a particular vitality. You asked him to come with us; but I doubt whether he will have that complaisance. I could not persuade myself that he was so vain as to aspire to that place.

subj-2 assé * pour — f.

Though every body says so, I do not believe that he is gone to Rome. (Is it possible) that he should let slip so good an opportunity of acquiring immortal glory? I could have wished that he had availed himself of his abode in the country, to perfect himself in the study of philosophy.

compagne pour se perfectionner art. — t.
Syntax of the Verb.

OF THE INFINITIVE.

The infinitive is that mood which expresses the affirmation indeterminately without either number or person.

It denotes of itself neither present, past, nor future; nevertheless it is considered as denoting those tenses, when it follows other verbs. The present always expresses a present, relative to the preceding verb; as je le vois, je le vis, je le verrai venir, I see, I saw, I shall see him come. The past always expresses a past, relative to the verb that precedes it; je crois, je croyois l’avoir vu venir, I think, I thought that I had seen him coming. To express a future the infinitive must be preceded by the infinitive of the verb devoir: as je croyois devoir y aller, I thought I was to go there.

Remark. The infinitive also expresses a future after the verbs promettre, espérer, compter, s’attendre, and menacer: as il promet de venir (qu’il viendra), he promises to come (that he will come); il menace de s’y rendre (qu’il s’y rendra); he threatens to go (that he will go) there.

EXERCISE.

We only shut our eyes to truth, because we fear to ne * art. art. que parce que de see ourselves as we are. We were yet far from the castle 2 nous 1 tel que ind-2 encore when one of our friends came to join us. I did not think I ind-3 * ind-2 * was to set out so soon. He promises every day that he devoir* art. pl. de * will amend, but I do not rely upon his promises.

* se corriger compter promesse f. pl.
Theys talk of a secret expedition; he hopes to be (in it). He on 2 — l 1 * en relées upon seeing you very soon to terminate compter * inf-1 au premier jour pour amicably his affair with you. You expected to take a d’amicable s’attendre ind-2 de faire journey this year, but your father has changed his mind.

voyage m. de * avis

He threatens to punish us severely, if we (fall again) into the de sévèrement retomber

same error.

faute.
Syntax of the Participle.

OF THE PARTICIPLE.

The participle is a part of the verb which partakes of the nature both of a verb and adjective; of a verb, as it has its signification and regimen; of an adjective, as it generally performs its function, that is, expresses the quality of a person or thing.

There are two participles, viz. the participle present and the participle past.

OF THE PARTICIPLE PRESENT.

The participle present always terminates in ant: as aimant, finissant, recevant, rendant.

RULE. The participle present is invariable; that is, it takes neither gender nor number, when it expresses an action.

We say, une montagne or des montagnes dominant sur des plaines immenses, a mountain or mountains commanding immense plains; un homme, des hommes, une femme, des femmes lisant, parlant, marchant, a man, men, a woman, women reading, speaking, walking. But when it expresses simply a quality, like an adjective, it takes both the gender and number of its substantive. So we say, un homme obligeant, an obliging man; une femme obligeante, an obliging woman; des tableaux parlants, speaking portraits; la religion dominante, the established religion; à la nuit tombante, at night-fall.

What grammarians call gerund, is nothing but the participle present, to which is prefixed the word en; on se forme l'esprit en lisant de bons livres, we form our minds by reading good books.

EXERCISE.

That mountain being very high, and thus commanding a vast extent of country, was very well calculated for our grande étendue pays ind-2 * propre d'observations. This woman is of a good disposition, obliging caractère m. every one, whenever she (has it in her power). They go tout le monde quand le pouvoir cringing before the great, that they may be * insolent to their ramper devant * afin de * inf-1 pl. vose.
Elect. The state of pure nature is the savage living in the desert, 
but living in his family, knowing his children, loving them, 
(famille f. connaître) (making use) of speech, and (making himself understood).

An agreeable languor imperceptibly (laying hold) of my 
senses, suspended the activity of my soul, and I (fell asleep).

sens suspendre ind-3 s'endormir ind-3

Time is a real blunderer, placing, replacing, ordering, disart.

1 vrai trombler mettre remettre ranger désordering, impressing, erasing, approaching, removing, and ranger imprimer effacer approcher étendre

making all things, good and bad; and almost always (impossindle presque

able to be known again).

mêconnaisable.

OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST:

The participle past has various terminations: as aimé, fini, reçu, ouvert, dissous, etc.

This participle may either agree with its subject or its regimen.

AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH ITS SUBJECT.

RULE I. The participle past, when it is accompanied by the auxiliary verb être, agrees with its subject in gender and number; that is, we add to it e, if the subject be feminine, and s, if it be in the plural.

EXAMPLES.

Mon frère est tombé, My brother is fallen down.
Mes frères sont tombés, My brothers are fallen down.
Ma sœur est tombée, My sister is fallen down.
Mes sœurs sont tombées, My sisters are fallen down.
La nuit sera bientôt passée, The night will soon be over.
Les spectacles sont fréquentés, The theatres are frequented.
Cette fleur est fort recherchée, This flower is much sought after.
Elle est fort estimée, They are very much esteemed.

EXERCISE.

Fire-arms were not known to the ancients. Ismael, 
art. arme à feu f. pl. ind-4 connu de Ismaël, 
the son of Abraham, is known among the Arabs, as (the man) 
— (le fils de Abraham) connu de Arabes celui
from whom they sprung, and circumcision has remained
être sorti art. f. être demeuré
(among them) as the mark of their origin. Heaven is that per-
leur art.
manent city, (into which) the just are to be received after this
— 2 cité f. 1 où pl. devoir * après
life. In Abraham’s time, the threatenings of the true God
de 2 art. 1 menace f. pl.
were dreaded by Pharaoh, king of Egypt; but, in the time of
ind-2 redouté de Pharaon
Moses, all nations were corrupted, and the world, which God
Moïse art. f. perverti
has made to manifest his power, was become a temple of
pour puissance f. devenu
idols. That dreadful crisis, which threatened the state with
terrible 2 crise f. 1 ind-2 de
instant destruction, was happily soon over. She is
prochaine 2 f. 1 ind-3 heureusement passé
come to bring us all kinds of refreshments. The sciences
* sorte f. pl. rafraîchissement f.
have always been protected by enlightened governments.
protégé art. éclairé 2 1

RULE II. The participle past, when it follows the verb avoir, never agrees with its subject.

EXAMPLES.
Mon frère a écrit, My brother has written.
Mes frères ont écrit, My brothers have written.
Ma sœur a écrit, My sister has written.
Mes sœurs ont écrit.
Les Amazones ont acquis de la The Amazons have acquired
célébrité.
J’ai contraint les soldats d’ I have forced the soldiers to
marcher,

REMARK. The participle of the verb être, and of all the neuter verbs which are conjugated with the auxiliary verb avoir, never vary. We say, il or elle a été, he or she has been; ils or elles ont été, they have been; il or elle a dormi, he or she has slept; ils or elles ont nui, they have annoyed.

EXERCISE.
The Romans successively triumphed over the most
Romain successivement 2 ind-4 1 de
warlike nations. Lapyridius relates that Adrian erected
beliqueux 2 1
Adrien érecte.
Syntax of the Participle.

to Jesus Christ some temples, which (were still de art. on encore 2
be seen) in his time. Happy those princes who have voir ind-3 de * art.
ever (made use) of their power but to do good! We user pouvoir que pour art.
have spent the whole day in tormenting ourselves. One
jours s. à inf-1 2 nous 1
has seldom seen a great stock of good sense in a man of rarement fonds m. sens
imagination. The errors of Descartes proved very useful — — * beaucoup servir

ind-4

, AGREEMENT OF THE PARTICIPLE PAST WITH ITS REGIMEN.

RULE I. The participle past always agrees with its regimen direct, when that regimen is placed before the participle, whether the auxiliary verb that accompanies it be avoir or être.

EXAMPLES.

Les écouteurs que j'ai eux ont fait de grands progrès,
Lucrèce s'est tuée,
Pai renvoyé les livres que vous m'aviez prêtés,
Que de soins je me suis donnés,
Quelle affaire avez-vous entreprise,
Quand la race de Cain se fut multipliée,
Ces yeux que n'ont émus ni soupirs, ni terreur,
Le Dieu Mercure est un de ceux que les anciens ont le plus multipliés,
The pupils whom I have had have made rapid progress.
Lucretia has killed herself.
I have sent back the books which you had lent me.
What pains I have taken.
What business have you undertaken?
When the race of Cain had multiplied.
Those eyes which neither sighs nor terror have moved.
The god Mercury is one of those whom the ancients have multiplied the most.

REMARK. The regimen put before the participle is, in general, one of these pronouns, que, me, te, se, le, la, les, nous and vous; but it is sometimes a noun joined to the pronoun quel, or preceded by the word of quantity que, signifying combien, how much, as may be seen in the before mentioned examples.

EXERCISE.

All the letters which I have received, confirm that import.
Syntax of the Participle.

rant news. The agitated life which I have led till
2 a. 1 agité 2 f. 1 mener jusqu’d
now, makes me sigh for retirement. The difficulties
présent soupirer après art. retraite f. f. pl.
which the academies (have proposed to one another) do not
se faire ind-4
seem easy to (be resolved). The sciences which you have
paroître âisé résoudre f. pl.
studied, will prove infinitely useful (to you). The death which
être
Lucretia (gave herself) has (made her immortal).

\textit{se donner} ind-4 \textit{immortaliser} ind-4

cities which those nations have (built for themselves) are
ville f. pl. 
people \textit{se bâtir} ind-4
but a collection of huts. The persons whom you have
ne que amas m. chaumières f. pl.
\textit{estrueindre} appear to me possessed of reason and taste. No-

plein pr.

thing can equal the ardour of the troops which I have \textit{se
f. pl.}

(setting off). The chimeras which she has got in her
\textit{chimère} f. pl. \textit{se mettre} * art.
head, (are beyond) all belief. What measures have I not
\textit{passer} croyance f. \textit{démarche} f. pl.
taken? What fortunes has not this revolution ruined? What
faire f. pl. \textit{renverser} que
tears has she not shed; what sights has she not beard? !
de f. pl. \textit{verser} m. pl. \textit{pousser}
The Amazons (made themselves) famous by their courage. The
\textit{faire} f. pl. \textit{se rendre} ind-4 \textit{célèbre}
city of London has (made itself), by its commerce, the metrop-

\textit{m.}

olis of the universe. I have thought her agitated by the furies.
le f. \textit{croire}

This day is one of those which they have \textit{consecrée} to tears.
m. pl. \textit{consacrer} art.
The language in which Cicero and Virgil have \textit{written}, will
\textit{langue} f. * Cicéron
live in their works. I could have wished to avoid entering
par \textit{ouvoir} * vouloir * éviter d’entrer
into those details, but I thought them necessary. The
\textit{m. croire ind-4} \textit{tribun} m. pl. ind-3 \textit{a}

tribunes demanded of Clodius the execution of the promise
\textit{faire leur}

\textit{de} which the consul Valerius had given them.

RULE II. The participle past never agrees with
its regime, either when that participle is without
Syntax of the Participle.

regimen direct, or when, having a regimen direct; that regimen is placed after it.

EXAMPLES.

La lettre dont je vous ai parlé, | The letter which I have mentioned to you.
La perte et les profits auxquels il a participé, | The loss and profits which he has shared.
Les académies se sont fait des objections, | The academies have proposed objections to one another.
Vous avez appris à ces personnes à dessiner, | You have taught these persons to draw.
L'urêtere s'est donné la mort, | Lucretia has put a period to her existence.

EXERCISE.

The persons whose visit you had announced to me, are not
l. pl. 1 art. f. 5 2 4 3
come. Men built cities. The Amazons
art. se bâtir ind-4 de art.
acquired great celebrity. I have forced the soldiers to
l. 4 ind-4 beaucoup de = contraindre
march. That woman has bestowed on herself fine gowns. Let-
ters and writing were invented to present speech.
4 art. écrire 5 on 1 a 2 3 pour peindre art.
She has cut two (of her) fingers. Titus has made his wife
se couper * doigt m. pl., rendre
mistress of his riches. I have given myself (a great deal of)
bien bien:
trouble. Commerce has made this city flourishing. They
art. peine f. art. m.
have made an appointment.
se donner * rendez-vous

RULE III. The participle past takes neither
gender nor number, either when the participle and the
auxiliary verb to which it is joined are used impersonally, or when the participle is formed by a verb,
which governs the nouns or pronouns preceding it.

EXAMPLES.

Les chaleurs excessives qu'il a fait cet été, ont beaucoup nuit à la récolte; | The excessive heats which we have had this summer, have done great injury to the harvest.
Quelle flècheuse aventure vous est-il arrivé? | What unpleasant adventure have you met with?
La maison que j'ai fait bâtir, | The house which I have ordered to be built.
Imitez les vertus que vous avez entendu louer, | Imitate the virtues which you have heard praised.
Les mathématiques que vous n'avez pas voulu que j'étudissasse, | The mathematics which you would not permit me to study.
Elle s'est laissée séduire, | She has suffered herself to be seduced.

REMARK. To make a right application of the second part of this rule, we ought to examine whether we can put the regimen immediately after the participle. As we cannot say, J'ai fait la maison, vous avez entendu les vertus, vous n'avez pas voulu les mathématiques, it follows that the regimen belongs to the second verb. Sometimes, however, the regimen may relate either to the participle or to the verb, according to the meaning of the speaker. For instance, we must say, Je l'ai vu peindre, I saw her picture drawn; and Je l'ai vue peindre, meaning, I saw her painting.

Sometimes it happens too, that, in sentences which seem to resemble each other, the regimen in one belongs to the participle, and in the other to the verb which follows it. For instance, we ought to answer this question, Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle actrice? Have you heard the new actress sing? Oui, je l'ai entendue chanter; yes, I have: but this question, Avez-vous entendu chanter la nouvelle ariette? Have you heard the new song? must be answered, Oui, je l'ai entendu chanter; yes, I have.

EXERCISE.
The great changes which (have taken place) in ad-
ministration, have astonished many people. The heavy
rains which we have had in the spring, have been
pluie f. pl. * il faire ind-4
the cause of many diseases. The scarcity which there was
maladie f. pl. disette f. ind-4
last winter, has afforded the opportunity of doing
art. dernier 2 donner occasion.
much good. What news has reached you? How many 
bons 
est-il-venu que de 
imprudent steps were taken on that occasion. How 
falses 
démarches s. pl. il s'est faire en 
many large ships have been built in England within these fifty 
gros 
it se construire ind-4 depuis 
years. The figures which you have learned to draw are of 
apprendre dessiner 
great beauty. We ought never to swerve from the 
un * s'éligner ind-1 * s'éligner 
good path which we have begun to follow. The measures 
mesure s. on 
règles f. 
which you advised me to adopt have not succeeded. 
conseiller ind-4 de prendre réussir 
The rule which I have begun to explain seems to me very 
règles f. 
expliquer sembler 
easy (to be understood). You see that I have not (been mistaken) 
saisir se tromper ind-4 
on the affairs which I had foreseen you would have in hand. 
prévoir que

CHAPTER VI.

OF THE ADVERB.

The Place of the Adverb.

RULE I. In the simple tenses, the adverb is generally placed after the verb, and, in the compound tenses, between the auxiliary and the participle.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme le plus éclairé est ordinairement celui qui pense le plus modestement de lui-même.

Avez-vous jamais vu un pédant plus absurde et plus vain? Have you ever seen a pedant more absurd and more vain?

The compound adverbs, and those which by custom have preserved the regimen of the adjectives from which they are derived, are placed always after the verb: as c'est à la mode, that is fashionable; il a agi conséquemment, he has acted consistently.

Those adverbs which denote time in an indeterminate manner are likewise placed after the verb.
Syntax of the Adverb.

EXAMPLES.

It eût fallu se lever plus matin. | It would have been necessary to rise earlier.
On a vu cela autrefois. | That has been seen formerly.

EXAMPLES.

Nous devons premiérement faire | We ought first to do our duty,
notre devoir, secondement | secondly enjoy lawful pleasures.
chercher les plaisirs permis; |
Aujourd’hui il fait beau, il | To-day it is fine, it will rain
pleuvra peut-être demain; | perhaps to-morrow.

2dly. The five adverbs which serve for interrogation, are always placed before the verb.

EXAMPLES.

Comment vous portez-vous ? | How do you do?
Où allez-vous? | Whither are you going?

RULE II. The adverb is always placed before the adjective which it modifies.

EXAMPLE.

C’est une femme fort belle, très- | She is a woman very beautiful,
sensible, et infiniment sage; | very sensible, and infinitely prudent.

RULE III. Adverbs of quantity and comparison, and the three adverbs of time, souvent, toujours, and jamais, are placed before the other adverbs.

Si poliment, | So politely.
Très-heureusement, | Very happily.
Le plus adroitement, | The most skilfully.
Ils ne seront jamais étroitement | They never will be intimately united.
unis,
Ils sont toujours ensemble, | They are always together.
C’est souvent à l’improvisé qu’il arrive, | He often comes unexpectedly.

The adverb souvent may, however, be preceded by an adverb of quantity or comparison; as si souvent, assez, souvent.
Remark. When adverbs of quantity and comparison meet together in a sentence, the following is the order which custom has established; *si peu, trop peu, bien peu, très-peu; beaucoup* trop, bien plus, bien davantage, beaucoup moins, tant mieux, tant pis, etc.

When bien is before another adverb, it means *very, much, etc.*: *bien assez, quite enough; bien moins, much less, frapper bien fort, to strike very hard; but when it is placed after the adverb, it signifies *well: as assez bien, pretty well; moins bien, not so well; fort bien, very well.*

The above rules have been sufficiently exemplified in the exercises on the Verbs.

CHAP. VII.

OF THE CONJUNCTION.

The conjunction *que* serves, 1st, to complete a comparison; *l'Asie est plus grande que l'Europe,* Asia is larger than Europe: 2dly, to express a restriction in negative sentences; *on ne parle que de la nouvelle victoire,* they talk of nothing but the new victory.

The conjunction *que* also serves to give more force and grace, more spirit and precision to sentences.

1st. In elliptical turns: *Qu'il vive, may he live; that is, Je souhaite qu'il vive, I wish he may live.*

2dly. When it is put for *à moins que, avant que,* *sans que:* *as cela ne finira pas qu'il ne vienne,* there will be no end to it unless he come.

3dly. When it is used instead of *dès que, aussitôt que,* *si:* *qu'il fasse le moindre excès, il est malade;* if he commits the least excess, he is ill.

4thly. When it is put for *jusqu'à ce que,* *as attendez qu'il vienne,* wait till he come.

5thly. When for *pourquoi:* *as que ne se corrige-t-il?* why does he not reform?

*Beaucoup* is not, as the English *much,* susceptible of being modified by any adverb preceding; thus, *très-beaucoup, trop-beaucoup* would be barbarisms.
Syntax of the Conjunction.

EXERCISE.

We have every thing to fear from his wisdom, even more than from his power. What men style

encore ce que art. appeler

greatness, power, profound policy, is in the eyes of

profond politique à

God only misery, weakness, and vanity. May

they understand, at last, that without internal

comprendre avec soi-même 2

peace there is no happiness. May she be as happy

art. 1 point de

as she deserves to be. Never write before you have

de le

thoroughly examined the subject which you propose

sous tous ses faces 2 se proposer

to treat. Let him but hear the least noise, his terrified imagi-
de trahir * effrayé

nation presents to him nothing but

monsters. Do

* * ne que de art.

not sitt this question, till I can (be your

approufondir ne subj-1 vous mettre

guide). Do not go out till your brother comes in. Why

sur la vie ne rentrer *
does he not (take advantage) of his youth, in order to acquire

profiter

the knowledge he wants?

connoissance pl. dont avoir besoin.

6thly. When it is used instead of comme, or parce

que, as: méchant qu'il est, wicked as he is.

7thly. When it is put for combien, and then it de-
botes admiration and the sudden emotions of the

soul, as: que Dieu est grand! how great is the Al-
mighty! que je les hais! how I hate them!

Another very frequent use of this conjunction is to

put it for comme; parce que, puisque, quand, quoique, si, etc., when, two phrases beginning with these words

others are added under the same regimen, by means

of the conjunction et, as: si l'on aimoit son pays, et

qu'on en désirât sincèrement sa gloire, on se conduiroit
de manière, etc.; if we loved our country, and sincerely

wished its glory, we should act so as, etc.
Syntax of the Conjunction.

EXERCISE.

Full as he was of his prejudices, he would not acknowledge *Rempli* ind-2 *préjugé* ind-3 *convenir de* (any thing). Full of self-love (as he is), expect nothing *vion* 1 3 2 *de* good (from him). *How beautiful is that cultivated nature!* *en* 1 6 5 2 4 3 by the care of man *how it is brilliantly and richly* adorned! *par* f. *pompeusement*

Had profound philosophers presided at the formation of *si* *de* ind-6 *d* art. languages, and *had* they carefully examined the elements of *langue* avec *soin* subj-4 — m. art. *speech, not only in their relations (to one another) but also discourse non* *entre eux* encore in themselves, it is not (to be doubted) that languages *en* m. *douteux* art. *ne* would present principles more simple, and at the *offrir* subj-2 de art. *same time more luminous."

GOVERNMENT OF CONJUNCTIONS.

The conjunctions which unite sentences to one another, are followed either by the infinitive, the indicative, or the subjunctive.

Those that are followed by an infinitive, are: 1st. Such as are distinguished from prepositions, only by being followed by a verb, as: *il faut se reposer après avoir travaillé*, one ought to rest after having laboured. 2dly. Those which have the preposition *de* after them, as: *je travaille afin de vous surpasser*, I work that I may surpass you.

EXERCISE:

They were going to spend a few days in town, *ne* *ind-2* *passer* *quelques* d art. only that they might return *pour* *se retrouver* inf-1 *dans* their charming solitude. Many persons work only (in order to) *acquérir* consideration and riches, but the honest *de art.* pr. art. 2 *et* humane man spends so much time in study, only to *sensiblement* 3 1 *ne* employer *de* *à art.* *que pour*
Syntax of the Conjunction. 267

be useful to his fellow-creatures. I unmask to you the plot
semblables dévoiler trame f.
which your enemies have planned in secret, in order
ouvrir art. ténèbres f. pl.
to warn you against their artifices.
prémunir

Those that govern the indicative are, bien entendu
que, à condition que, à la charge que, de même que,
ainsi que, aussi bien que, autant que, non plus que,
outre que, parce que, attendu que, vu que, puisque, lors-
que, pendant que, tandis que, durant que, tant que,
peut-être que; to which may be added, comme, comme
si, quand, pourquoi, etc. These conjunctions are fol-
lowed by the indicative, because the principal sen-
tence which they unite with the incidental one, ex-
presses the affirmation in a direct, positive and inde-
pendent manner.

Remark. There are six conjunctions, the use of
which varies according to the meaning expressed by
the principal sentence, viz. sinon que, si ce n’est que,
de sorte que, en sorte que, tellement que, de manière que
We say, je ne lui ai répondu autre chose, sinon que j’ai-
vois exécuté ses ordres; I made him no other answer,
but that I had executed his orders because the first
verb expresses a positive affirmation. But we ought
to say, je ne veux autre chose, sinon que vous travailliez
avec plus d’ardeur; I desire nothing else, but that you
should work with greater ardour.

Exercise.

When you have a more extensive knowledge of geometry
ind-7 2 1 art. f.
and algebra, I shall give you a few lessons in astronomy
pr. art. algèbre f. * quelque de
and optics. Form your mind, heart, and taste,
pr. optique pron. pron.
while you are still young. Do not keep truth a prisoner,
encore retenir art. * captif
though you should (draw upon you) a cloud of enemies.
quand devoir cond-1 s’attirer nuée f.
I will give you this fine picture upon condition that you
tableau m. à
keep it as a testimony of my friendship.
conserver témoignage m.
The conjunctions which govern the subjunctive are, soit que, sans que, pour que, quoique, jusqu'à ce que, encore que, à moins que, pourvu que, supposé que, au cas que, avant que, non pas que, afin que, de peur que, de crainte que, and a few others. They are followed by the subjunctive, because they always imply doubt, wish, ignorance.

**EXERCISE.**

You know too well the value of time, to make connaître pris m. art. pour que lire 2
it necessary to tell you to (make a good use of) it. Study only il 1
de de bien employer
great models, lest those which are but middling
art. de peur que * médiocre ne
should spoil your taste, before it be entirely formed. 1
gâter subj-1
(make not the least doubt) that your method will succeed,
ne douter nullement 1. ne subj-1
provided it be well known. Several phenomena of nature
art. are easy (to be explained,) supposing the principle of
(by the active) gravitation to be true.
art. 2

**PROMISCUOUS EXERCISE ON THE NINE PARTS OF SPEECH.**

**The Good Mother.**

What a fine morning! said the amiable Charlotte to her
matiné f. ind-3
brother George. Come, let us go into the garden and enjoy
sing. * inf-4
the magnificent sight of rich and abundant nature.
spectacle m. 1 une 2 fertile 3 1
We will gather there the freshest and sweetest flowers.
cueilir y frais 2 art. adv. odorant 3 f. pl. 1
We will make a nosegay which we will offer to mamma. You
bouquet m maman. sing.
know she loves flowers. This attention will give her plea-
savoir que
sure. Ah! brother, it will obtain us a smile, a caress, perhaps
mon f. valoir sourire m. f.
even a kiss. Ah! sister, replied George, your proposal
baiser m. ma répondre ind-3 sing. projet
delights me; let us run, let us fly, that we may offer her
enchanter courir voter après de * *

Promiscuous Exercise.

(when she rises) this tribute of our gratitude and our love.

à son lever hommage — pr.

Full of this idea, Charlotte and George hastened

plein se hâter ind-3 de se rendre

into the garden. Charlotte gathered violets, jess.

samine, and young rose-buds which (had but just begun)

pr. de 2 bouton m. 1 ne commencer que ind-2

to open their purple cups, while George prepared

ent’ouvrir de pourpre 2 calice 1 ind-2

green sprigs of myrtle and thyme, designed de art. verdoyant 2 jet m. 1 myrte pr. thym destiné
to support the flowers. Never had these amiable children

soutenir 1 ind-2 3 2

worked with (so much) zeal and ardour. Satisfaction and

travailler tant de sède pr. art. f. art.

pleasure were painted in all their features, sparkled in their eyes,

ind-2 peint trait m. pêtiler

and added still to their beauty.

While they (were employing themselves) (in this manner),

s’occuper ind-2 ainsi

their mother, who had seen them in the garden, came to join

ind-3 * joindre

them. (As soon as) they perceived her, they flew to her, and

dès que ind-3 ind-3 elle

said: Ah! mamma, how glad we are to see you! how

lui que aise 2 1 de

(impatient we were) for this pleasure. In the

il tardait à notre impatience d’avoir ce

pleasing expectation (of it) we (were preparing) this nosegay for

doux attente f. * ind-2

you. What satisfaction should we have had in presenting

f. ne pas à affir

it to you! Look at these rose-buds, these violets, this jessamine,

voir *

this myrtle, and this thyme. Well, we designed them for

Eh bien destiner *

you. These flowers, coming from us, would have been dear to

cher

you. When you wore them, you would have said: My

En * porter ind-2

children (were thinking) of me while I slept. I am

s’occuper ind-3 dormir ind-2

always as present to their minds as to their hearts. They love

me, and it is by giving me every day new proofs of their

co en art. pl. de présom f.
PROMISCUOUS EXERCISE.

affection, that they acknowledge the care I have taken
reconnaître soin m. pl. que
of them in their childhood, and all the marks of tenderness que
I am unceasingly giving them.
ne cesser de ind-1,

My dear children, replied the mother, embracing
répondre ind-3 en embrasser
them, how charming you render all my days! your
quel charmè répondre sur
gratitude, your tenderness, your attention to me, make me
pour
forget my former misfortunes, and open my heart again to
oublier ancien malheur m. rouvrir
the soft impressions of pleasure. May Heaven
f. art. Pouvoir subj-1 art.
continue to bless my labours! May it be your guide and your
continuer de soin Pouvoir
support in the career which (will soon be opened) to you!
soutien carrière f. aller ind-1 s'ouvrir devant
may it complete its kindness by preserving you
mettre le comble à bienfait pl. en garantir inf-3
from the dangers to which you cannot fail to be soon
* ne pas tarder ind 7 *
exposed! Alas! I shudder (at them) beforehand, my dear chil-
frémir en d'avance
dren; the moment is come when you must enter the world.
ou devoir dans
Your persons, your birth, and your riches call you there,
figure sing. naissance appeler y
and insure you a distinguished rank (in it). I cannot always be
assurer 2 m. 1 y ind-7
your guide. Young and inexperienced, you will find
sans expérience aller ind-1 inf-1
yourselves surrounded by every kind of temptation. (Every
entouré sort f. séduction tout
thing), even vice, presents itself there under an
jusque à art. m. offrir y sous * de art.
agreeable form, and almost always in the shape of pleasure,
2 pl. 1 sous image art.
which has (so many) attractions for youth. They will try
tant de attrait f. art. jeunesse f. On chercher
to mislead you, to corrupt you; they (will make use of) artifice,
edégarer employeur art.
raillery, and even ridicule, and, if necessary,
art. = même 2 art. —1. il est
they will assume even the mask of virtue. If you
prendre jusque à masque m. art.
abandon yourselves to first impressions, you are lost. The poison
so laisser aller
of example will insinuate itself into your hearts, will corrupt
art. se glisser altérer
the innocence and purity (of them), and will substitute
en de art.
vioin passions for the mild affections which have hitherto
déchirant 2 f. pl. 1 à doux
formed your happiness.
faire.
Do not imagine, my dear children, that in placing before your
croire en mettre sous
eyes a picture of the dangers of the world, my intention
art. tableau m.
is to prohibit you every kind of pleasure. God forbid,
subj-1 interdire espèce f. à ne plaire
pleasure is necessary to man; without it, our
subj-1 art. lui
existence would be dreadful; (and therefore) Providence
affreux aussi art. f.
always attentive to our wants, has multiplied the sources of
besoin t-elle
it both in and out of ourselves. But, in tasting the pleasures
* en nous nous en goûter
of the world, never (abandon yourselves) to them. Take care
se livrer y Avoir
that they do not govern you; know how to quit them, the
dominer savoir * * de
moment they have acquired (too much) empire over you. It
que prendre ind-7 trop de Ce
is the only way to enjoy with delight that exquisite plea-
moyen de volupté de délicieux 2
sure which we can only find in ourselves, and which has its
1 en
source in an upright and pure conscience. Ah! why cannot I
dans droit 2 3 f. 1. que
give you all my experience? why cannot you, like me, read the
dans
depths of the heart? with what astonishment would you often
abîme pl.
see chagrin, agitation and: troubles, disguised under
art. —m. art. art. —m. déguisé sous
the appearance of joy and tranquillity; hatred,
aparence pl. art. pr. art. calme art. f.
and envy concealed under the air of confidence and
art. f. caché art. confiance f. pr. art.
friendship; indifference and selfishness, affecting the most
art. égoïsme
Promiscuous Exercise.

lively interest; the most dreadful and perfidious plots

vif 2 art. adv. 3 crime f. pl. 1
contrived deliberately in the dark; in a word, the

sang froid et ténèbres f. pl. en
most odious vices endeavouring to show themselves under the

features of (their opposite) virtues! In the world there

traits qui leur être opposé 2 art. 1 is but one moving principle; that is, self-interest.

ne que seul mobile m. ce art. personnel 2 1 To that, every action refers; every thing tends to that

C'est à lui que art. pl. se rapporter lui as to its end. I know very well, my dear children, that your

fin f. savoir hearts will not be infected by this vice. The sentiments of universal
de 2 benevolence with which I (have always) inspired you,
bienveillance 1 * ne point cesser ind-4 de inf-1
and of which I have seen you give (so many) proofs. (remove

tant de prouve remove already every fear) (I might have) upon that subject: but will

d'avance me sur point m. you not yield to other vices not less dangerous? Cruel idea!
de 2 non f. terrible uncertainty! If this misfortune were to happen.
affreux f. * * arriver ind-2 ah! my dear children, instead of being the joy and consola-
at. f. tion of my life, you would be the torment, the shame, and the

honte f. disgrace (of it). You would poison my days, and you

opprobre en empoisonner would plunge a dagger into the very bosom which gave

porter art. mort f. même 2 sein m. 1. ind-2 you life. But whither is my tenderness for you hurrying me?
at. où * emporter

Non, my children, no, I have nothing to fear, you love me (too

Non much) to wish to afflict me so cruelly; and I shall have the

trop pour vouloir pleasure, (as long as). I live, of seeing you walk in the ways

pleasure, tant que ind-7 sentier of honesty and virtue.

art. honneur pr. art.
PART III.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES OR IDIOMS.

CHAP. I.

OF THE SUBSTANTIVE.

The substantive performs three functions in language, that of the subject, the regimen, or the apostrophe.

The substantive is the subject whenever it is that of which something is affirmed. When we say, l'oiseau vole, the bird flies; le lion ne vole pas, the lion does not fly; the substantives oiseau and lion are subjects, because it is affirmed of the first that it flies, and of the second that it does not fly.

It is to the substantive as the subject that every thing relates in a sentence. In the following, un homme juste et ferme n’est ébranlé ni par les clameurs d’une populace injuste, ni par les menaces d’un fier tyran; quand même le monde brisé s’écroulerait, il en serait frappé, mais non pas ému: the adjectives juste and ferme modify the subject homme, and all the rest modify un homme juste et ferme.

EXERCISE.

1. A king, who is inaccessible to men, is inaccessible to truth also, and passes his life in a ferocious, inhuman grandeur: as he is continually afraid of being deceived, he always unavoidsibly is 1 and deserves to be so; besides, he is at the mercy of slanderers and tale-bearers, a base 2 malicious thing 1, who feed upon venom, and invent mischief rather than cease to injure.

   1. Is inaccessible also, l'est aussi; ferocious, sauvage; inhuman, et farouche; as he is afraid, enignant; is, l'est; to be so, de l'être; besides, de plus; tale-bearers, rapporteur; tribe, nation; feed upon, se nourrir de; mischief, mal; to injure, de mauvaise.
274 Particular Rules of the Substantive.

2. The good which a man does is never lost; if men forget it, God remembers and rewards it.

2. Good, bien; a man, on; remember, s’en souvenir.

The substantive forms the regimen when it is governed by another word; now, a substantive may be governed either by another substantive, by an adjective, by a verb, or by a preposition, as: la loi de Dieu, the law of God; utile à l’homme, useful to man; aimer son prochain, to love one’s neighbour; chez son père, at his father’s.

In French a substantive cannot be governed by another substantive, but by the help of a preposition. This preposition is generally de, as: la difficulté de l’entreprise, the difficulty of the undertaking; but sometimes, also, à and pour are made use of, as: l’abandon à ses passions, the giving way to one’s passions; le goût pour le plaisir, the love of pleasure.

GENERAL RULE. When two substantives are found together, the one governing, the other governed, the former is generally placed first.

EXAMPLE.

La beauté des sentiments, la violence des passions, la grandeur des événements, et les succès miraculeux des grandes épées des héros, tout cela m’entraine comme une petite fille.—Sévigné.

The beauty of sentiments, the violence of passions, the grandeur of events, and the prodigious successes of the huge swords of heroes, all these transport me like a little girl.

REMARK. This order is not followed in English in these two instances; 1st. when two substantives are joined by an s and an apostrophe, placed after the first, thus, ’s, as: the king’s palace. 2d. When the two substantives form a compound word, as: silk-stockings.

EXERCISE.

1. The silence of the night, the calmness of the sea, the trembling 2 light 1 of the moon diffused over the surface of the water,

1. Trembling, tremblant; diffused, répandu; dim, sombre;
Particular Rules of the Substantive.

and the dim asure of the sky besprinkled with glittering 2 stars 1, 
served to heighten the beauty of the scene.

2. Nothing was heard but the warbling of birds, or the soft 
breath of the zephyrs sporting in the branches of the trees, or 
the murmurs of a lucid rill falling from the rocks, or the songs 
of the young swains who attended Apollo.

3. A smiling boy was, at the same time, caressing a lap-dog, 
which is his mother's favourite, because it pleases the child.

4. There are several gold and silver mines in this beautiful 
country; but the inhabitants, simple, and happy in their 
simplicity, do not even deign to * reckon gold and silver among 
their riches.

besprinkled, parseme; with, de; heighten, rehausser; scene, 
spectacle.

2. Nothing but, on ne que, breath, haleine; sporting, qui 
se jouer, ind 2; branches, rameaux; lucid rill, eau claire; 
failing, (which f-fil) ; swains, berger; attended, suivre, ind-2.

3. Smiling boy, enfant d'un air riant; was caressing, caresser, 
ind-2; lap-dog, bichon; please, amuser.

4. Reckon, compter.

The substantive is an apostrophe, whenever it is the 
person or thing addressed, as: rois, peuples, terre, mer, 
et vous, cieux, écoutez-moi! In this sentence, the sub-
stantives rois, peuples, terre, mer and cieux, are an 
apostrophe.

Remark. It is only when the language is highly or-
atorical that the speech is directed to inanimate ob-
jects.

Example of a Beautiful Apostrophe.

O Hippias! Hippias! I shall never see thee again*! O my 
dear Hippias! it is I, cruel and * relentless, who taught thee 
to despise death. Cruel gods! ye prolonged my life, only 
that I might see the death of Hippias! O my dear child, whom 
I had brought up with so much care, I shall see thee no more.
O dear shade, summon me to the banks of the Styx, the light 
grows hateful to me; it is thou only, my dear Hippias, whom 
I wish to see again. Hippias! Hippias! O my dear Hippias!
I live but to pay the last duty to thy ashes.

Never, ne plus; relentless, moi impitoyable; taught, appre-
prendre, ind-1; prolonged, prolonger, ind-1; only that I 
might, pour me faire; brought up, nourrir, ind-4; with so 
much care, et qui me coutier, ind-4, tant de soins; shade, ombr; 
summon, appeller: to, sur; banks, rive; grows hateful été 
odieux; I live but to, ne vivre encore que pour; pay, rendre-
asker, condre:
Particular Rules of the Article.

CHAP. II.

OF THE ARTICLE.

General Principle. The article is to be used before all substantives common, taken in a determinate sense, unless there be another word performing the same office; but it is not to be used before those that are taken in an indeterminate sense.

Cases in which the Article is to be used.

Rule I. The article necessarily accompanies all substantives common, which denote a whole species of things or determinate things.

Examples.

L'homme se repait trop souvent | Man too often feeds on chimeras.
des chimères,

Les hommes à imagination sont toujours malheureux, | Men of fanciful dispositions are always unhappy.

L'homme dont vous parlez est très-instruit, | The man you speak of is very learned.

In the first example, the word homme is taken in its fullest sense; it denotes a collective universality. In the second, les hommes à imagination denotes a particular class only. In the third, l'homme denotes but one individual, it being restricted by the incidental proposition dont vous parlez.

Remark. In English, the article is not used before substantives taken in a general sense, as: men of genius; women of sound understanding.

Exercise:

1. The moment, elegance, the most visible image of fine taste; appears, it is universally admired. Men differ respecting the other constituent parts of beauty, but they all unite without hesitation in acknowledging the power of elegance.

2. Men of superior genius 2; while I they * see 3 the rest of

1. The moment, du moment que; fine, délicat; appears, se montrer; is, elle est; differ respecting, différer sur; constituent; (which constitute); hésitation, hésiter; in, pour.
Particular Rules of the Article.

mankind painfully *struggling to comprehend obvious truths* 1, glance themselves *through* the most remote consequences, like lightning through a path that cannot be traced. 

3. The man who lives under an habitual sense of the divine presence keeps up a perpetual cheerfulness of temper, and enjoys every moment the satisfaction of thinking himself in company with the dearest and best of friends.

2. While, tandis que; struggling, se tourmenter; obvious, qui s'offrent d'elles-mêmes; glance, ils pénètrent en un instant; lightning, foudre f.; through, traverse; path, espace; that, qu'on; be traced, mesurer.

3. Under, dans; sense, conviction; keep up, conserver; perpetual, constant, cheerfulness, gaîté; temper, caractère; enjoys, jour de; of thinking, se croire; in, dans; with, de.

RULE II. The article is put before substantives taken in a sense of extract, or denoting only a part of a species; but it is omitted, if they be preceded by an adjective, or a word of quantity.

EXAMPLES.

Du pain et de l'eau me servent le plaisir. Some bread and water would please me.

Je vis hier des savans qui ne pensent pas comme vous. I yesterday saw some learned men, who do not think as you do.

Voici de beaux tableaux. There are beautiful pictures.

J'ai acheté hier beaucoup de livres. I bought yesterday many books.

Que de livres j'ai acheté hier! How many books I bought yesterday.

REMARK. Among the words of quantity must be reckoned plus, moins, pas, point and jamais.

EXAMPLES.

Il n'y a jamais plus de deux mètres. There never was more learning.

Il y a moins d'habitans à Paris qu'à Londres. There are fewer inhabitants in Paris than in London.

Je ne manque pas d'amis. I do not want for friends.

EXCEPTION. Bien is the only word of quantity which is followed by the article.

EXAMPLES.

Il a bien de l'esprit. He has a great deal of wit.

Elle a bien de la grâce. She is very graceful.
Particular Rules of the Article.

Remark. The sense of extract is marked in English by the word some or any, either expressed or understood, which answers to quelque, a partitive adjective, and consequently to du, des, which are elegantly used instead of quelque.

The expressions, des petits-maîtres, des sages-femmes, des petits-pâtés, etc. are not exceptions, because, in such cases, the substantives are so far united with the adjectives, as to form but one and the same word. We must likewise say, le propre des belles actions, les sentiments des anciens philosophes, etc. because, in expressions of this kind, the substantives are taken in a general sense.

Exercise.

1. We could not cast our eyes on either shore, without seeing opulent cities, country houses agreeably situated, lands yearly 2 covered 1 with a golden 2 harvest 1, meadows abounding in flocks and herds, husbandmen bending under the weight of the fruits, and shepherds who made 1 the echoes 5 around them 6 repeat 2 the sweet sounds 3 of their pipes and flutes 4.

2. Provence and Languedoc produce oranges, lemons, figs, olives, almonds, chestnuts, peaches, apricots and grapes, of an uncommon sweetness.

3. The man who has never seen this pure light, is as blind as one who is born blind; he dies without having seen anything; at most, he perceives but glimmering and false lights, vain shadows, and phantoms that have nothing of reality.

4. Among the Romans, those who were convicted of having used illicit or unworthy means to obtain an employ, were excluded from it for ever.

5. Those who govern are like the celestial 2 bodies 1, which have great splendour and no rest.

1. Could, pouvoir, ind-2; our, art; seeing, apercevoir; yearly, tous les ans; covered with, qui se couvrir de, ind-2; abounding in, remplis de: flocks and herds, troupes; husbandmen, laboureur; bending, qui étoient accablés; weight, poids; shepherds, bergers; pipes, chalumeau; the echoes, aux échos; around them, d’alentour.

3. Who is born blind, avengle-né; without having, n’avoir jamais, ind-3; any thing, rien; at most, tout au plus; percevez, apercevoir; glimmering, sombre; lights, lueur; reality, réalité.

4. Used, employer; illicit or unworthy means, moyen illicite or voie indigne, pl.; mere, ind-2; from it, en.

6. Great, beaucoup de; splendour, éclat; no rest, (that have no rest) repos.
6. What beauty, sweetness, modesty, and, at the same time, 
what mildness and greatness of soul!

7. Themistocles, in order to ruin Aristides, made use of many 
artifices, which would have covered him with infamy in the eyes 
of posterity, had it not the eminent services which he rendered 
his country blotted out that stain.

8. The consequences of great passions are blindness of mind 
and depravity of heart.

9. Noblemen should never forget that their high birth imposes 
great duties on them.

6. What, que de.
7. Ruin, perdre; made use of many, employer bien; artifices, 
manœuvres; covered, cond-3; with, de; infamy, opprobre; in, 
à; had, si; rendered, ind-3, à; blotted out, effacer, cond-3; 
stain, tache.
8. Of mind, of heart, de art.
9. Noblemen, gentilhomme; should, devoir, ind-1.

RULE III. The article is put before proper names 
of countries, regions, rivers, winds and mountains.

EXAMPLES.

La France, a les Pyrénées et la Méditerranée au sud, la 
Suisse et la Savoie à l’est, les Pays-bas au nord, et l’océan 
l’ouest;

La Tamise, le Rhône, l’aquilon, les Alpes, le Cantal;

France is bounded on the 
south by the Pyrenees and 
the Mediterranean, on the 
est by Switzerland and Savoy, on the north by the 
Netherlands, and on the west 
by the ocean.

The Thames, the Rhone, the 
north wind, the Alps, the 
Cantal.

REMARK. We say, by apposition, le mont Parnasse, 
le mont Valérien, etc. le fleuve Don, etc. But we say, 
la montagne de Tarare, etc. la rivière de Seine, etc. 
We ought not to say le fleuve du Rhône, but simply 
le Rhône.

EXERCISE.

1. Europe is bounded on the north by the Frozen Ocean; on 
the south, by the Mediterranean sea, which separates it from 
Africa; on the east, by the continent of Asia; on the west by

1. Bounded, borné; on, à; frozen ocean, mer glaciale, l.; 
south, sud or midi; Mediterranean sea, Méditerranee, l.; east
Particular Rules of the Article.

the Atlantic Ocean. It contains the following 2 states 1: on the north, Norway, Sweden, Denmark, and Russia; in the middle, Poland, Prussia, Germany, United Provinces, the Netherlands, France, Switzerland! Bohemia, Hungary, the British Isles; on the south, Spain, Portugal, Italy, Turkey in Europe.

2. The principal rivers in Europe are: the Wolga, the Don or Tanais, and the Borysthenes or Neiper, in Muscovy; the Danube, the Rhine, and the Elbe, in Germany; the Vistula or Wesel, in Poland; the Loire, the Seine, the Rhône, and the Garonne in France; the Ebro, the Tagus, and the Douro, in Spain; the Po, in Italy; the Thames, and the Severn in England; and the Shannon in Ireland.

3. The principal mountains in Europe are the Daarne Fields between Norway and Sweden; Mount Kaspel between Poland and Hungary; the Pyrenean Mountains between France and Spain; the Alps, which divide France and Germany from Italy.

4. The Bleak north wind never blows here, and the heat of summer is tempered by the cooling 2 zephyrs 1, which arrive to refresh the air towards the middle of the day.

est or orient; west, ouest or occident; Norway, Norvège; Sweden, Suède: Denmark, Danemark; Russia, Russie; Poland, Pologne; Prussia, Prusse; Germany, Allemagne; Netherlands, Pays-Bas; Switzerland, Suisse; Bohemia, Bohême; Hungary, la Hongrie; British Isles, îles Britanniques; Spain, Espagne; Turkey in, Turquie de.

2. Muscovy, Moscovie; Vistula, Vistule, f; Loire, f.; Seine, f.; Rhône, m.; Garonne, f.; Ebro, Ebre, m.; Tagus, Tago, m.; Thames, Tamise, f.; Severn, Saverne, f.

3. Pyrenean Mountains, Pyrénées.

4. Bleak, rigoureuse; north wind, aquillon; heat, ardeur; cooling, rafraîchissant; arrive, venir; to refresh, adoucir.

Exceptions. The article is not used before the names of countries:

1st. When those countries have the names of their capitals: as Naples est un pays délicieux, Naples is a delightful country.

2dly. When those names are governed by the preposition en: as il est en France, he is in France; il est en Espagne, he is in Spain.

3dly. When those names are governed by some preceding noun, and have the sense of an adjective: as vins de France, French wines; noblesse d'Angleterre, the English nobility.
Particular Rules of the Article.

4thly. Lastly, when we speak of those countries as of places we come or are set off from: as je viens de France, I come from France; j'arrive d'Italie, I am just arrived from Italy. But, in this case, when we speak of the four parts of the world, the present practice favours the use of the article: as je viens de l'Amérique, j'arrive de l'Asie.

EXERCISE.

1. *Naples* may be called a paradise, from its beauty and fertility. From this country 2 some suppose 1 Virgil took the model of the Elysian 2 Fields 1.
2. I have been prisoner in Egypt, as a *Phænecian;* under that name I have long suffered, and under that name I have been set at liberty.
3. He has received French and Spanish wines, Italian silks, Provence oil, and English wool.
4. We set sail from Holland, to go to the Cape of Good Hope.
5. I was but just arrived from Russia, when I had the misfortune to lose my father.
6. I had set off from America, when my brother arrived there.

1. *From,* à cause de; *from this country,* que c'est là où; *some suppose,* quelques personnes penser.
2. *Prisoner,* captif; *under that name,* c'est sous ce nom que (both alike).
4. *Set sail,* partir; *to go,* se rendre.
5. *I was but just,* ne faire que de.
6. *Set off,* partir; *there,* y.

The article is also used before the names of countries, either distant or little known; la Chine, China; le Japon, Japan; le Mexique, Mexico; and before those which have been formed from common nouns; le Havre, le Perche, la Flèche, etc.

REMARK. In English the article is generally omitted before names of countries.

CASES IN WHICH THE ARTICLE IS NOT USED.

RULE I. The article is omitted before nouns common, when, in using them, we do not say anything on the extent of their signification.
Particular Rules of the Article.

EXAMPLES.

Le sage n'a ni amour ni haine,  The wise man has neither love nor hatred.

Il ont renversé religion, morale, gouvernement, sciences, beaux-arts, en un mot tout ce qui fait la gloire et la force d'un état; They have overturned religion, morality, government, sciences, fine arts, in a word, every thing which constitutes the glory and strength of a state.

Hence the article is not employed before nouns.

1st. When they are in the form of a title or an address.

EXAMPLES.

Préface,  Preface.
Livre premier,  Book the first.
Chapitre dix,  Chapter the tenth.
Il demeure rue Piccadilly, quartier St. James;  He lives in Piccadilly, St. James's.

2dly. When they are governed by the preposition en.

EXAMPLES.

Regarder en pitié,  To look with pity.
Vivre en roi,  To live like, or, as a king.

3dly. When they are joined to the verbs avoir or faire, with which they form only one idea.

EXAMPLES.

Avoir peur,  To be afraid.
Faire pitié,  To excite pity.

4thly. When they are used as an apostrophe or interjection.

EXAMPLE.

Courage, soldats, tenez ferme;  Courage, soldiers, stand firm.

5thly. When they serve to qualify a noun that precedes them.

EXAMPLES.

Il est quelquefois plus qu'un homme,  He is sometimes more than a man.
Particular Rules of the Article

Son Altesse Royale le Duc d'York, Prince du sang royal of York, Prince of the blood royal of England.

6thly. The article is not put before the substantive beginning an incidental sentence, which is opposed to what has been said.

EXAMPLES.

Tous les peuples de la terre ont une idée plus ou moins développée d'un Étre suprême ; preuve évidente que le péché original n'a pas tout-à-fait obscurci l'entendement : All the nations of the earth have an idea more or less clear of a Supreme Being; an evident proof that original sin has not totally obscured the understanding.

7thly. When they are governed by the words genre, espèce, sorte, and such like.

EXAMPLES.

Sorte de fruit, A sort of fruit.
Genre d'ouvrage, A kind of work.

EXERCISE.

1. The highways are bordered with laurels, pomegranates, jessamines, and the other trees which are always green and always in bloom. The mountains are covered with flocks, which yield a fine wool in great request with all the known nations of the world.

2. The fleets of Solomon, under the conduct of the Phoenicians, made frequent voyages to the land of Ophir and Tharsis (of the kingdom of Sophala, in Ethiopia), whence they returned at the end of three years, laden with gold, silver, ivory, precious stones, and other kinds of merchandise.

3. Costly furniture is not allowed there, nor magnificent attire, nor sumptuous feasts, nor gilded palaces.

4. We contemplated with pleasure the extensive fields covered with yellow ears of corn, the rich gifts of bounteous Ceres.

1. Highways. chemin: with laurels, de lauriers; pomegranates, grenadiers; in bloom, fleuri; yield, fournir; wool, laine, pl. in great request, recherché; with, de; of the world.  
2. Made, ind-2; whence, d'où; returned, revenir; end, bout; laden, chargé.  
3. Is not allowed there, on n'y souffre ni; furniture, meuble; costly, précieux; attire, ornement; feast, repas.  
4. Extensive, vaste; fields, campagne; yellow, jaune; ears, épi; bounteous, fécond.
5. He was in a kind of ecstasy when he perceived us.
6. In the most corrupt age, he lived and died as a wise man*.
7. Are you surprised that the worthiest 2 men 1 are but men, and betray some remains of the weakness of humanity, amid the innumerable 2 snares 1 and difficulties which* are* inseparable from royalty.
8. He excited our pity, when we saw him after his disgrace.
9. Hear then, O nations full of valour! and you O chiefs, so wise and so united! hear what I have* to* offer you.
10. Out of this cavern issued, from time to time, a black 2 thick 3 smoke 1, which made a sort of night at mid-day.

5. In a kind of, comme en.
6. Age, siècle.
7. That, de ce que; worthy, estimable; but, encore; betray, montrer; remains, reste; snares, piège; difficulties, embarras.
8. He excited our pity, il nous fit pitié.
9. Hear, écouter.
10. Out of, de; issued, sortir; thick, et épais; smoke, fumée; mid-day, milieu du jour.

RULE II. The article is not used, either before nouns preceded by the pronominal adjectives mon, ton, son, notre, votre, leur, ce, nul, aucun, chaque, tout (used for chaque,) certain, plusieurs, tel, or before those which are preceded by a cardinal number without any relation whatever.

EXAMPLES.

Nos mœurs mettent le prix à nos richesses,
Toute nation a ses lois,
Cent ignorans doivent-ils l’emporter sur un homme instruit?

Our manners fix the value of our riches.
Each nation has its laws.
Are a hundred blockheads to be preferred to one learned man?

EXERCISE.

1. That good father was happy in his children, and his children were happy in him.
2. These imitative 2 sounds 1 are common to all languages, and form, as it were, their* real basis.
3. Every man has his foibles, his moments of humour, even his irregularities.

2. Common, fondu; to, dans; and form, as it were, et ils en ont comme; real, fondamentale.
4. Each plant has virtues peculiar to it, the knowledge of which I could not but be infinitely useful.

5. In all his instructions, he is careful to remember that grammar, logic, and rhetoric, are three sisters that ought never to be disjoined.

4. Peculiar, qui sont propres; to it, lui; could, cond-1; not but, ne que.

5. He is careful to remember, ne point perdre de vue; ought, on devoir, ind-1; to be disjoined, separer.

RULE III. Proper names of deities, men, animals, towns, and particular places, are without the article, but they take it when used in a limited sense.

EXAMPLES.

Dieu a créé le ciel et la terre, God has made heaven and earth.

Jupiter était le premier des dieux, Jupiter was the first of the gods.

Bucéphale était le cheval d’Alexandre, Bucephalus was Alexander’s horse.

Rome est une ville d’une grande beauté, Rome is a city of great beauty.

But we ought to say, le Dieu des Chrétiens, the God of the Christians; le Dieu de paix, the God of peace; le Jupiter d’Homère, Homer’s Jupiter; le Bucéphale d’Alexandre, Alexander’s Bucephalus; l’ancienne Rome, ancient Rome; la Rome moderne, modern Rome.

If, in imitation of the Italians, we use the article before the names of painters and poets of that nation, except Michel-Ange and Raphael, it is because the expression is elliptical, the words peintre, poète, or seigneur, being understood.

EXERCISE.

1. Jupiter, son de Saturn and Cibele or Ops, after having expelled his father from the throne, divided the paternal inheritance with his two brothers, Neptune and Pluto.

1. Expelled, chasser; divided, en partager; inheritance, héritage.
2. On a dispute at a feast of the gods, between Juno, Pallas, and Venus, for the pre-eminence of beauty, Jupiter not being able to bring them to an agreement, referred the decision to Paris, a shepherd of mount Ida, with directions that a golden apple should be given to the fairest. Paris assigned to Venus the golden prize.

3. God said: let there be light 1, and there was light 1.

4. The Apollo di Belvidere and the Venus di Medici, are valuable remains of antiquity.

5. May and September are the two finest months of the year in the south of France.

6. The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, was the only true God.

CHAP. III.

OF THE ADJECTIVE.

I.

OF THE ADJECTIVE WITH THE ARTICLE.

RULE I. Adjectives taken substantively are, like substantives common, accompanied by the article, if the occasion require it.

EXAMPLE.

Les fous inventent les modes, et les sages s'y conforment;

men conform to them.

EXERCISE.

1. Were the learned of antiquity to come to life again, they would be much astonished at the extent of our knowledge.

2. The ignorant have, in a large stock of presumption, what they want in real knowledge, and that is the reason they are admired by fools.

1. Were the, si les; to come again, revenir, ind-2; life, monde; at, de; knowledge, connaissance, pl.

2. Large stock, forte dose; they want, il leur manquer; knowledge, science; the reason, ce qui fait que; they are admired, the fools admire them.
RULE II. When a noun is accompanied by two adjectives, expressing opposite qualities, the article must be repeated before each adjective.

**Examples.**

Les vieux et les nouveaux soldats sont remplis d’ardeur, The old and the new soldiers are full of ardour.
Il faut fréquenter la bonne compagnie et fuir la mauvaise, We ought to frequent good and shun bad company.

**Remark.** This rule must be strictly attended to, when the qualities expressed by the adjectives are opposite: but those qualities may be either nearly synonymous, or merely different, without being opposite. In the first instance, the article is not repeated: as Le sage et pieux Fénélon; in the second, it is perhaps better to repeat it: as Le sensible et l’ingénieux Fénélon.

**N.B.** In French the substantive must be joined to the first adjective, when it is governed by different words.

**Exercise.**

1. The ancient and modern writers are not agreed upon that point.
2. The wise man preserves the same tranquillity of mind in good or bad fortune.
3. The man who is jealous of his reputation frequents good and shuns bad company.
4. Grand and vigorous thoughts were always the offspring of genius.

1. Writers, auteur; are agreed, s’accorder.
2. The wise man, le sage; preserves, conserver.
3. Shuns, éviter.
4. Vigorous, fort; offspring, fruit.

RULE III. The article is used before the adjective which is joined to a proper name, either to express its quality, or to distinguish the person spoken of from those who might bear the same name.

**Examples:**

Le sublime Bossuet, Le vertueux Fénélon, Le tendre Racine,
The sublimage Bossuet, The virtuous Fénélon, The tender Racine,
Louis le Gros; Louis le Juste; [son], Louis le Grand,
Louis the Fat; Louis the Just; [son], Louis the Great.
Particular Rules of the Adjective.

Remark. The adjective which is joined to a proper name, may either precede or follow that name. If it precede, it expresses a quality which may be common to many; if it follow, it expresses a distinguished quality. These two expressions, Le savant Varron and Varron le savant, do not convey the same meaning: in the first, we merely give to Varron the quality of savant; in the second, we mean to say, that there are several persons of the name of Varron, and that the one we are speaking of is distinguished for his learning.

Exercise.

1. The great Corneille astonishes by beauties of the first class, and by faults of the worst taste. If the tender Racine does not often rise so high, at least he is always equal, and possesses the art of always interesting the heart.
2. The more we read the fables of the good and artless La Fontaine, the more we are convinced they are a book for all ages, and the manual of the man of taste.
3. It was only under the reign of Louis the Just (XIII) that good taste began to show itself in France; but it was under that of Louis the Great that it was carried to perfection.

1. By, par des; class, ordre; is always equal, se soutenir; possesses, avoir.
2. The more we, plus on; artless, simple; are convinced, on se convaincre; they are, que c’est; a, le; for, de; manual, manuel.
3. Only, ne que: show itself, se montrer; carried, porter à.

Rule IV. When a superlative relative is placed before a substantive, the article serves for both; if after it, the article is to be repeated before each.

Example.

Les plus habiles gens sont quelquefois les plus grandes fautes,
or
Les gens les plus habiles sont quelquefois les fautes les plus grandes
The ablest men sometimes commit the grossest blunders.

Exercise.

1. It has been said of the Telemachus of the virtuous Fenelon, that it is the most useful 2 present 1 the Musés have made to man; for, could the happiness of mankind be produced by a poem, it would be by that.

1. It has been said, on a dit; present, don que; have made subj-3; could (if the, etc. could, ind-2); mankind, gens h‘-
main; be produced by, naître de; would be, naître, would-1.
Particular Rules of the Adjective.

2d. The smoothest 2 waters 1 often conceal the most dangerous 2 gulls 1.

2. Smoothest, tranquille.

II.

THE PLACE OF THE ADJECTIVES.

RULE I. Pronominal adjective, and adjectives of number, are placed before the substantive, as are generally the following sixteen, viz. beau, bon, brave, cher, chétif, grand, gros, jeune, mauvais, méchant, meilleur, moindre, petit, saint, vieux and vrai, when taken in their literal sense.

EXAMPLES.

Mon père, quel homme, plusieurs officiers, grand homme.
My father. what man. several officers. great man.

Vieille femme, dix guinées, six arbres, etc.
Old woman. ten guineas. six trees, etc.

EXCEPTIONS. 1st. We must except the pronoun quelconque.

EXAMPLE.

Raison quelconque, Reason whatever.

2d. The adjectives of number, joined to proper names, pronouns, and substantives, a quotations and without the article.

EXAMPLES.

George troisième, George the third.
Lui dixième, He the tenth.
Chapitre dix, Chapter the tenth.
Page trente, Page thirty.

3d. The sixteen adjectives before mentioned, when they are joined by a conjunction to another adjective, which is to be placed after the substantive.

EXAMPLE.

C'est une femme grande et bien faite, She is a woman tall and well made.

REMARK. In English, two or even several adjectives may qualify a substantive, without a conjunction; but in French, they are generally joined by a
conjunction, as: *c’est un homme aimable et poli*, he is an amiable, well-behaved man; except when custom allows the substantives to be placed between two adjectives, as: *c’est un grand homme sec*, he is a tall thin man.

**Exercise.**

1. There have been ages, when a great man was a sort of prodigy produced by a mistake of nature.
2. In almost all nations, the great geniuses that have adorned them were contemporaries.
3. Young people, says Horace, are supple to the impressions of vice, lavish, presumptuous, and equally impetuous and light in their passions; *old people*, on the contrary, are covetous, dilatory, timid, ever alarmed under the future, always complaining, hard to please, panegyrists of times past, censors of the present, and great givers of advice.
4. What man was ever satisfied with his fortune, and dissatisfied with his wit?
5. Thirty chambers which have a communication one with another, and each of them an iron door, with six huge bolts, are the places where he shuts himself up.

1. *Ages, des siècles; when, où; produced, enfanter.*
2. *In, chez; nations, peuple; adorned, illustrer, ind-4.*
3. *People, gens; supple, souple; lavish, prodigue; impetuous, vif; old, f. pl. (the following adjectives m. pl.); covetous, avaré; dilatory, temporeux; about, sur; complaining, plaintif; hard, difficile; please, contenter; times, sing; givers, donneur.*
4. *Dissatisfied, mécontent.*
5. *Have a communication, communiquer; each of them, dont chacun avoir; huge, gros; bolts, verrou; places, lieu, sing.; shuts himself, se renfermer.*

**Rule II.** In general, adjectives formed from the participle present of verbs are always placed after the substantive; *ouvrage divertissant*, entertaining work; and those formed from the participle past always; *figure arrondie*, round figure; those denoting form: *table ovale*, oval table; colour: *maison blanche*, white house; taste: *herbe amère*, bitter herb; sound: *orgue harmonieux*, harmonious organ; an idea of action: *procureur actif*, active attorney; or, an effect pro-
Particular Rules of the Adjective.

duced: *coutume abusive*, custom founded in abuse; a quality relative to the nature of a thing: *ordre grammatical*, grammatical order; or, to the species of a thing: *qualité occulte*, occult quality; adjectives expressing a nation: *générosité Anglaise*, English generosity; those in *esque, il, ule, ic, ique*: *style burlesque*, burlesque style; *jargon puéril*, childish jargon; *femme credule*, credulous woman; *bien public*, public welfare; *ris sardonique*, sardonic grin; and perhaps a few others; but in this, custom is to be consulted as the best guide.

EXERCISE.

1. An affected simplicity is a refined imposture.
2. The smiling images of Theocritus, Virgil, and Gessner, excite in the soul a soft sensibility.
3. In that antique palace are to be seen neither wreathed columns, nor gilded wainscots, nor valuable basso-relieves, nor ceilings curiously painted, nor grotesque figures of animals which never had existence but in the imagination of a child or a madman.
4. If human life is exposed to many troubles, it is also susceptible of many pleasures.
5. A ridiculous man is seldom so by halves.
6. Spanish manners have, at first sight, something harsh and uncivilized.
7. French urbanity has become a proverb among foreign nations.

1. Refined, délicat.
2. Smiling, riant; excite, porter; soft, doux.
3. Are to be seen, on ne voit; wreathed, torse; wainscots, lambris; basso-relieves, bas relief; ceilings, plafond; curiously, artistement; had existence, exister.
4. Many, bien de; troubles, peine.
5. So, ie; by halves, à demi.
6. Spanish, Espagnol; manners, manières; at first sight, au premier abord; uncivilized, sauvage.
7. Become, passer en; among, chez.

RULE III. Although it may seem that adjectives expressing moral qualities are placed indifferently before or after the substantive, yet it is taste alone, and a correct ear, that can assign their proper situation.

In conversation, or in a broken, loose style, it may be indifferent to say *femme aimable*, or *aimable femme*,
Particular Rules of the Adjective.

Talens sublimes or sublimes talens, etc. but in the dignified style the place of the adjective may, in a variety of instances, affect the beauty of a sentence.

Exercise.

1. An amiable woman gives to every thing she says an inexpressible grace; the more we hear the more we wish to hear her.

2. The majestic eloquence of Bossuet is like a river which carries away every thing in the rapidity of its course.

3. The sublimes compositions of Rubens have made 1 an English traveller 3 say 2, that this famous painter was born in Flanders through a mistake of nature.

1. Give to, répandre sur; inexpressible, inexprimable; we, on.

2. Majestic, majestueux; river, fleuve; carries away, entraîner; course, cours, m.

3. Say, dire à; famous, célèbre; through, par; mistake, méprise.

III.

Regimen of the Adjective.

Rule. A noun may be governed by two adjectives, provided those adjectives do not require different regimens. Thus we say, Cet homme est utile et cher à sa famille, that man is useful and beloved by his family; because the adjective utile does not govern the preposition de.

Exercise.

1. A young man whose actions are all regulated by honour, and whose only aim is perfection in every thing, is beloved and courted by every body.

2. Cardinal Richelieu was all his life-time feared and hated by the great whom he had humbled.

3. A young lady, mild, polite, and delicate, who sees in the advantage of birth, riches, wit, and beauty, nothing but incitements to virtue, is very certain of being beloved and esteemed by every body.

1. Actions are regulated by honour, l'honneur dirige les actions; whose only aim is, qui ne se propose que; courted, recherché.

3. Young lady, demoiselle; delicate, décent; nothing but, ne que; incitements, encouragement; certain, assuré.
IV.

ADJECTIVES OF NUMBER.

Unième, is used only after vingt, trente, quarante, cinquante, soixante, quatre-vingt, cent, and mille. C'est la vingt-unième fois; it is the twenty-first time.

Cent in the plural takes s, except when followed by another noun of number, as: ils étoient deux cents, they were two hundred; but we say, ils étoient deux cent dix, they were two hundred and ten; trois cents hommes, three hundred men. Vingt, in quatre-vingt, and six-vingt, also takes s when followed by a substantive, as: quatre-vingts hommes, eighty men; six-vingts abricots; but it takes no s when followed by another number, quatre-vingt-un arbres, quatre-vingt-dix hommes. The ordinal numbers, collective and distributive, always take the mark of the plural: les premières douzaines, the first dozens; les quatre cinquièmes, the four-fifths.

In dates we write mil, as: mil sept cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf, one thousand seven hundred and ninety-nine. On all other occasions we write mille, which never takes the sign of the plural, as: dix mille hommes, ten thousand men; quatre mille chevaux, four thousand horses.

Remark. Cent and mille are used indefinitely, as: il lui fit cent caresses, he showed him a hundred marks of kindness; fuites-lui mille amitiés, present him a thousand compliments.

Exercise.

1. It was the thirty-first year after so glorious a peace, when the war broke out again with a fury of which history offers few examples.

2. There were only three hundred, and, in spite of their inferiority, they attacked the enemy, beat and dispersed them.

3. He has sold his country house for two thousand five hundred and sixty pounds.

1. Year, année; when, que; broke out again, se rallumer.
2. Only, ne que; in spite of, malgré.
3. Pounds, livre sterling.
4. Choose out of your nursery eighty fruit-trees and ninety
dwarf-trees, divide them into dozens, and put in the two first
dozens of each sort, those whose fruits are the most esteemed.

5. When Louis the Fourteenth made his entry into Stras-
bourg, the Swiss deputies being come to pay their respects to
him, Le Tellier, archbishop of Rheims, who saw among them
the bishop of Basle, said to one near him: That bishop is ap-
parently some worthless character.—How, replied the other, he
has a hundred thousand livres a year.—Oh! oh! said the arch-
bishop, he is then an honest man; and shewed him a thousand
civilities.

4. Out of, dans; nursery, pépinière; fruit trees, pied d’arbre
fruitier; dwarf-trees, arbre nain; divide, partager.

5. Swiss (of the Swiss); pay, présenter; respect, hommage,
pl.; one near him, son voisin; that bishop, etc. c’est un misé-
rable apparentment que cet évêque; a year, de rente; shewed,
faire; civilités, caresse.

We say, le onze, du onze, au onze, sur les onze
heures, sur les une heure, pronouncing the words onze
and une as if they were written with an á aspirated.

The cardinal numbers are used instead of the or-
dinal.

1st. In speaking of the hours and in calculating
time, as: il est trois heures, it is three o’clock; l’an
mil sept cent dix, the year one thousand seven hun-
dred and ten.

2dly. In speaking of all the days of the month ex-
cept the first: le premier de Mars, the first of March.

3dly. In speaking of the order of sovereigns and
princes, as: Louis seize, Georges trois; except the
first two of the series, as: Henri premier, George second.
We also say, Charles-Quint, Sixte-Quint, instead of
Charles cinq, Empereur, and Sixte cinq, Pape; but
this expression quint, derived from the Latin word
quintus, is only used in these two instances.

EXERCISE.

1. They made in the parish and in the neighbouring places a
collection which produced a hundred and twenty-one guineas.

1. They, on; neighbouring places, voisinage, sing.; collection,
quote.
PARTICULAR RULES OF THE PRONOUNS.

2. William, surnamed the Conqueror, king of England and duke of Normandy, was one of the greatest generals of the eleventh century: he was born at Falaise, and was the natural son of Robert, duke of Normandy, and of Arlotte, a furrier’s daughter.

3. Make haste; it will soon be ten o’clock. We shall have a good deal of difficulty to arrive in time.

4. The winter was so severe in one thousand seven hundred and nine, that there was but one olive-tree that resisted it in a plain where there had been more than ten thousand.

5. It was the twenty-first of January one thousand seven hundred and ninety-three, that the unhappy Louis the sixteenth was led to the scaffold.

2. William, Guillaume; century, siècle; furrier, fourreur.

3. Make haste, ne dépêcher; will be, ind-1; a good deal of difficulty, bien de la peine; in, à.

4. Severe, rude; but, ne que; olive-tree, olivier; had been, ind-2.

CHAPTER IV.

OF THE PRONOUN.

I.

PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

I.

Office of Personal Pronouns.

The personal pronouns have the three characteristics of the substantive; that is, subject, regimen, and apostrophe; but with this difference, that some always form the subject; two only are used as an apostrophe; some always form the regimen; and lastly others are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen.

Je, tu, il, and ils are always the subject; these four pronouns cannot be separated from the verb which they govern, but by personal pronouns acting as a regimen, or by the negative ne.

EXAMPLES.

Je ne lui en veux rien dire; I will say nothing to him about it.
Tu en apprendras des nouvelles, Thou wilt hear news of it.
Il nous raconta son histoire, He told us his history.
Ils sont survenus à l'improviste, They are come unexpectedly.

The two acting as an apostrophe are toi and vous, whether they stand alone or are preceded by the interjection ô, as: toi, ô toi, vous, ô vous.

EXERCISE.

1. The better to bear the irksomeness of captivity and solitude, I sought for books: for I was overwhelmed with melancholy, for want of some instruction to cherish and support my mind.

2. Since thou art more obdurate and unjust than thy father, mayest thou suffer evils more lasting and cruel than his.

3. What! say they, do not men die fast enough without destroying each other? Life is so short, and yet it seems that it appears too long to them. Are they sent into the world to tear each other in pieces, and to make themselves mutually wretched?

4. O thou, my son, my dear son, ease my heart; restore me what is dearer to me than my life. Restore to me my lost son, and restore thyself to thyself.

5. O ye, who hear me with so much attention, believe not that I despise men: no, no, I am sensible how glorious it is to toil to make them virtuous and happy; but this toil is full of anxieties and dangers.

1. To bear, pour supporter; irksomeness, ennui; overwhelmed with, accablé de; for want, faute; to cherish, qui pût nourrir; support, soutenir.

2. Obdurate, dur; mayest, pouvoir, subj-1; lasting, long.

3. Die fast enough, être assez mortel; destroying each other, se donner encore une mort précipitée; sent into, sur; world, terre; tear in pieces, se déchirer; make themselves, se rendre.

4. Ease, soulagé; restore, rendre; lost (whom I have lost, perdre.

5. I am sensible, savoir; glorious, grand; to toil, travailler à; toil, travail; anxiety, inquiétude.

Me, te, se, leur, le, la, les, y, and en, are always used as a regimen; direct, if they are the object of the action expressed by the verb, or indirect, if they bear a relation which may be expressed by the prepositions à or de. They always precede the verb, except sometimes in the imperative, and can never be sepa-
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

rated from it by another word, not even by the negation.

Remark. However, some of these pronouns may be separated from the verb in the infinitive by the words tout, rien, and jamais.

Examples.

_It is refusing them every thing._
_It is allowing me nothing._
_He has sworn he would never pardon him._

Me, te, se, are sometimes regimen direct, and sometimes regimen indirect; they are regimen direct, when they represent _moi, toi, soi_; they are the regimen indirect, when they supply the place of _à moi, à toi, à soi._

Examples.

_You suspect me unjustly._
_I thank thee for it._
_He ruins himself out of wantonness._

_You give me prudent advice._
_I give thee that._
_He is always in motion._

Leur is always indirect, because it stands for _à eux or à elles._

Example.

_I represented to them the injury they did themselves._

Exercise.

1. He has been speaking to them with such energy as has astonished them.
2. Women ought to be very circumspect; for a mere appearance is sometimes more prejudicial to them than a real fault.

1. _Such energy as, une force qui._
2. _Mere, simple, is more prejudicial, faire plus de tort._
3. He comes up to me with a smiling air, and pressing my hands, says, My friend, I expect you to-morrow at my house.

4. He said to me: Wilt thou torment thyself incessantly for advantages, the enjoyment 2 of which I could not render thee more happy! Cast thy eyes round thee, see how every thing smileth at thee, and seemeth to invite thee to prefer a retired and tranquil life to the tumultuous pleasures of a vain 2 world 1.

5. The ambitious man* agitates, torments, and destroys himself to obtain the places or honours to which he aspires; and when he has obtained them, he is still not satisfied.

3. Comes up . . with, aborder . . de; pressing, serrer; my hands, la main; at my house, chez moi.

4. Incessantly, sans cesse; advantages, des biens; could, savoir, cond-1; cast, porter; thy, art.; smileth, souris.

6. Destroys, consumer; to, pour.

Le, la, les, are always direct, and y indirect, as: je te vois, je la vois, je les vois, that is, je vois lui, je vois elle, je vois eux or elles; je n'y entends rien, I understand nothing of it; that is, je n'entends rien à cela.

En is generally indirect, because its principal use is to represent a substantive and the preposition de.

Remark. We have said generally, because, in our opinion, en may be the regimen direct, or at least perform the function of it, whenever it is substituted for the member of an elliptical phrase: avez vous reçu de l'argent? oui, j'en ai reçu; have you received any mony? yes, I have received some; in phrases of this kind there is an ellipsis of these words, un peu, beaucoup, une portion, or some similar expressions.

Exercise.

1. I have known him since his childhood, and I always loved him on account of the goodness of his character.

2. This woman is always occupied in doing good works; you see her constantly consoling the unhappy, relieving the poor, reconciling enemies, and promoting the happiness of every one around her.

1. Have known, connaître, ind-1; loved, ind-4; on account, à cause; the goodness of his (his good).

2. In, à; works, œuvres, f. pl.; constantly sans cesse; consoling, etc., inf-1; promoting, faire; every one around her, tout ce qui l'environne.
3. The more you live with men, the more you will be convinced that it is necessary to know them well before you form a connection with them.
4. Enjoy the pleasures of the world, I consent to it; but never give yourself up to them.
5. I shall never consent to that foolish scheme; do not mention it any more.
6. Have you received some copies of the new work? Yes, I have (received some.)

3. Live, ind-7; be convinced, se convaincre; before, avant de; form a connection, vous lier.
4. Enjoy, jouir de; give yourself up, se livrer.
5. Scheme, entreprise; mention, parler de.

Those which are sometimes the subject and sometimes the regimen are nous, vous, moi, toi, lui, elle, eux, elles.

Nous and vous may be the subject; nous aimons, vous aimes; the regimen direct, ils nous aiment, ils vous aiment; and indirect, ils nous parlent, ils vous parlent.

In general, moi, toi, are only the subject by apposition or reduplication, whether they follow the verb, as: je prétends moi, tu dis donc toi; or precede it, as: moi, dont il déchire la réputation, je ne lui ai rendu que de bons offices; I, whose reputation he is blackening, always did him acts of kindness; toi, qui fais tant le brave, tu oseras, etc. wouldst thou who pretendest to be so brave, dare, etc.

Remark. Sometimes the personal pronouns je and tu are not expressed, but understood, as: moi, trahir le meilleur de mes amis! I, betray my best friend! faire une lâcheté, toi! thou, be guilty of such baseness! where it is easy to supply the expression je voudrois, tu pourrois.

They are likewise the subject when they are placed in a kind of apposition expressed by ce and il in impersonal verbs, as: qui fut bien aise? ce fut moi; ce ne peut être que toi; que vous reste-t-il? moi.

After a conjunction, they are either the subject or regimen, according to the nature of the phrase, as:
nous y étions, mon père et moi; il ne craint ni toi ni moi.

In phrases which are not imperative, toi and moi can only be the regimen by apposition before or after the verb, as: voudriez-vous me perdre, moi, votre allié, etc. toi, je te soupçonnérois de perfidie.

After a preposition they alone can be employed, as: vous servirez-vous de moi; selon moi, vous avez raison; il est fâché contre toi.

What I have just remarked of toi, and moi, is applicable to lui, but with this difference, that in the imperative, lui can only be the regimen after que, signifying only, or in distributive phrases, as: n'aimer que lui, je le trouve pas mauvais, mais ne me laissez pas; that you should like only him, I do not disapprove, but do not hate me; protégez-nous, lui a cause de, etc. et moi, parce que, etc. it may likewise be said, so by apposition, aimez-le, lui qui, etc.

Eux is employed in the same manner as lui, but differs from it in this, that it cannot be the regimen indirect, except after a preposition, as: parliez-vous d'eux? est-ce à eux que vous parlez?

Remarks. Lui and eux may be the subject in distributive phrases without being in apposition, as: mes frères et mon cousin m'ont secouru; eux m'ont relevé, et lui m'a pâssé; my brothers and cousin have assisted me; they have taken me up, and he has bound up my wounds.

The natural office of elle and elles, is to form the subject; however, all the other uses of which we have now been speaking suit them, except that they cannot be the regimen indirect, unless preceded by a preposition, as: c'est à elles que je parle.

Exercise.

1. In the education of youth, we should propose to ourselves to cultivate, to polish their understanding, and thus to enable

1. Youth, jeunes gens; should, devoir, ind-1: to cultivate, (to them); to polish, (to them), corner; understanding, l'esprit;
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

them to fill with dignity the different stations assigned them; but above all, we ought to instruct them in that religious worship which God requires of them.

2. What! you would suffer yourself to be overwhelmed by adversity!

3. I! stoop to the man who has imbrued his hands in the blood of his king.

4. Thou! take that undertaking upon thyself! Canst thou think of it?

5. Your two brothers and mine take charge of the enterprise; they find the money, and he will manage the work.

6. It is I who have engaged him to undertake this journey.

7. It is thou who hast brought this misfortune on thyself.

8. When you are at Rome, write to me as often as you can, and give me an account of every thing that can interest me.

9. He told it to thee thyself.

10. Fortune, like a traveller, shifts from inn to inn; if she lodges to-day with me, to-morrow, perhaps, she will lodge with thee.

11. Whom dost thou think we were talking of? it was of thee.

12. Descartes deserves immortal praise, because he who has made reason 1 triumph 2 over authority in philosophy.

13. He is displeasing to himself.

14. She is never satisfied with herself.

15. The indiscreeet often betray themselves.

16. Saumaise, speaking of the English authors, said, that he had learned more from them than from any other.

enable, disposer; stations, place; (which are) assigned (to) them; worship, culte; requires, demander.

2. Suffer yourself, se laisser, cond-1; to be overwhelmed, abattre.

3. Stoop to. m'abaisser devant; imbrued, souiller; in, de.

4. Take upon thyself, te charger; of it, v.

5. Take charge, se charger; find, fournir; money, fonds, pl.; manage. conduire.

6. Undertake, faire; journey, voyage.

7. Hast brought on thyself, s'attirer, ind-4.

8. Are, ind-7; can, ind-7; give, faire; an account, le détail.


10. Shifts from inn to inn, changer d'auberge; with, chez; she will lodge, ce être.


12. Triumph over. tromphier de.

13. Is displeasing, se déplaire.

Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

17. To love a person, is to render him, on every occasion, all the services in our power, and to afford him, in society, every comfort that depends upon us.

17. In our power, dont on est capable; afford, procurer à; comfort; agrément; depends upon, dépendre de.

II.

ON THE PRONOUN SOI.

Soi is generally placed with a preposition and in phrases where there is an indeterminate pronoun either expressed or understood: on doit rarement parler de soi, il est essentiel de prendre garde à soi. In this case, it is the regimen indirect.

But it may stand without a preposition. 1st. With the verb être, as: en cherchant à tromper les autres, c'est souvent soi qu'on trompe, or on est souvent trompé soi-même; in attempting to deceive others, we frequently deceive ourselves. In this situation it is the subject.

2dly. After ne que, as: n'aimer que soi c'est n'être bon à rien, to love only ourselves, is being good for very little; or by opposition, as: penser ainsi c'est s'avérugler soi-même, to think in this manner is to blind one's self. It is in these examples the regimen.

When de soi and en soi are used in a definite sense speaking of things, they mean de sa nature, and dans sa nature.

EXERCISE.

1. To excuse in one's self the follies which one cannot excuse in others, is to prefer being a fool one's self to seeing others so.

2. To be too much dissatisfied with ourselves is a weakness; but to be too much satisfied (with ourselves) is (a) folly.

3. We ought to despise no one: how often have we needed the assistance of one more insignificant than ourselves?

1. Follies, sottises; others, autrui; prefer, aimer mieux; fool, soit: to seeing, que de voir; so. tel.

3. We ought. falloir, in-l; how often. combien de bis; we, on; needed the assistance, n'avoir pas besoin; insignificant, petit.
4. If we did not attend so much to ourselves, there would be less egotism in the world.
5. Vice is odious in itself.
6. The lodestone attracts iron (to itself.)

4. We, on; attended to, s’occuper de; egotism, égoïsme.

III.

CASES WHERE THE PRONOUNS elle, elles, eux, lui, leur,
MAY APPLY TO THINGS.

The personal pronouns elle and elles, when the regimen, generally apply to persons only. We say speaking of a woman: Je m’approchais d’elle, je m’assis près d’elle; but we say, speaking of a table: Je m’en approchai, je m’assis auprès.

But when these pronouns are governed by the prepositions avec, après, à, de, pour, en, etc. they may very well be applied to things. We say,
Speaking of a river: Cette rivière est si rapide quand elle déborde, qu’elle entraîne avec elle tout ce qu’elle rencontre; elle ne laisse après elle que du sable et des cailloux: that river is so rapid when it overflows, that it carries away every thing it meets with in its course; it leaves nothing behind but sand and pebbles.

And speaking of an enemy’s army: nous marchâmes à elle, we marched up to it. We cannot even express ourselves in any other way.

In speaking of things, reasons, truth, etc. we say also: ces choses sont bonnes d’elles-mêmes, these things are good in themselves; j’aime la vérité au point que je sacrifierais tout pour elle, I love truth to that degree, that I would sacrifice every thing for it; ces raisons sont solides en elles-mêmes, those reasons are solid in themselves.

After the verb être, they are applied only to persons, and likewise when they are followed by the relative qui and que, as: c’est à elle, c’est d’elles que je parle, c’est elle-même qui vient.

The same may be said of the pronoun eux, which is also generally applied to persons only; yet custom
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

allows us to say: *ce chien et ces oiseaux font tout mon plaisir, je n’aime qu’eux; eux seuls sont mon amusement, je ne sorge qu’à eux:* this dog and these birds are all my pleasure, I love nothing but them; they alone are my diversion, I think of nothing else. *Lui* and *leur* are generally applied to persons, but are sometimes used in speaking of animals, plants, and even inanimate objects: *ces chevaux sont rendus, faites-leur donner un peu de vin:* those horses are exhausted, give them a little wine; *ces orangers vont périr, si on ne leur donne de l’eau:* those orange-trees will die unless they have a little water; *ces murs sont mal faits, on ne leur a pas donné assez de talus:* those walls are badly built, they have not sufficient inclination.

Thus much being premised, we shall give the following—

**RULE.** The pronouns *elle, elles, eux, lui,* and *leur,* ought never to be applied to things, except when custom does not allow them to be replaced by the pronouns *y* and *en.*

**EXERCISE.**

1. Virtue is the first of blessings; it is from it alone we are to expect happiness.

2. The labyrinth had been built upon the lake Meris, and they had given it a prospect proportioned to its grandeur.

3. Mountains are frequented on account of the air one breathes on them: how many people are indebted to them for the recovery of their health?

4. War brings in its train numberless evils.

5. It is a delicate affair which must not be too deeply investigated; it must be lightly passed over.

6. I have had my house repaired, and have given it an appearance quite new.

---

1. *Blessings, bien; are, devoir.*

2. *Had been built, on bâtir, ind-6; prospect, vue.*

3. *On account, à cause; breathes, respire; on them, y; are indebted for, devoir; recovery, rétablissement.*

4. *Brings, entraîner; in its train, avec elle; numberless, bien de.*

5. *Affair, matière; must, ind-1; be deeply investigated, approfondir, inf-1; be passed, glisser; over, déssus.*

6. *Have had, faire, ind-4; appearance, air.*
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

7. Those trees are too much loaded, strip them of part of their fruit.
8. This book costs me a great deal, but I am indebted to it for my knowledge.
9. Self-love is captious; we, however, take it for our guide; to it are all our actions directed, and from it we take counsel.
10. These arguments, although very solid in themselves, yet made no impression upon him; so strong a chain is habit.
11. These reasons convinced me, and by them I formed my decision.
12. I leave you the care of that bird, do not forget to give it water.

7. Strip, déter; of part, une partie.
8. A great deal, cher; knowledge, instruction.
9. We (it is it that we) ; to it, (it is to it that we direct all, etc.) ; direct, rapporter; from it, (and it is from it that, etc.)
10. No, ne aucun; so strong, etc. (so much habit is a, etc.) habit, habitude.
11. And from, (and it is from them that); by, d'après; formed my decision, se décider.

IV.
A DIFFICULTY RESPECTING THE PRONOUN LE CLEARED UP.

Le, la, les, are sometimes used as pronouns, and sometimes as articles. The article is always followed by a noun, le roi, la reine, les hommes, whereas the pronoun is always joined to a verb je le connais, je le respecte, je les estime.

The pronoun le may supply the place of a substantive or an adjective, or even of a member of a sentence. There is no difficulty, when it relates to a whole member of a sentence; it is always then in the masculine singular, as: on doit s'accommoder à l'humeur des autres autant qu'on le peut, we ought to accommodate ourselves to the humour of others as much as we can.

EXERCISE.
1. The laws of nature and decency oblige us equally to defend the honour and interest of our parents, when we can do it without injustice.
2. We ought not to condemn, after their death, those that have not been condemned during their life-time.
1. Decency, bienséance.
2. We ought, falloir; condemned, le; time*.

* c c 2
Neither is there any difficulty when *le* supplies the place of a substantive; it being evident that it then takes the gender and number of that substantive, as:

*Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant? Oui, je la suis.*—Madam, are you the mother of that child? Yes, I am. *Mesdames, êtes-vous les parentes dont Monsieur m’a parlé? Oui, nous les sommes.*

**Remark.** Though the word relating to the interrogative sentences, in the following exercises, is not expressed in English, yet it must always be in French: this word is *le*, which takes either gender or number, according to its relation.

**Exercise.**

1. Was that your idea? Can you doubt that it was?
2. Are you Mrs. Such-a-one? Yes, I am.
3. Are those your servants? Yes, they are.

1. *Idea, pensée; that it was, ce être, subj-2.*
2. *Mrs. Madame; such-a-one, un tel.*
3. *Those, ce; they, ce.*

It only remains, therefore, to lay down the following—

**Rule.** The pronoun *le* takes neither gender nor number, when holding the place of an adjective.

**Examples.**

*Madame, êtes-vous enrhumée?—Oui, je le suis.*

*Mesdames, êtes-vous contentes de ce discours?—Oui, nous le sommes.*

*Fut-il jamais une femme plus malheureuse que je le suis?*

**Remark.** This rule is observed, when the substantives are used adjectively: *Madame, êtes-vous mère?—Oui, je le suis.* *Mesdames, êtes-vous parentes?—Oui, nous le sommes.* Elle est fille, et le sera toute la vie. But not if the adjectives be used substantively, as: *Madame, êtes-vous la malade?—Oui, je la suis.* Therefore, this question: *Étes-vous fille de M. le duc?* is to be answered: *Oui, je le suis;* and this: *Étes-vous la fille de M. le duc?*—*Oui, je la suis.*
EXERCISE.

1. Ladies, are you glad to have seen the new piece? Yes, we are.
2. I, a slave! I, born to command! alas! it is but too true that I am so.
3. She was jealous of her authority, and she ought to be so.
4. Was there ever a girl more unhappy, and treated with more ridicule than I am.
5. You have found me amiable: why have I ceased to appear so to you?
6. Have we ever been so quiet as we are?
7. Madam, are you married? Yes, I am.
8. Madam, are you the bride? Yes, I am.

1. Ladies, Mesdames.
2. Slave, esclave; but, ne que.
4. With more ridicule, plus ridiculement.

We likewise observe the same rule with the article placed before plus or moins and an adjective. It takes neither gender nor number, when there is no comparison, as: la lune ne nous éclaire pas autant que le soleil, même quand elle est le plus brillante; the moon does not give us so much light as the sun, even when it shines brightest: but it takes gender and number, when there is a comparison, as: de toutes les planètes, la lune est la plus brillante pour nous; of all the planets the moon is the most brilliant to us.

EXERCISE.

1. This father could not bring himself to condemn his children, even when they were most guilty.
2. This woman has the art of shedding tears, even 2 at the time 1 when she is least afflicted.
3. Out of so many criminals only the most guilty should be punished.
4. Although that woman displays more fortitude than the others, she is not, on that account, the least distressed.

1. Could, ind-2; bring himself, se résoudre.
2. Shedding, répandre de; at, dans; when, que.
3. Only the most, etc. (one must punish only the most guilty) only, ne que.
4. Displays, montrer; fortitude, fermeté; on that account, pour cela; distressed, affligé.
V.

REPETITION OF THE PERSONAL PRONOUNS.

RULE I. The pronouns of the first and second persons, when the subject, must be repeated before all the verbs, if those verbs are in different tenses; and it is always better to repeat them, even when the verbs are in the same tense.

EXAMPLES.

Je soutiens, et je soutiendrai; I maintain, and (I) will always maintain.
Vous dites, et vous direz toujours; You say, and (you) have always said.
Accablé de douleur, je m'écriai et je dis; Overwhelmed with sorrow, I exclaimed and (I) said.
Nous nous promenions sur le haut du rocher, et nous voyions sous nos pieds; We were walking upon the summit of the rock, and (we were) seeing under our feet, etc.

REMARK. In all cases the pronouns must be repeated; though the tenses of the verbs do not change, if the first of these is followed by a regimen, as: Vous aimerez le Seigneur votre Dieu, et vous observerez sa loi; you shall love the Lord your God, and (you shall) observe his law.

EXERCISE.

1. My dear child, I love you, and I shall never cease to love you: but it is that very love that I have for you which obliges me to correct you for your faults, and to punish you when you deserve it.

2. I heard and admired these words, which comforted me a little, but my mind was not sufficiently at liberty to make him a reply.

3. Thou wast young, and thou aimedst without doubt at the glory of surpassing thy comrades.

4. God has said, you shall love your enemies, bless those that curse you, do good to those that persecute you, and pray for those who slander you. What a difference between this morality and that of philosophers!

1. Correct for, répondre à.
2. Heard, écouter, ind-2; words, discours; my mind, etc. (I had not the mind, etc.) sufficiently at liberty, assez libre; to make a reply, répondre à.
3. Amidst at, aspirer à; surpassing, l'emporter sur.
4. Slander, calomnier; between, de; and that, à cete.
RULE II. The pronouns of the third person, when the subject, are hardly ever to be repeated before the verbs, when those verbs are in the same tense, and they may be repeated or not, when the verbs are in different tenses.

EXAMPLES.

| La bonne grâce ne gâte rien; elle ajoute à la beauté, relève la modestie, et y donne du lustre; | A graceful manner spoils nothing; it adds to beauty, heightens modesty, and gives it lustre. |
| Il n'a jamais rien valu et ne vaudra jamais rien; | He never was good for any thing, and never will be. |
| Il est arrivé ce matin, et il repartira ce soir; | He is arrived this morning, and (he) will set off again this evening. |

REMARK. We have said hardly ever, because perspicuity requires the repetition of the pronoun, when the second verb is preceded by a long incidental phrase, as: Il fond sur son ennemi, et après l'avoir saisi d'une main victorieuse, il le renverse, comme le cruel aquilon abat les tendres moissons qui dorent la campagne.

EXERCISE.

1. He took the strongest cities, conquered the most considerable provinces, and overturned the most powerful empires.
2. He takes a hatchet, completely cuts down the mast which was already broken, throws it into the sea, jumps upon it amidst the furious billows, calls me by my name, and encourages me to follow him.
3. He marshals the soldiers, marches at their head, advances in good order towards the enemy, attacks and breaks them, and, after having entirely routed them, (he) cuts them in pieces.

1. Overtorned, renverser.
2. Hatchet, hache f.; completely cuts down, achever de couper; broken, rompre; throws, jeter; jumps upon it, s'êlanter dessus; billows, onde.
3. Marshals, ranger en bataille; breaks, renverser; entirely routed, achever de mettre en désordre; cuts, tailler.

RULE III. The personal pronouns, when the subject, of whatever person they may be, must always be repeated before verbs, either when we pass from
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

an affirmation to a negation, or, on the contrary, from a negation to an affirmation, or when the verbs are joined by any conjunction, except et and ni.

EXAMPLES.

Il veut et il ne veut pas, He will and he will not;
Il donne d’excellens principes, He lays down excellent principles, because he knows that;
parce qu’il sait que les progrès ultérieurs en dépendent; upon them depends all further progress.

But we say: il donne et reçoit, he gives and receives; il ne donne ni ne reçoit, he neither gives nor receives.

EXERCISE.

1. It is inconceivable how whimsical she is; from one moment to another, she will and she will not.
2. The Jews are forbidden to work on the sabbath; they are as it were locked in slumber; they light no fire, and carry no water.
3. For nearly a week she has neither eaten nor drank.
4. The soldier was not repressed by authority, but stopped from satiety and shame.

1. (She is of a whimsical cast inconceivable) whimsical cast, bizarrerie f.
2. (It is forbidden to) forbidden, défendre; sabbath, jour du sabbat; locked, enchainé; slumber, repos; light, allumer.
3. For, depuis; nearly, près de; a week, bientôt jours; has eaten . . . drank, ind-1.
4. Repressed, réprimer; stopped, s’arrêter, ind-3; from, par.

RULE IV. Pronouns, when the regimen, are repeated before all the verbs.

EXAMPLES.

L’idée de ses malheurs le poursuit, le tourmente et l’accièlle; The idea of his misfortunes pursues (him), torments (him), and overwhelms him.
Il nous ennuye, et nous obède He wearies (us) and besets us unceasingly.

REMARK. The pronoun, when the regimen, is not repeated before such compound verbs as express the repetition of the same action, as: je vous le dis et redis, il le fait et refait sans cesse. This, however, is the case only when the verbs are in the same tense.
Exercice.

1. It is taste that selects the expressions, that combines, arranges and varies them, so as to produce the greatest effect.

2. Horace answered his stupid critics not so much to instruct them, as to show their ignorance, and let them see that they did not even know what poetry was.

3. Man embellishes nature itself; he cultivates, extends and polishes it.

1. So as to, de maniè re à ce qu’elles, subj-1.

2. Stupid, not so much, moins; as to, pour; show (to them), their, etc.; let see, faire entendre; was, c’était que.

VI.

Relation of the Pronoun of the Third Person to a Noun Expressed Before.

Rule. The pronouns of the third person, il, ils, elle, elles, le, la, les, must always relate to a noun, whether subject or regi men, taken in a definite sense; but they must not be applied, either to a subject and regimen at the same time, or to a noun taken in an indefinite sense, or to a noun that has not been before expressed in the same sense.

Examples.

La rose est la reine des fleurs, | The rose is the queen of flowers;
 aussi est-elle l'embîme de la | therefore it is the emblem of
 beauté. | beauty.
J'aime l'ananas; il est exquis: | I like the pine-apple; it is de-
licious.

But we cannot say: Racine a imité Euripides en tout ce qu'il a de plus beau dans sa Phèdre, Racine has imitated Euripides in all that he has most beautiful in his Phedra; because, as the pronoun il may relate either to Racine or to Euripides, the sentence is equivocal: Neither can we say: Le légat publia une sentence d'interdit; il dura trois mois; the legate published a sentence of interdiction; it lasted three months: because il cannot, from the construction of the sentence, relate to interdit. Again, it is not altogether correct to say, Nulle paix pour l'impie; il la cherche.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

elle suit; no peace for the wicked; he seeks it, it flies: because, from the construction, the pronouns la and elle seem to be used for nulle paix; whereas, according to the meaning, they supply the place of the substantive paix, which is the opposite state.

EXERCISE.

1. Poetry embraces all sorts of subjects; it takes in everything that is most brilliant in history; it enters the fields of philosophy; it soars to the skies; it plunges into the abyss; it penetrates even to the dead; it makes the universe its domain; and if this world be not sufficient, it creates new ones, which it embellishes with enchanting abodes, which it peoples with a thousand various inhabitants.

2. Egypt aimed at greatness, and wanted to * strike the eye at a distance, but always pleasing it by the justness of proportion.

3. Egypt, satisfied with its own territory, where everything was in abundance, thought not of conquests; it extended itself in another manner, by sending colonies to every part of the globe, and, with them, politeness and laws.

4. The Messiah is expected by the Hebrews; he comes and calls the Gentiles, as had been announced by the prophecies; the people that acknowledge him as come, in incorporated with the people that expected him, without a single moment of interruption.

1. Subjects, matière; takes in, se charger de; that is, y avoir de; (in) the fields, soars, s'élaner dans; plunges, s'enfoncer; to, chez (its domain of the universe); be sufficient, suffire; ones, monde; enchanting, enchanté; abodes, demeure; various, divers.

2. Greatness, grand; wanted, vouloir; at a distance, dans l'éloignement; (in) pleasing, contenter.

3. Was in abundance, abonder; thought, songer; in, de; by, en; to, par; part of the globe, terre.

4. Gentiles, Gentil (the prophecies had announced it); acknowledge, reconnaître; with, à; without, sans qu'il y ait; single, seul.

II.

POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

EXPLANATION OF SOME DIFFICULTIES ATTENDANT ON THE POSSESSIVE PRONOUNS.

First Difficulty. The possessive pronouns son, ou, ses, leur, leurs, relate either to persons or to things.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns

personified, or simply to things. If they relate to persons or personified things, we always use those possessive pronouns: but if they relate to things, they are used as follows.

The possessive pronouns are always employed,

1st. When the object to which they relate is either named or designated by a personal pronoun in the same member of a phrase.

EXAMPLES.

L'Angleterre étend son commerce par toute la terre, England extends her commerce over the whole globe.
Elle envoie ses flottes dans toutes les mers, She sends her fleets into every part of the sea.

2dly. Before a noun, when qualified even by a single adjective, unless the noun form the regimen.

EXAMPLE.

Ses ressources immenses sont inexhaustibles. Her immense resources are inexhaustible.

3dly. After every preposition.

EXAMPLE.

C'est par sa position, jointe à la sagesse de son gouvernement, qu'elle réunit dans son sein de si grands avantages; It is by her situation, joined to the wisdom of her government, that she unites such vast advantages within herself.

4thly. Before all words which can govern the preposition de.

EXAMPLES.

Son parlement est le sanctuaire de la plus sage politique, Her parliament is the seat of the wisest policy.
Son roi n'a de pouvoir que pour faire le bien, Her king possesses power only to do good.

On all other occasions, the article must be employed with the pronoun en, which is placed immediately before the verb to which the word serves as a subject or regimen.
**Particular Rules of the Pronouns.**

**EXAMPLE.**

Tout enfin contribuë à m'en faire aimer le séjour; j'en admire surtout l'exacte police, en même temps que les lois m'en paraissent extrêmement sages; In short, every thing conspires to make me love that residence; I particularly admire the strictness of her police, at the same time that her laws appear to me extremely wise.

**EXERCISE.**

1. A new custom was a phenomenon in Egypt; for which reason, there never was a people that preserved so long its customs, its laws, and even its ceremonies.
2. Solomon abandoned himself to the love of women; his understanding declines, his heart weakens, and his piety degenerates into idolatry.
3. That superb temple was upon the summit of a hill; its columns were of Parian marble, and its gates of gold.
4. The Laocoön is one of the finest statues in France; not only the whole, but all its features, even the least, are admirable.
5. The Thames is a magnificent river; its channel is so wide and so deep below London-bridge, that several thousands of vessels lie at their ease in it.
6. This fine country is justly admired by foreigners; its climate is delightful, its soil fruitful, its laws wise, and its government just and moderate.
7. The trees of that orchard have sun enough, yet its fruits are but indifferent.
8. The Seine has its source in Burgundy and its mouth at Havre-de-Grace.
9. The pyramids of Egypt astonish, both by the enor-mity of their bulk and the justness of their proportions.
10. Egypt alone could erect monuments for posterity; its

1. **Phenomenon, prodige; for which reason, aussi; à, de; preserved, sub-3.**
2. **Understanding, esprit; declines, bais-er; weakens, s'affoiblir.**
3. **Summit, haut; hill, colline; Parian, de Paros.**
4. **In, qu'il y ait en; the whole, l'ensemble; even, jusqu'à.**
5. **Channel, lit; below, au-dessous de; lie at, être à; in it, y.**
6. **Justly, avec raison; soil, sol.**
7. **Have sun enough, être bien exposé; but indifferent, assez mauvais.**
8. **Mouth, embouchure: Havre, le Havre.**
9. **Both, égallement et; bulk, ma-é; und, et pas.**
10. **Egypt alone could, il n'appartient qu'à l'Egypte de;**
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

Obelisks are to this day, as well for their beauty as for their height, the principal ornaments of Rome.

11. History and geography throw mutual light on each other: a perfect knowledge of them ought to enter into the plan of good education.

tall, taller; to this day, encore aujourd'hui; as well for, instant par; height, hauteur.

11. Throw mutual light, etc. s'éclairer l'une par l'autre; of them (their).

SECOND DIFFICULTY. The learner is sometimes at a loss to know whether the possessive pronoun ought to be used or not before a noun that is the regimen. The following is the

RULE. The article, not the possessive pronoun, must be put before a noun forming the regimen, when a pronoun which is either subject or regimen supplies the place of that possessive, or when there is no sort of ambiguity.

EXAMPLES.

Peu mal à la tête, I have the head-ache.
Il faudroit lui couper la jambe, It would be necessary to take off his leg.
Ce cheval a pris le mors aux dents, That horse has run away.

EXERCISE:

1. For the whole winter he had sore eyes.
2. I had a fall yesterday, and hurt my back and head.
3. It would be better for a man to lose his life than forfeit his honour by a criminal action.
4. In this bloody battle, he received a wound by a shot in his right arm, and another in his left leg: by dint of care his arm was saved, but it was necessary to cut off his leg.

1. For, pendant; as had sore, avoir mal à.
2. Had a fall, se laisser tomber; hurt, se faire mal à.
3. Would be better, valoir mieux, eomd 1.
4. A wound by a shot, un coup de feu; in, à; by dint, à force; his arm, etc. (they saved the arm to him); was necessary, falloir, aus-3; to cut off, à (to him).

But should either the personal pronoun or circumstances not remove all ambiguity, then the possessive
pronoun must be joined to the noun. We say: je vois que ma jambe s’enfle, I see that my leg is swelling. For the same reason we say: il lui donna sa main à baiser, he gave him his hand to kiss; elle a donné hardiment son bras au chirurgien, she courageously presented her arm to the surgeon.

**Exercise.**

1. In this interview they made each other presents; she gave him her portrait, and he gave her his finest diamond.

2. A young surgeon preparing to bleed the great Condé, this prince said to him smiling, do not you tremble to bleed me? I, my Lord, no, certainly; it is not I, it is you who ought to tremble. The prince, charmed with the reply, immediately gave him his arm.

1. *Interview, entrevue; made each other, se faire mutuellement.*

2. *Preparing, se disposer; bleed, saigner; smiling, d’un air riant; it is not I, (it is not to me); it is you, (it is to you); who ought* to, de; *reply, repartie.*

**Remark.** 1st. Although verbs which are conjugated with two pronouns of the same person remove every kind of amphibology, at least in general, yet custom authorises some proverbial expressions, in which the possessive pronoun seems to be useless, as: il se tient ferme sur ses pieds, he stands firm upon his feet.

2dly. Custom likewise authorises certain pleonasm which seem to form exceptions to this rule, as: je l’ai vu de mes propres yeux, I have seen it with my own eyes.

3dly. When we speak of an habitual complaint, we use the possessive pronoun, as: sa migraine l’a repris, his head-ache is returned.

The possessive pronouns perform the office of the article, and are subject to the same rules; they must therefore be repeated before all substantives which are either subject or regimen, and before adjectives which express different qualities, as: son père, sa mère, et ses frères sont de retour; his father, mother and brothers are come back; je lui ai montré mes plus beaux et mes
Particular Rules of the Pronouns. 317

plus vilains habits, I have shown him my finest and my ugliest dresses. This rule, which is not always observed in English, is common, in French, to all pronominal adjectives.

1. Whatever he may do, he always finds himself safe.
2. Can you yet doubt the truth of what I tell you? Would you ask a stronger proof than that I gave you, it is that I heard it, yes, heard it with my own ears.
3. My gout does not allow me a moment's repose.
4. It is in vain that I exhort you to work and study; your idleness, that cruel disease under* which you labour, renders useless all the exhortations of friendship.
5. If you wish to be beloved, fail not to perform the promises you have just made.
6. In the retreat that I have chosen for myself, my study and garden are my greatest delight.
7. He brought me into his laboratory, and shewed me his large and small vessels.

1. Fonds himself, se retrouver; safe, sur ses jambes.
2. Can, cond-1; doubt, douter de; ask, exiger.
3. Allow, laisser.
4. It is in vain that I, je avoir beau; you labour, vous travailler.
5. Fail not, ne pas manquer; perform, remplir; have just made, venir de faire.
6. For myself, (to me); study, cabinet; are, faire; greatest plus cher.
7. Brought, mener; laboratory, laboratoire; vessels, vaisseau,

III.
RELATIVE PRONOUNS.

Qui, when the subject may very properly relate both to persons and things.

EXAMPLES.

L'homme qui joue perd son temps.
The man who games loses his time.

Le livre qui plait le plus n'est pas toujours le plus utile.
The book which pleases most is not always the most useful.

But when it is the regimen, it can only be used of persons or of things personified, whether the regimen be direct or indirect.
316 Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

EXAMPLES.
Quand on est délicat et sage dans ses goûts, on ne s'attache pas, sans savoir qui l'on aime ;
L'homme à qui appartient ce beau jardin est très-riche,
La femme de qui vous parlez,
He who is wise and discriminate in his choice, does not form an attachment, without knowing the person he loves.
The man to whom this fine garden belongs is very rich.
The woman of whom you are speaking.

REMARK. When the regimen indirect is expressed by the preposition de, we ought to prefer dont to de qui. It is better to say, la femme dont vous parlez ; however, when the verb expresses a kind of transfer or conveyance, de qui must be used, as: celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle, the person from whom I had that intelligence.

RULE I. Qui must not be separated from its antecedent, when that antecedent is a noun.

EXAMPLE.
Un jeune homme qui est docile. A young man who is obedient aux conseils qu'on lui donne, to the advice that is given et qui aime à en recevoir, who loves to receive this, aura infailliblement du mérite ;

REMARK. In some phrases, qui may be separated from the substantive by several words: that is, when the sense obliges us to refer it to that substantive, as: il a fallu, avant toute chose, vous faire lire dans l'écriture sainte l'histoire du peuple de Dieu, qui fait le fondement de la religion. This sentence is very correct, because as du peuple determines the kind of history, and de Dieu the kind of people, the mind necessarily goes back to the substantive histoire, to which it refers the incidental phrase.

Qui, however, may be separated from its antecedent, when this antecedent is a pronoun used as the regimen direct, as: il la trouva qui pleurait à chaudes larmes, he found her crying bitterly; je le vois qui joue, I see him playing; because in this case, the place of the
Particular Rules of the Pronouns. 319

Pronoun is before the verb, and it is the same as saying: *il trouva elle qui pleuroit*, etc.* je vois lui qui joue.* Also in this kind of sentence, which are real gallicisms: ceux-là *ne sont pas les plus malheureux qui se plaignent le plus*, those are not the most unhappy who complain the most.

Exercise.

1. A young man who loves vanity of dress, like a woman, is unworthy of wisdom and glory; glory is only due to a heart that knows how to suffer pain and trample upon pleasure.

2. Thyself, O my son, my dear son, thou* thyself that now enjoyest a youth so cheerful and so full of pleasure, remember that this delightful age is but a flower which will be 1 withered 3 almost as soon 2 as blown.

3. Men pass away like flowers, which open in* the morning, and at night are withered and trampled under foot.

4. You must have a man that loves nothing but truth and you, that will speak the truth in spite of you, that will force all your entrenchments; and this necessary character is the very* man whom you have sent into exile.

5. We perceived him waiting for us, quietly seated under the shade of a tree.

1. *Vanity of dress, à se parer vainement; trample upon, fouler aux pieds.*

2. *Cheerful, vil; full of, fertile en; remember, se souvenir; delightful, bel; withered, sécher; blown, belore.*

3. *Open, s'épanouir; and, (which); at night, le soir; withered, flétrir; under; a; foot, art. pl.*

4. *You must have, il vous falloir; nothing but, ne que; will speak, will force, subj-1; entrenchments, retraitement; character, homme; man, même; sent into exile, exiler.*

5. *Waiting for, (who waited,) attendre; under; a.*

Rule II. The relative *qui* must always have a reference to a noun taken in a determinate sense.

Examples.

*le homme est un animal raisonnable, qui, etc.* *Il me reçut avec une politesse, qui, etc.*

But we cannot say, *l'homme est animal raisonnable, qui, etc.* *Il me reçut avec politesse, qui, etc.*

Remark. Though, in many phrases, the determinate nature of the nouns is not expressed, yet it is clearly understood. Thus, all these phrases are correct:

*Il n'a point de livre qui ne soit* He has not a book that is not *de son choix,* of his own selecting.
**Particular Rules of the Pronouns.**

Yes-il ville dans le royaume qui est plus favorisé? Is there a city in the kingdom that is more favoured?

Il se conduit en homme qui connaît le monde. He behaves himself like a man who knows the world.

Il est accablé de maux qui ne lui laissent pas un instant de repos. He is overwhelmed with misfortunes that do not allow him a moment's rest.

C'est une sorte de fruit qui ne mûrit pas en Europe. It is a sort of fruit that does not ripen in Europe.

From the translation of all the above examples, it is evident that livre, ville, maux, are really determinate; the meaning being, il n'a pas un livre qui, etc.

**Exercise.**

1. He received us with such goodness, civility, and grace, as charmed us, and made us forget all we had suffered.

2. There is no city in the world where there are more riches and a greater population.

3. Is there a man can say: I shall live till to-morrow?

4. He has no friend but would make for him every kind of sacrifice.

5. He is surrounded by enemies, who are continually observing him, and would be very glad to detect him in a fault.

6. In his retreat, he lives like a philosopher, who knows mankind and mistrusts them.

7. The pine-apple is a sort of fruit, that in Europe ripens only in hot-houses.

8. That man is a sort of pedant, who takes words for ideas and facts confusedly heaped up for knowledge.

1. Such—as, un—qui.

2. There are, subj.

3. Man, (who); cas, subj.


5. Like a, en; philosopher, sage; mistrusts, se déier de.


Que relates both to persons and things, in all cases. It is always the regimen direct in a sentence, and cannot subsist without an antecedent expressed, which it generally follows. L'homme que je vois, la pêche que je mange. We say generally, because, in some instances, it may be separated from the antecedent by several words: that is, when the mind necessarily
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

321

goes back to that antecedent, as in the sentence of Flechier: *Qu'est-ce qu'une armée? c'est un corps animate d'une infinité de passions différentes, qu'un homme habile fait mouvoir pour la défense de la patrie.*

**Remark.** There are instances where *que* appears to be the regimen indirect, as it seems to be used instead of *à qui* or *dont,* as: *c'est à vous que je parle; c'est de lui que je parle:* *de la façon que j'ai dit la chose.* In this case, *que* is a conjunction.

**Exercise.**

1. The God *whom* the Hebrews and Christians have always served, has nothing in common with the deities full of imperfection and even of vice worshipped by the rest of the world.

2. The Epic poem is not the panegyric of a hero *who* is proposed as a pattern, but the recital of great and illustrious actions which are exhibited for imitation.

3. The good *which* we hope for presents itself to us, and disappears like an empty dream, which vanishes when we awake—to teach us, that the very things which we think we hold fast in our hands, may slip away in an instant.

4. Plato says, that, in writing, we ought to hide ourselves, to disappear, to make the world forget us, that we may present nothing but the truths we wish to impress.

1. *(That the rest of the world worshipped.)*

2. *Is proposed, on propose; as, pour; pattern, modèle; is exhibited, on donner; imitation, exemple.*

3. *Good, bien; disappears, s'enoler; empty, vain; vanishes, etc.; le réveil fait évanouir; we* *hold fast, tenir le mieux; in our hands* *; slip away, nous échapper.*

4. *We, on; to make the world forget, se faire oublier; that we may present but, pour ne produire que; wish, vouloir; impress, persuader.*

*Lequel* and *dont* relate both to persons and things. It is a general rule, that *lequel* ought never to be used either as a subject or object, except to avoid ambiguity; for, whenever the sense is evident, *qui* or *que* must be used: that is conformable to the present practice.

*Lequel* with the preposition *de,* is either followed or preceded by a noun, which it unites to the principal sentence. If it be followed, *dont* is preferable to du-
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

Cel both for persons and things. Thus we say, la Tamise dont le lit, and not, de laquelle; le prince dont la protection, and not duquel. If lequel be preceded by the noun, we can only make use of duquel when speaking of things, as: la Tamise, dans le lit de laquelle; and it is always better to use it, when speaking of persons, as: le prince à la protection duquel; de qui would not be so well.

With the preposition à we can only make use of auquel, when speaking of things, as: les places auxquelles il aspire; but we ought to prefer à qui, when speaking of persons, as: les rois à qui on doit obéir; auxquelles would not do so well.

It is easy to see that the relative qui, preceded by a preposition, never relates to things, but to persons only.

EXERCISE.

1. The grand principle on which the whole turns is, that all the world is but one republic, of which God is the common father, and in which every nation forms, as it were, one great family.

2. Homer, whose genius is grand and sublime like nature, is the greatest poet, and perhaps the most profound moralist of antiquity.

3. The celebrated Zenobia, whose noble firmness you have admired, preferred dying with the title of queen, rather than accept the advantageous offer which Aurelian made her.

4. The Alps, on the summit of which the astonished eye discovers perpetual snow and ice, present, at sunset, the most striking and most magnificent spectacle.

5. A king, to whose care we owe a good law, has done more for his own glory than if he had conquered the universe.

6. The ambitious man sees nothing but pleasures in the possession of the employ to which he aspires with so much eagerness, instead of seeing the trouble that is inseparable from them.

7. Kings, whom religion makes it our duty to obey, are, upon earth, the true representation of the providence of God.

1. Tour, rouler; every, chaque; as it were, comme.

2. Prefer, aimer mieux; than, que de.

3. Snow, ice, pl.; sun-set, soleil couchant; striking, im-

4. Present.

5. Care, sollicitude.

7. (To) whom; makes it our duty to, faire un devoir de; re-

presentation, image.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

Quoi can only relate to things. It is placed after the word to which it relates, but is always preceded by a preposition, and is generally followed by the subject of the phrase with which it is connected. Formerly it was more used than at present: we used to say, *la chose à quoi on pense; voilà les conditions sans quoi la chose ne peut se faire.* This mode of expression is still to be met with in some writers; but *lequel, duquel, auquel* are much better; for *quoi* has a vague signification, for which reason it is never used with any degree of propriety, but when it relates to a vague and indefinite subject, such as *ce* or *rien*, as: *c'est de quoi je m'occupe sans cesse; il n'y a rien à quoi je sois plus disposé.*

*Où, d'où, par où,* relate only to things. They are never used but when the nouns to which they refer express some kind of motion or rest, at least, metaphorically, as: *voilà le but où il tend,* that is the end he aims at; *c'est une chose d'où dépend le bonheur public,* it is a thing upon which the public happiness depends: *les lieux par où il a passé,* the places through which he has passed.

**Exercise.**

1. *What a young man, who begins the world, ought principally to attend to, is not to give it a high opinion of his understanding, but to gain numerous friends by the qualities of his heart.*

2. *A youth passed in idleness, effeminacy, and pleasure, lays up for us nothing but sorrow and disgust in old age: this, however, is what we little think of when we are young.*

3. *There is nothing by which we are more affected than the loss of fortune, although, being frail and perishable by its nature, it cannot contribute to our happiness.*

1. *To what, ce à quoi; begins, entrer dans; to attend, s'attacher; opinion, idée; understanding, esprit; to gain, en faire; numerous, beaucoup de.*

2. *Idleness, inutilité; effeminacy, mollesse; pleasure, volupté; lays up, préparer; of, à; we, on.*

3. *By, à; we, on; affected, sensible; frail, frêle; by, de; cannot, sub-1; our, (the).*
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

4. A grove in which I brave the ardours of the dog-star, a retired valley where I can meditate in peace, a high hill whence my eye extends over immense plains, are the places where I spend the happiest moments of my life.

4. Grove, bosquet; dog-star, canicule; spend, passer.

IV.

Absolute Pronouns.

Qui relates to persons only; it presents to the mind nothing but a vague indeterminate idea, as: qui **se ra assez hard pour l'attaquer**? who will be bold enough to attack him? It is likewise used in the feminine, and in the plural, as: qui est cette personne? who is that person? qui sont ces femmes? who are those women?

Que and quoi relate to things only, as: que **pouvoit la valeur en ce combat funeste**? what could valour do in that fatal combat? à quoi **pensez-vous**? what are you thinking of? Que is sometimes used for à quoi, de quoi, as: que sert la science sans la vertu? what avails learning without virtue? Que sert à l'avoir d'avoir des trésors? what use is it to the miser to possess treasures? that is, à quoi sert, etc. de quoi sert, etc.

Quoi sometimes relates to a whole sentence, and in this case it is the only expression authorized by custom, as: la vie passe comme un songe; c'est cependant à quoi on ne pense guères.

Remark. Que and quoi govern the preposition de before the adjective that follows them, as: que **dit-on de nouveau**? quoi de plus agréable? Que governs it likewise before substantives.

Quel relates both to persons and things, as: quel homme peut se promettre un bonheur constant? quelle grâce! quelle beauté! mais quelle modestie! Où, d'où, par où, never relate but to things.

Exercise.

1. Who could ever persuade himself, did not daily experience convince us of it, that, out of a hundred persons, there are ninety who sacrifice, to the enjoyment of the present, all the best founded hopes of the future?

1. Out of, sur; future, avenir.
2. Who would not love virtue for its own sake, could he see it in all its beauty?

3. He who does not know how to apply himself in his youth does not know what to do when arrived at maturity.

4. He was a wise legislator, who, having given to his countrymen laws calculated to make them good and happy, made them swear not to violate any of those laws during his absence; after which, he went away, exiled himself from his country, and died poor in a foreign land.

5. What people of antiquity ever had better laws than the Egyptians? What other nation ever undertook to erect monuments calculated to triumph over both time and barbarism?

6. What more instructing and entertaining than to read celebrated authors in their own language! What beauty! what delicacy and grace, which cannot be conveyed into a translation, are discovered in them!

7. When Menage had published his book on the Origin of the French Language, Christina, queen of Sweden, said, "Menage is the most troublesome man in the world: he cannot let one word go without its passport: he must know whence it comes, where it has passed through, and whither it is going."

2. Its own sake, elle-même; could he, si on pouvoir, ind-2.

3. (To) what; to do, s'occuper; when arrived, etc., dans l'âge mûr.

4. He, ce; calculated, propre; not to, (that they would not); went away, partir.

5. Calculated to, fait pour; both, également; over de.

6. Language, langue; delicacy, finesse; which cannot, qu'on ne peut: be conveyed, faire passer; translation, traduction; are, etc. n'y découvre-t-on pas.

7. When, après que; Christina, Christine; troublesome, incommode; in the. de, art.; cannot, ne saurait; go, passer; must, vouloir.

V.

DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS.

Ce, joined to the verb être, always governs this verb in the singular, except when it is followed by the third person plural. We say, c'est moi, c'est-toi, c'est lui, c'est nous, c'est vous; but we must say, ce sont eux, ce sont elles, ce furent vos ancêtres qui, etc.

Ce is often used for a person or thing mentioned before, and, in this case, it supplies the place of it or elle. Ce must always be used when the verb être.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

followed by a substantive taken in a determinate sense; that is, accompanied by the article, or the adjective un.

EXAMPLES.

Lisez Homère et Virgile; ce sont les plus grands poètes de l'antiquité; Read Homer and Virgil; they are the best poets of antiquity.

La douceur, l'affabilité et une certaine urbanité, distinguent l'homme qui vit dans le grand monde; ce sont là les marques auxquelles on le reconnaît; Gentleness, affability and a certain urbanity, distinguish the man that frequents polite company; these are marks by which he may be known.

Avez-vous lu Platon? c'est un des plus beaux génies de l'antiquité; Have you read Plato? he is one of the greatest geniuses of antiquity.

But when the verb être is followed by an adjective; or by a substantive taken adjectively, we make use of il or elle.

EXAMPLES.

Lisez Démosthène et Cicéron; ils sont très-éloquens; Read Demosthenes and Cicero; they are very eloquent.

J'ai vu l'Hôpital de Greenwich; il est magnifique et digne d'une grande nation; I have seen Greenwich Hospital; it is superb and worthy of a great nation.

Compteriez-vous sur Valère? ignorez-vous qu'il est homme d'étre jamais revenir de ses premières idées? Would you rely upon Valère? do you not know that he is a man who will never abandon his first opinions?

EXERCISE.

1. It is we who have drawn that misfortune upon us, through our thoughtlessness and imprudence.

2. It was the Egyptians that first observed the course of the stars, regulated the year, and invented arithmetic.

3. Pèruse attentively Plato and Cicero: they are the two philosophers of antiquity who have given us the most sound and luminous ideas upon morality.

1. Égout, draw, s'attirer; thoughtlessness, légèreté.

2. Étoiles, les premières; stars, astres.

3. Morale, line; sound, sein; morality, moralité.
4. If you be intended for the pulpit, read over and over again Bourdaloue and Massillon: they are both very eloquent; but the aim of the former is to convince, and that of the latter to persuade.

4. Be intended for, se destiner à; pulpit, élairer; read over and over again, lire et relire sans cesse; aim, but.

Ce, joined to a relative pronoun, relates to things only. It is always masculine singular, because it only denotes a vague object, which is not sufficiently specified to know its gender and number.

**EXAMPLE.**

Ce qui flatte est plus dangereux que ce qui offense, What flatters is more dangerous than what offends.

**REMARK.** Ce, joined to the relative pronouns, qui, que, dont and quoi, has, in some instances, a construction peculiar to itself. Ce and the relative pronoun that follows it, form, with the verb which they precede, the subject of another phrase, of which the verb is always être. Now, être may be followed by another verb, an adjective, or a noun.

When être is followed by another verb, the demonstrative ce is to be repeated, as: ce que j'aime le plus c'est d'être seule, what I like most is to be alone.

When followed by an adjective, the demonstrative is not repeated, as: ce dont vous venez de me parler est horrible, what you have been mentioning to me is horrid.

When it is followed by a substantive, the demonstrative may either be repeated or not, at pleasure, except in the case of a plural, or a personal pronoun. Thus we can say, ce que je dis est, or, c'est la vérité, what I say is truth; though the former is best. But we say, ce qui m'indigne, ce sont les injustices qu'on ne cesse de faire; what provokes me, are the injures which are continually committed: ce qui m'arrache au sentiment qui m'accable, c'est vous; what alleviates the grief that oppresses me, is you. Most of these rules essentially contribute to the elegance of language.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

EXERCISE.

1. What is astonishing is not always what is pleasing.
2. What the miser thinks least of, is to enjoy his riches.
3. What pleases us in the writings of the ancients, is to see that they have taken nature as a model, and that they have painted her with a noble simplicity.
4. What that good king has done for the happiness of his people deserves to be handed down to the latest posterity.
5. What constitutes poetry is not the exact number and regular cadence of syllables; but it is the sentiment which animates everything, the lively fictions, bold figures, and beauty and variety of the imagery: it is the enthusiasm, fire, impetuosity, force, a something in the words and thoughts which nature alone can impart.
6. What we justly admire in Shakspeare are those characters always natural and always well sustained.
7. What keeps me attached to life is you, my son, whose tender age has still need of my care and advice.

1. Is astonishing, étonner; is pleasing, plaire.
2. What (that to which); miser, avare; to, de.
3. As a, pour.
4. Deserves, être digne; to be handed down, être transmis; latest, la plus reculée.
5. Constitutes, faire; exact, fixe; lively, viv; imagery, image, pl.; a something, un je ne sais quoi; words, parole; impart, donner.
6. We, en; justly, avec justice; natural, dans la nature; sustained, soutenu.
7. Keeps attached, attacher; care, advice, pl.

There are two ways of employing celui. In the first it is followed by a noun or pronoun preceded by the preposition de.

EXAMPLES.

Celui de vous qui, etc. | Whichever of you that, etc.
Cette montre ressemble à celle de votre frère. | That watch is like that of your brother.

In the second instance, it is followed by qui, que, or dont, as:

Celui qui ne pense qu'à lui seul. | He who thinks of nobody but himself.

Votre nouvelle est plus sûre que celle qu'on délibérait hier. | Your intelligence as more authentic than that which was circulated yesterday.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

In these two cases it is applied both to persons and things.

**Remark.** In this last instance we sometimes omit *celui*, and this turn gives strength and elegance to the expression, as: *qui veut trop se faire craindre, se fait rarement aimer*; he who wishes to make himself too much feared, seldom makes himself beloved.

*Ceci* and *cela* apply only to things.

**Remark.** In the familiar style, custom authorises us to say, in speaking of a child, or of country people amusing themselves, *cela est heureux*!

**Exercise.**

1. *Whichever of you* shall be found to excel the others both in mind and body, shall be acknowledged king of the island.

2. There are admirable pictures: *these are* after the manner of Rubens, and *those after* the manner of Van-Huysum.

3. Why are the statues of the most celebrated modern sculptors, notwithstanding the perfection to which the arts have been carried, so much inferior to *those of* the ancients?

4. *He whose* soul glowing, as it were, with divine fire, shall represent to himself the whole of nature, and shall breathe into objects that spirit of life which animates them, those affecting traits which delight and ravish us, will be a man of real genius.

5. *He that* judges of others by himself, is liable to many mistakes.

6. *He that* is easily offended, discovers his weak side, and affords his enemies an opportunity of taking advantage of it.

7. *He who* loves none but himself deserves not to be loved by others.

1. *Be found to excel the others*, on juger vainqueur; *both in*, et pour (repeated).

2. *There are*, voilà de; *picture, tableau*; *are after*, être dans; *manner, genre*.

3. *Are*, (to be placed before so much inferior); *have been carried, (active voice with on)*; *inferior, au-dessous*.

4. *Glowing with*, enflammé de; *as it were*, pour ainel div; *the whole of*, tout; *shall breathe into*, répondre sav; *affecting, touchant*; *delight, séduire*; *real, vrai*.

5. *By, d'après*; *liable, exposé*; *mistake, méprise*.

6. *Is offended, s’offenser*; *weak side, faible*; *affords, fournit*; *of taking advantage, profiter.*

E & 2
VI.

PRONOUNS INDEFINITE.

Though the pronoun on is generally followed by the masculine, as in the phrase, *on n’est pas toujours maître de ses passions*, there are occasions which show so evidently that a female is spoken of, that *on* is, in these cases, followed by a feminine, as: *on n’est pas toujours jeune et jolie*; it may likewise be followed by a plural, as: *on se battit en désespérés*; *est-on des traîtres?*

The pronoun is repeated before all the verbs of a sentence, but care must be taken that it refer to one and the same subject. Thus this sentence, *on croit être aimé et l’on ne nous aime pas*, is incorrect; we must say, *on croit être aimé et l’on ne l’est pas*.

*Quiconque* is masculine; however, it is sometimes feminine, and in speaking to women we can say, *quiriconque de vous*, etc. Though, perhaps, *celle de vous*, etc. is preferable.

EXERCISE.

1. Do you sincerely think, said Emily to Lucilla, that when women are sensible and pretty, they are ignorant of it; no, they know it very well: but if they are watchful over their character, they are not proud of these advantages.

2. We are not slaves, to receive such treatment.

3. Do you know what they do here? They eat, they drink, they dance, they play, they walk; in a word, they kill time in the gayest manner possible.

4. Whoever of you is bold enough to slander me, I will make him repent it.

5. Whoever of you is attentive and discreet, shall receive a reward that will flatter her.

1. Sincerity, de bonne foi; Emily, Emilie; women, femme; they, on; know, savoir; watchful over, jaloux de; character, réputation; are proud, s’énuoguerir.

2. We, on; slaves, (des) esclave; to receive, pour essuyer de.

3. They, on; in the gayest manner, le plus galiment; possibly, (that they can).

4. Is, ind-7; to slander, pour médire de; it, (of it).

5. It, ind-7; that will, fait pour.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

Chacun, though always singular, may be followed, sometimes by son, sa, ses, and sometimes by leur, leurs, which, in many instances, is very perplexing.

There is no difficulty in those phrases where chacun does not belong to a plural number; we then make use of son, sa, ses, as: donnez à chacun sa part, give to each his share; que chacun songe à ses affaires, let every one mind his own business.

But it is not so in phrases where chacun belongs to a plural number.

RULE. In phrases where chacun is contrasted with a plural to which it belongs, we make use of son, sa, ses, when chacun is placed after that regimen; but we must use leur, leurs, when chacun, is placed before the regimen.

EXAMPLES.

Remettes ces médailles chacune en sa place, Return those medals each into its proper place.

Ils hommes devraient s’aimer, Men ought to love one another, chacun pour son propre intérêt, each for his own interest.

But we must say:

Le hommes devraient avoir, Men ought, for their own interest, to have an affection chacun pour leur propre intérêt, de l’amour les uns pour les autres, for each other.

REMARK. In phrases where chacun is contrasted with a plural, there are two senses, the collective and the distributive. When chacun is placed after the regimen, the collective sense expressed by the plural is finished; and the distributive chacun must perform the office peculiar to it, by considering the whole kind separated into individuals: but when chacun is placed before the regimen, the collective sense is not completed, and consequently it must be carried on to the end.

The pronoun which follows chacun is put in the plural, as: la reine dit elle-même aux députés qu’il était temps qu’ils s’en retournassent chacun chez eux.
EXERCISE.

1. Go into my library, and put the books which have been sent back to me, each into its place.
2. They have all brought offerings to the temple, every one according to his means and devotion.
3. Thierry charged Uccelanus to carry his orders to the mutineers and to make them retire each under his colours.
4. Each of them has brought his offering and fulfilled his religious duty.
5. Had Boscawen and Balmé, each in his manner of writing, a sufficient degree of merit to form after them any very great men in verse and in prose?
6. After a day so usefully spent, we went back, each to our own home.
7. Minds that possess any correctness, examine things with attention, in order to give a fair judgment of them; and they place each 2 of * them 1 in the rank it ought to occupy.

2. Offerings, offrande.
3. To carry, aller porter; mutineers, mutin; colours, drapéau.
4. (They have brought each their, etc.); fulfilled, remplir.
5. Manner of writing, genre; a sufficient degree, assez; any, un.
6. Day, journée; went back, retourner; to, chez; our own home. (pron. personal).
7. Possess any, avoir de; correctness, justesse; give a fair judgment, juger avec connaissance; place, mettre; to occupy, avoir.

Personne, used as a pronoun, is always masculine; of course the adjective relating to it must be of that gender, as: personne n’est aussi heureux qu’elle, nobody is so happy as she.

It has been said that l’un et l’autre require the verb they govern to be in the plural. The most respectable grammarians are of opinion that ni l’un ni l’autre ought likewise to govern the verb in the plural; and indeed this pronoun evidently expresses two objects. However, some think that if the action expressed by the verb applies only to a single object, this verb ought to be preserved in the singular, and that therefore we ought to say: ni l’un ni l’autre n’est mon père; ni l’un ni l’autre ne sera nommé à cette ambassade; but when ni l’un ni l’autre elegantly stand after the
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

verb, there is no such distinction; the verb is always in the plural, as: ils ne sont morts ni l'un ni l'autre.

EXERCISE.

1. Nobody is so severe, so virtuous in public, as some women who have the least restraint in private.
2. Nobody could be happier than she; but by the consequence of that levity which you know she has, she has lost all the advantages that she had received from nature and education.
3. Racine and Fenelon will always be the delight of sensible hearts: both 2 possessed 1 in the highest degree: the art of exciting in us at their pleasure the most tender and the most lively emotions.
4. Balzac and Voiture enjoyed in their time great celebrity: but neither 2 has been read 1 since good taste has made 1 the native and simple graces 2 to be preferred 2 to the bombast of the first, and the affectation of the second.

1. So, aussi; some, certain; have the least restraint, être le moins retenu.
2. Could, ind-2; the, un; levity, légèreté; know she has, lui connaître.
3. Always, dans tous les temps; both, l'une et l'autre; in the au; pleasure, gré.
4. Enjoyed, ind-4; neither, ni l'un ni l'autre; has been read, (they read them no more); native, du naturel; simple, de la simplicité; be preferred, (active voice; bombast, bouffissure.

Tout, when the regimen direct, is placed after the verb, in simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle, in compound tenses, as: il avoue tout; il a tout avoué. But when it is the regimen indirect it is always placed after the verb, either in simple or compound tenses, as: il rit de tout; il a pensé à tout. Rien follows the same order of construction.

Tout is sometimes used as an adverb, and merely as an expletive: il lui dit tout froidement, he told him (quite) cooly. Sometimes also, instead, of quoique très entièrement, quelque; in which case the following rules must be observed.

RULE I. Tout does not alter its number before an adjective masculine, as: les enfants, tout aimables qu'ils sont, children, all amiable as they are; ils sont tout interdits, they are quite disconcerted.
RULE II. Tout takes neither gender nor number before an adjective feminine, beginning with a vowel or h mute: but it takes both gender and number before an adjective feminine, beginning with a consonant. We say: la vertu, tout austère qu'elle paroit; ces images, tout amusantes qu'elles sont: but we say, c'est une tête toute vide; ces dames toutes spirituelles qu'elles sont.

Exception. Tout takes neither gender nor number before an adjective feminine, beginning with a consonant, when it is immediately followed by an adverb. Thus we say, ces fleurs sont tout aussi fraîches que celles que vous avez; ces dames sont, tout ainsi que, tout comme vous, belles, jeunes et spirituelles. In this sense, tout is a mere expletive.

EXERCISE.

1. Children, amiable as they are, have nevertheless, many faults which it is of importance to correct.
2. The philosophers of antiquity, although very much enlightened have given us but very confused ideas of the deity, and very vague notions about the principal duties of the law of nature.
3. These flowers, inodorous as they are, are not the less esteemed.
4. Virtue, austère as it is, makes us enjoy real pleasures.
5. Fables, although very entertaining, yet truly instruct only when they convey to us instruction, under the disguise of an ingenuous allegory.
6. Although that absurd pedant is an incessant scribbler, yet his head is altogether empty.
7. Far be from us those maxims of flattery, that kings are born with talents, and that their favoured souls come out of God's hand completely wise and learned.
8. Those fountains glide quite gently through a mead enamelled with flowers.

1. Have, nevertheless, ne laisser pas d'avoir; faults, défaut; of importance, essentiel.
2. Enlightened, éclairés qu'ils étoient; of nature, naturel.
3. Inodorous, inodore; not, n'en.
4. Enjoy, goûter de.
5. Entertaining, amusantes qu'elles sont; truly, véritablement; convey, offrir; disguise, voile.
6. Incessant, inéfable; scribbler, écrivain; his head is, (he has not less the head); not, n'en; altogether, tout.
7. Far be, loin; of, de, art.; are born, naître; with talents, habite; favoured, privilégié; come out, sortir; learned, savant.
8. Glide, couler; gently, doucement; through a meadow, sur un gazon.
Particular Rules of the Pronouns.

9. The peaches are quite as good as those of the south of France.


Quelque que joined to a substantive, either single or accompanied by an adjective, takes the mark of the plural.

Examples.
Quelques richesses que vous ayez. Whatever riches you may have.
Quelques bonnes œuvres que vous fussiez, may do.
Quelques peines affreuses que vous éprouviez. may suffer.

But when joined to an adjective separated from its substantive, it does not take the mark of the plural.

Examples.
Tous les hommes, quelque op-| All men, however opposite they
posés qu’ils soient ; may be.
Ces actions, quelque belles qu’on | Those actions, however brill-
trouve ; les may be found.

We have seen that quelque que and quel que, joined to a substantive, have the same meaning, although they are not used indifferently for each other. If the pronoun stands before the substantive, we make use of quelque que, as: quelles richesses que vous ayez ; but if the substantive be after the que and the verb, then we make use of quel que in two separate words, as: quelles que soient les richesses que vous ayez.

Exercise.

1. Whatever talents you may possess, whatever advantages you may have received from nature and education, with what-
ever perfections you may be endowed, expect the suffrages but
of a small number of men.

2. Whatever great services you may have rendered mankind,
rather look for their ingratitude than their acknowledgments.

3. However useful, however well written the works which you have published, yet think not that you will immediately reap

1. Possess, avoir ; have received, tenir ; be endowed, posséder ;
expect, ne s’attendre à ; but, que.

2. Mankind, homme, pl ; rather look for, compter plutôt ;
acknowledgment, reconnaissance.

3. Immediately, de suite ; reap, récompenser ; by slow degree,
the fruits of your labours; it is but by slow degrees that light introduces itself among men. The course of time is swift; but it seems to lag, when it brings reason and truth along with it.

avec lenteur; among, chez; swift, rapide; to lag, se trainer along with it, à sa suite.

4. Whatever may be the obstacles which ignorance, prejudice, and envy oppose to the true principles of an art, yet we ought never to be deterred from propagating them: the sun does not cease to shine, because its light hurts the eyes of nightbirds.

5. Whatever be your birth, whatever your riches and dignities, remember that you are frustrating the views of providence, if you do not make use of them for the good of mankind.

4. We, on; to be deterred, se rebuter; propagating, répandre; shine, éclairer; its, the article; hurts, blesser; nightbirds, oiseau de nuit.

5. Are frustrating, frustrer.

CHAPTER V.

OF THE VERB.

AGREEMENT OF THE VERB WITH ITS SUBJECT.

It has been observed that the verb which has two subjects, both singular, is put in the plural: but to this rule there are the following

EXCEPTIONS.

1st. Though a verb may have two subjects in the singular, yet that verb is not put in the plural, when the two subjects are joined together by the conjunctions, ou, comme, aussi bien que, autant que, etc.

EXAMPLES.

La séduction on le terreur l’a entraîné dans le parti des rebelles; Either persuasion or terror has drawn him into the party of the rebels.

Le roi, aussi bien que son ministère, veut le bien public; The king, as well as his ministry, wishes for the public good.

Son honnêteté, autant que son esprit, le fait rechercher; His honesty, as much as his wit, makes him courted.

L’envie, comme l’ambition, est une passion aveugle; Envy, like ambition, is a blind passion.

2dly. The verb is likewise put in the singular, notwithstanding plurals may precede it, either when there is an expression which collects all the substantives in-
Particular Rules of the Verb. 834

into one such as tout, ce, rien, etc. or when the conjunction mais is placed before the last substantive.

EXAMPLES.

Biens, dignités, honneurs, tout; Riches, dignities, honours, every thing vanishes at death.
Jeux, conversations, spectacles, rien ne la distraint; Games, conversations, shows, nothing diverts her.
Perfidies, noircœurs, incendies, massacres, ce n’est là qu’une faible image, etc. Perfidies, enormities, conflagrations, massacres, all this is but a feeble representation, etc.
Non-seulement toutes ses richesses et tous ses honneurs, mais toute sa vertu s’évanouit; Not only all his riches and honours, but all his virtue vanishes.

EXERCISE.

1. Either fear or inability prevented them from moving.
2. The fear of death, or rather the love of life, began to revive in his bosom.
3. Alcibiades, as well as Plato, was among the disciples of Socrates.
4. Lycurgus, like Solon, was a wise legislator.
5. Euripides, as much as Sophocles, contributed to the glory of the Athenians.
6. Riches, dignities, honours, glory, pleasure, every thing loses its charms from the moment we possess it; because none of those things can fill the heart of man.
7. The gentle zephyrs which preserved, in that place, notwithstanding the scorching heat of the sun, a delightful coolness; springs gliding with a sweet murmuring through meadows interspersed with amaranths and violets; a thousand springing flowers with enamelled carpets ever green; a wood of those tufted trees that bear golden apples, and the blossom of which renewed every season, yields the sweetest of all perfumes; the warbling of birds, the continual prospect of a fruitful country;

1. Inability, impuissance; moving, remuer.
2. Began to revive, se réveiller; in, au fond de; bosom, cœur.
3. Among, au nombre de.
4. We, on; none, rien; those things, tout cela.
5. Preserved, entretenir; scorching heat, ardeur; interspersed with, semer de; springing, naissant; carpets, tapis; tufted, tondu; golden (of gold); renewed, (which renew) se renouveler; (in) every season; yields, répandre; prospect,
Particular Rules of the Verb.

In a word, nothing of what till then had made him happy, could deaden the feeling of his grief.

spectacle; made, rendre; deaden, Farracher à; feeling, sentiment.

OF THE COLLECTIVE PARTITIVE.

The collectives general have nothing to distinguish them from substantives common, with regard to the laws of agreement; but the collectives partitive apparently break through these laws in some instances.

RULE. The verb, which relates to a collective partitive, is put in the plural when that partitive is followed by the preposition de and a plural; but it is put in the singular, either when the partitive is followed by a regimen singular, or when it expresses a determinate quantity, or lastly, when it presents an idea independent of the plural which follows it.

EXAMPLES.

La plupart des hommes sont bien prompts dans leurs jugements.
Bien des philosophes se sont trompés.

But we ought to say:

Une infinité de peuple est accourue (regimen singular),
La moitié des soldats a péri (determinate quantity),
Le plus grand nombre des troupes a péri (idea independent of the plural).

We see, then, that the substantives partitive, la plupart, une infinité, une foule, un nombre, la plus grande partie, une sorte, etc. and words signifying quantity, such as peu, beaucoup, assez, moins, plus, trop, tant, combien, and que used for combien, followed by a noun joined to them by the preposition de, have not the least influence on the verb, and consequently, it is not with them that the verb agrees, but with the noun which follows them.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

Remark. The words infiniment and la plupart, used by themselves, require the verb in the plural, as: une infiniment pensent, la plupart sont d'avis.

Exercise.

1. Many persons experience that human life is everywhere a state in which much is to be endured and little to be enjoyed.
2. Many poets think that poetry is the art of uniting pleasure with truth, by calling imagination to the help of reason.
3. Few persons reflect that time, like money, may be lost by unreasonable avarice.
4. So many years of familiarity were chains of iron which linked me to those men who beset me every hour.
5. How many wise men have thought that to seclude one's self from the world, was to pull out the teeth of devouring animals, and to take away from the wicked the use of his poison, from carnalism its poisons, and from envy its serpents!
6. A company of young Phanicians of uncommon beauty, clad in fine linen, whiter than snow, danced a long while the dances of their own country, then those of Egypt, and lastly those of Greece.
7. A troop of nymphs, crowned with flowers, whose lovely tresses flowed over their shoulders and waved with the wind, swam in shoals behind her car.
8. At the time of the invasion of Spain by the Moors, an innumerable multitude of people retired into the Asturias, and there proclaimed Pelagius king.
9. A third part of the enemy were left dead on the field of battle; the rest surrendered at discretion.
10. The innumerable crowd of carriages which are to be seen in London during the winter, astonishes foreigners.

1. Much is, etc. (one has a great deal of pains, and little of real enjoyments).
2. Unseasonable, hors de propos.
3. Familiarity, habitude; linked, lier; beset, obséder.
4. How many, que de; to seclude one's self, se retirer; pull out of, arracher à; to take away from, éloigner.
5. Company, troupe; clad in, et vêtu de; lain, lain.
6. Lovely, beau; tresses, cheveux; flowed, pendre; moved, floter; with, au gré de; march, nager; shoals, foule; car, char.
7. Moors, Maure; retired, se retirer; Asturias, Asturies; Pelagius, Pélagus.
8. A third part, un tiers; enemy, pl.; surrendered, se rendre.
9. Crowd, quantité; which are, (active voice, on).
is a word, nothing of what till then had made him happy, could
deaden the feeling of his grief.
spectacle; made, rendre; deaden, Parracher à; feeling, senti-
ment.

OF THE COLLECTIVE PARTITIVE.
The collectives general have nothing to distinguish them from substantives common, with regard to the
laws of agreement; but the collectives partitive appear-
tly break through those laws in some instances.

RULE. The verb, which relates to a collective partitive, is put in the plural when that partitive is
followed by the preposition de and a plural; but it is
put in the singular, either when the partitive is fol-
lowed by a regimen singular, or when it expresses a
determinate quantity, or lastly, when it presents an
idea independent of the plural which follows it.

EXAMPLES.
La plupart des hommes sont bien prompts dans leurs juge-
ments.
Bien des philosophes se sont trompés.

But we ought to say:
Une infinité de peuple est accourue (regimen singular).
La moitié des soldats a péri (determinate quantity).
Le plus grand nombre des troupes a péri (idea indepen-
dent of the plural).

We see, then, that the substantives partitive, la plu-
part, une infinité, une foule, un nombre, la plus grande
partie, une sorte, etc. and words signifying quantity,
such as peu, beaucoup, assez, moins, plus, trop, tant,
combien, and que used for combien, followed by a noun
joined to them by the preposition de, have not the
least influence on the verb, and consequently, it is
not with them that the verb agrees, but with the noun
which follows them.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

Remark. The words infinîté and la plupart, used by themselves, require the verb in the plural, as: une infinîté pensent, la plupart sont d'avis.

Exercise.

1. Many persons experience that human life is everywhere a state in which much is to be endured and little to be enjoyed.
2. Many poets think that poetry is the art of uniting pleasure with truth, by calling imagination to the help of reason.
3. Few persons reflect that time, like money, may be lost by unseasonable avarice.
4. So many years of familiarity were chains of iron which linked me to those men who beset me every hour.
5. How many wise men have thought that to include one's self from the world, was to pull out the teeth of devouring animals, and to take away from the wicked the use of his poison, from causticity its poisons, and from envy its serpents!
6. A company of young Phœnicians of uncommon beauty, clad in fine linen, whiter than snow, danced a long while the dances of their own country, then those of Egypt, and lastly those of Greece.
7. A troop of nymphs, crowned with flowers, whose lovely tresses flowed over their shoulders and waved with the wind, swam in shoals behind her car.
8. At the time of the invasion of Spain by the Moors, an innumerable multitude of people retired into the Asturias, and there proclaimed Pelagius king.
9. A third part of the enemy were left dead on the field of battle; the rest surrendered at discretion.
10. The innumerable crowd of carriages which are to be seen in London during the winter, astonishes foreigners.

1. Much is, etc. (one has a great deal of pains, and little of real enjoyments).
3. Unseasonable, hors de propos.
4. Familiarity, habitude; linked, lier; beset, obséder.
5. How many, que de; to seclude one's self, se retirer; pull out of, arracher à; to take away from, ôter à.
6. Company, troupe; clad in, et vêtu de; lain, lain.
7. Lovely, beau; tresses, cheveux; flowed, pendire; moved, flotté; with, au gré de; men, manger; shoals, foulée; car, char.
8. Moors, Maure; retired, se retirer; Asturias, Asturias; Pelagius, Pélagus.
9. A third part, un tiers; enemy, pl.; surrendered, se rendre.
10. Crowd, quantité; which are, (active voice, on).
PLACE OF THE SUBJECT WITH REGARD TO THE VERB.

We have seen that the subject of a verb is either a noun or a pronoun, and that this subject must always be expressed in French. It now only remains to know its place with respect to the verb.

RULE. The subject, whether noun or pronoun, is generally placed before the verb.

EXAMPLES.

L'ambition effrénée de quelques hommes, dans tous les temps,
était la vraie cause des révolutions des États ;
Quand nous mangeons dans la 
abondance, il est bien rare que 
noo nous occupions des maux 
d'autrui ;
The unbridled ambition of a few men has, in all ages, been the real cause of the revolutions of empires.
When we roll in plenty, we seldom think of the miseries of others.

EXERCISE.

1. Youth is full of presumption; it expects every thing from itself; although frail, it thinks itself all-sufficient, and that it has nothing to fear.

2. Commerce is like certain springs; if you attempt to divert their course, you dry them up.

3. It is enough that falsehood is falsehood, to be unworthy of a man who speaks in the presence of God, and who is to sacrifice every thing to truth.

4. The ambition and avarice of man are the sources of his unhappiness.

5. They punish, in Crete, three vices which have remained unpunished in all other nations: ingratitude, dissimulation and avarice.

6. Like the Numidian lion, goaded by cruel hunger, and rushing upon a flock of feeble sheep, he tears, he slays, he swims in blood.

1. Full of presumption, présomptueux; expects, se promettre; itself all-sufficient, pouvoir tout; that it has, avoir.

2. Springs, source; attempt, vouloir; dry up, faire tarir.

3. It is enough, suffire; falsehood, mensonge; is, subj.; in, en; is to sacrifice, doit.

5. Punished, ind-2; have remained, être; in, chez.

6. Like, semblable à; goaded by, etc. (that cruel hunger goads), dévorer; rushing, (which rushes upon), entrer dans; tears, découver; slays, égorger.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

EXCEPTIONS.

1st. In interrogative phrases, the question is made either with a pronoun or a noun; if with a pronoun, this is always placed after the verb, as: que dit-on? trai-je à la campagne? de qui parle-t-on? if with a noun, the noun is sometimes placed before, and sometimes after the verb; it stands before when the pronoun personal which answers to it, asks the question, as: cette nouvelle est-elle sûre? les hommes se rendent-ils toujours à la raison? it stands after, when a pronoun absolute or an interrogative adverb, placed at the beginning of the phrase, allow the suppression of the personal pronoun, as: que dit votre ami? à quoi s'occupe votre frère? ou demeure votre cousin?

REMARK. In interrogative sentences, when the verb which precedes il, elle, on, ends with a vowel, the letter e is put between that verb and the pronoun, as: arrive-t-il? viendra-t-elle? aime-t-on les vauriens? When je is after a verb, which ends with e mute, we change that e mute into é acute, as: aimé-je? puisse-je? But, as custom does not always admit je after the verb, we must adopt another turn, and say, in interrogating: est-ce que je cours? est-ce que je dors?

1. Have you forgotten all that Providence has done for you? how have you escaped the shafts of your enemies? how have you been preserved from the dangers which surrounded you on all sides? could you be so blind as not to acknowledge and adore the all-powerful hand that has miraculously saved you?

2. What will posterity say of you, if, instead of devoting to the happiness of mankind the great talents which you have received from nature, you make use of them only to deceive and corrupt them?

3. Do not the misfortunes which we experience often contribute to our prosperity?

1. Escaped, échapper à; shafts, trait; preserved, garanti; on all sides, de toutes parts; so as, assé pour; saved, conserver.

2. Devoting, consacrer; mankind, homme, pl.; deceive, égarer.

3. Experience, éprouver; turn out, tourner en.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

4. Why are the works of nature so perfect? Because each work is a whole, and because she labours upon an eternal plan, from which she never deviates. Why, on the contrary, are the productions of man so imperfect? It is because the human mind being unable to create anything, and incapable of embracing the universe at a single glance, can * produce, only after having been enriched by experience and meditation.

4. *Because, c’est que; and because, et que; being unable, ne pouvoir; incapable, (not being able); et, de; glance, vue; enriched, fécondé.

2dly. In the incidental sentences which express that we are quoting somebody’s words, as: je meurs innocent, a dit Louis XVI. I die innocent, said Louis XVI. Je le veux bien, dit-il; I am very willing, said he.

3dly. -With an impersonal verb, and these words, tel, ainsi. Il est arrivé un grand malheur, a great misfortune has happened. Tel était l’acharnement du soldat que, etc. such was the fury of the soldier that, etc. Ainsi finit cette sanglante tragédie, thus ended that bloody tragedy.

EXERCISE.

1. True glory, said he, is founded in humanity: whoever prefers his own glory to the feelings of humanity, is a monster of pride, and not a man.

2. There have happened for these * ten years, so many events, exceeding all probability, that posterity will find it very difficult to credit them.

3. Such was that incorruptible Phocion, who answered the deputies of Alexander, who were telling him that this powerful monarch loved him as the only honest man; well, then *, let him allow me 1 to be and to appear so.

1. Is founded, ne se trouve pas hors de; feelings, sentiment.

2. There have happened for, il se passer depuis; exceeding, hors de; probability, vraisemblance; will find very difficult, avoir bien de la peine; to credit, ajouter foi à.

3. Loved, chérir; honest man, homme de bien; well, he! to be so, d’être tel; appear so, le paraître.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

4. Thus ended, by the humiliation of Athens, that dreadful war of twenty-seven years, to which ambition gave rise, which hatred made atrocious, and which was as fatal to the Greeks, as their ancient confederation had proved advantageous to them.

4. Ended, se terminer; gave rise, faire naître; made, rendre; had proved, être.

4thly. When the subjunctive is used to express a wish, or for quand même and a conditional, as: puissent tous les peuples se convaincre de cette vérité; may all nations be convinced of this truth; dus-t-je y périr, j’irai; should I perish there, I will go.

5thly. When the subject is followed by several words which are dependent upon it. This exception is strictly to be attended to, when the words which depend on the subject form an incidental sentence which, by its length, might obscure the relation of the verb to the subject. Perspicuity here requires that the subject should be so displaced.

Sometimes, however, this displacing of the subject is only the effect of taste, and happens when we wish to avoid an inharmonious cadence: or when, in the middle of a speech, an orator wishes to rouse the attention of his hearers by a bold and unexpected turn.

Exercise.

1. The gods grant that you may never experience such misfortunes!

2. May you, O wise old man! in a repose diversified by pleasing occupations, enjoy the past, lay hold of the present, and charm your latter days with the hope of eternal felicity.

3. What is not in the power of the gods! were you at the lowest depths, the power of Jupiter could draw you from thence: were you in Olympus, beholding the stars under your feet, Jupiter could plunge you to the bottom of the abyss, or precipitate you into the flames of gloomy Tartarus.

1. Grant, faire; experience, éprouver de.

2. Old man, vieillard; lay hold of, saisir; with, de.

3. Is not in the power, ne peuvent; were, subj-2, lowest depths, fond de l'abîme; power, puissance; could, pouvoir, empr-1; Olympus, Olympe; stars, astre; gloomy, noir; Tar- tarus, Tartare.
344 Particular Rules of the Verb.

4. There, through meadows enamelled with flowers, glide a thousand various rivulets, distributing every where their pure (limpid) waters.

5. Already, for the honour of France, there* had come into administration a man more distinguished for his understanding and virtues than for his dignities.

4 Through, au milieu de; with, de; glide, serpenter; rivulets, ruisseau; distributing, (which distribute).

5. Had come, être entré; administration (of affairs), understanding, esprit.

GOVERNMENT OF THE VERBS.

We have already observed, that when the regimen of a verb is a noun, it is generally placed after the verb: but to this rule there is one exception, besides those which will hereafter be mentioned.

EXCEPTION. In an interrogative sentence, the regimen is placed before the verb, when this regimen is joined to an absolute pronoun.

EXAMPLES.

Quel objet voyez-vous? | What object do you see?
A quelle science vous appliquez-vous? | To what science do you apply yourself?
De quelle affaire vous occupez-vous? | About what business are you employed?

REMARK. In French, a verb can never have two regimens direct; therefore, when a verb has two regimens, one of them must necessarily be preceded by a preposition.

EXAMPLES.

Donnez ce livre à votre frère. | Give that book to your brother.
On a accusé Ciceron d’imprudence et de joiblasse, | Cicero has been accused of im- prudence and weakness.

According to the natural order of the ideas, it should seem that the regimen direct ought to be placed before the indirect: however, as the perspicuity of the sentence does not allow it in all cases, the following rule must be observed.
RULE. When a verb has two regimens, the shorter is generally placed first; but if they be of equal length, the regimen direct must be placed before the indirect.

EXAMPLES.

Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer le vice des dehors de la vertu. Hypocrites make it their study to deck vice with the exterior of virtue.

Les hypocrites s'étudient à parer des dehors de la vertu les vices les plus honteux et les plus décriés, Hypocrites make it their study to deck with the exterior of virtue the most shameful and most odious vices.

L'ambition sacrifie le présent à l'avenir, mais la volupté sacrifie l'avenir au présent. Ambition sacrifices the present to the future, but pleasure sacrifices the future to the present.

EXERCISE.

1. Illustrious examples teach us, that God has hurled from their thrones princes who contempted his laws: he reduced to the condition of beasts the haughty Nebuchadnessar, who wanted to usurp divine honours.

2. Wretched is* the man who feeds his mind with chimeras.

3. Our interest should prompt us to prefer virtue to vice, wisdom to pleasure, and modesty to vanity.

1. Teach, apprendre; hurled, renverser; haughty, superbe; Nebuchadnessar, Nabuchodonosor; wanted, vouloir.

2. Feeds, repaire.

3. Should, devoir, ind-1; prompt, porter; pleasure, volupté.

RULE. A noun may be governed at once by two verbs, provided those verbs do not require different regimens.

EXAMPLES.

On doit aimer et respecter les rois. We ought to love and respect kings.

Ce général attaqua et prit la ville. That general attacked and took the city.

But we must not say, cet officier attaqua et se rendit maître de la ville, that officer attacked and made himself master of the city. A different turn should be given to the sentence, by placing the noun after the first verb, and en before the second, as: cet officier attaqua et
Particular Rules of the Verb.

Taqua la ville et s'en rendit maître, that officer attacked the city and made himself master of it.

Exercise.

1. Luxury is like a torrent, which carries away and overturns every thing it meets.
2. Nothing can resist the operation of time: it, at length, undermines, alters or destroys every thing.
3. Among the Spartans, public education had two objects: the first, to harden their bodies by fatigue; the second, to excite and nourish in their minds the love of their country, and an enthusiasm for what is great.

1. Carries away, entraîner; overturns, renverser; every thing, tout ce que.
2. Operation, action; at length, à la longue; undermines, miner.
3. Among the Spartans, à Sparte; to, de; harden, endurcir; by, à; their must be rendered by the article; for, de.

OF THE USE PROPER OR ACCIDENTAL OF MOODS AND TENSES.

Indicative.

The present is used to express an existing state, as: je suis ici, I am here; an invariable state, as: Dieu est de toute éternité, God is from all eternity; a future near at hand, as: c'est demain fête, to-morrow is a holiday; or even a preterit, when we mean to give a sort of picture of what would have been a mere narration.
Thus, we find in Racine: j'ai vu votre malheureux fils trainé par ses chevaux, I have seen your unhappy son dragged along by his horses; but suddenly passing from the preterit to the present, he adds: il veut les rappeler, et sa voix les effraie; he calls out to stop them, but his voice frightens them.

In English, the verb to be is frequently used with the participle present, as: I am reading, I was translating, I shall be writing; a construction not adopted in French, and whenever found, it is to be translated in French simply by the verb put in the tense expressed by the verb to be. Thus, am being in the present tense of the verb to be, I am reading must be expressed by je lis, the present tense of the verb lire to read; and shall be being the future tense of the verb to be, I
Particular Rules of the Verb.

shall be writing must be rendered j’écritai, being the future tense of the verb écrire, to write.

1. He is in his chamber, where he is unbending his mind from the fatigue of business, by some instructive and agreeable reading.

2. Truth, eternal by its nature, is immutable as God himself.

3. I never let a day pass without devoting an hour or two to reading the ancients.

4. It is this week that the new piece comes out.

5. The acmes were in sight, nothing was heard on all sides but dreadful cries: the engagement began. Immediately a cloud of arrows darkens the air and covers the combatants; nothing is heard but the doleful cries of the dying, or the clattering of the arms of those who fall in the conflict; the earth groans beneath a heap of dead bodies, and rivers of blood stream everywhere.

The imperfect is used to denote the repetition of an action at a time which is past, as: quand j’étais à Paris, j’allois souvent aux Champs Elysées; when I was at Paris, I often went to the Champs Elysées: 2dly. For a past which has some duration, especially in narrations, as: Rome étoit d’abord gouvérnée par des rois, Rome was at first governed by kings.

1. When I was at Paris, I went every morning to take a walk in the Champs Elysées, or the Bois de Boulogne; afterwards I came home, where I employed myself till dinner, either in reading or writing; and in the evening, I generally went for amusement to the French Theatre or the Opera.

1. Take a walk, se promener; in, à: came home, rentrer chez soi; was busy, s’occuper; reading, (by the verb) ; for amusement, me délasser; French Theatre, Comédie Française.
2. When I was in the prime of life, like the light butterfly I fluttered from object to object, without being able to settle to any thing; eager for pleasure, I seized every thing that had its appearance: alas! how far was I then from foreseeing that I should deplore with so much bitterness the loss of this precious time.

3. For a short time after Abraham, the knowledge of the true God still appeared in Palestine and Egypt. Melchisedec, king of Salem, was the priest of the Most High God. Abimelech, king of Gerar, and his successor of the same name, feared God, swore by his name, and reverenced his power. But in Moses's time, the nations adored even beasts and reptiles. Every thing was God but God himself.

2. Prime of life, fleur de l'âge; butterfly, papillon; fluttered, voler; being able, pouvoir; settle, me fixer; eager for, avoir de; had its appearance, m'en présentaït l'image; how, que; with so much bitterness, (so bitterly).

3. Swore, jurer; reverenced, admirer; the nations, on; even, jusqu'à; but, excepté.

In French, the preterit definite and the preterit indefinite are not used indifferently.

We make use of the preterit definite, when speaking of a time which is entirely past, and of which nothing remains, as: je fis un voyage à Bath le mois dernier, I took a journey to Bath last month; j'écrit hier à Rome, I wrote yesterday to Rome. To authorize the use of this tense, there must be the interval of at least one day. It is most used in the historic style.

EXERCISE.

1. Amenophis conceived the design of making his son a conqueror. He set about it, after the manner of the Egyptians, that is, with great ideas. All the children who were born on the same day as Sesostris, were brought to court by order of the king; he had them educated as his own children, and with the same care as Sesostris. When he was grown up, he made him serve his apprenticeship in a war against the Arabs: this young prince learned there to bear hunger and thirst, and subdued that nation, till then invincible. He afterwards attacked Lybia, and conquered it. After these successes, he formed the project of subduing the whole world. In consequence of this, he entered Ethiopia, which he made tributary. He continued his

1. Making, faire de; set about it, s'y prendre; after, à; ideas, pensées; brought, amener; had educated, faire élever; grown up,
Particular Rules of the Verb.

victories in Asia. Jerusalem was the first to feel the force of his arms; the rash Rehoboam could not resist him, and Sesostris carried away the riches of Solomon. He penetrated into the Indies, farther than Hercules and Bacchus, and farther than Alexander did afterward. The Scythians obeyed him as far as the Tanais; Armenia and Cappadocia were subject to him. In a word, he extended his empire from the Ganges to the Danube.

grand ; made serve, faire faire ; apprenticeship, apprentissage ; in par ; entered, entrer dans ; made, rendre ; as far as, jusqu'à ; Cappadocia, Cappadoce.

The preterit indefinite is used either for a past indeterminate, or for a past of which something still remains, as: j'ai voyagé en Italie, I have travelled in Italy; j'ai déjeuné ce matin à Londres et dîné à Richmond, I breakfasted this morning in London and dined at Richmond.

The preterit indefinite is sometimes used instead of a future just approaching, as: avez-vous bientôt fini ? have you soon done? oui, j'ai fini dans le moment; yes, I shall have done in a moment.

EXERCISE.

1. Enflamed with the desire of knowing mankind, I have travelled, not only to the most polished nations, but even to the most barbarous. I have observed them in the different degrees of civilization, from the state of simple nature to the most perfect state of society, and wherever I went, the result was the same: that is to say, I have every where seen beings occupied in drying up the different sources of happiness that nature had placed within their reach.

2. I have travelled this year in Italy, where I had an opportunity of seeing several master-pieces of antiquity, and where I made a valuable collection of scarce medals. I there admired the perfection to which they have brought architecture, painting, and music: but what pleased me most there, was the beauty of the climate of Naples.

1. With, de; mankind, homme, pl.; to, chez; polished nations, peuple poli; savage nations, nation sauvage; from, depuis; to, jusqu'à; wherever I went, dans tous les pays; the result was the same. (I had the same result) in drying up, à tirer; within their reach, à leur portée.

2. Opportunity, occasion; master-pieces, chef-d’œuvre; scarce, rare; pleased me most, faire le plus de plaisir; was, ind-1.
The two preterits anterior differ in the same manner as the two preceding preterits, but they are always accompanied by a conjunction or an adverb of time, as: je suis sorti dès que j'ai eu dîné, I went out as soon as I had dined; j'eus fini hier à midi, I had done yesterday at noon.

The *plerperfect* denotes that a thing was done before another, which was itself done at a time which is past, as: j'avais soupir quand il entra, I had supped when he came in.

**EXERCISE.**

1. As soon as I had examined this phenomenon, I tried to find out its causes.

2. As soon as we had crossed the river, we found ourselves in a wood where there was not a single path-way traced.

3. As soon as the great Semostis had satisfied his ambition, by the conquest of so many empires, he returned into Egypt, where he devoted the whole of the day to administering strict justice to his people, and in the evening, he recreated himself by holding conferences with the learned, or by conversing with the most upright people of his kingdom.

4. I had only received, like most of the grandees, an education in which I had imbibed nothing but sentiments of pride and insensibility; that is, they had done every thing in their power, to stifle in me the bappy and benevolent dispositions which I had received from nature.

1. As soon as, dès que; tried to find out, en rechercher.

2. Crossed, traverser; found ourselves, se trouver engage; path-way, sentier de.

3. The whole of the day, jour entier; administering, rendre, inf-1; strict, exact; recreated, délaisser; by holding conferences, à s'entretenir; upright, honnête; people, gens.

4. Grandes, grand; imbibed, pouser; they, en; in their power, ce qu'on pouvait; stifle, étouffer; benevolent, bienlais-

As foreigners find the use of these different preterits attended with great difficulty, we shall give the following analysis, in order more clearly to explain the manner in which we use them.

We read in Marmontel:

Céliour, à l'âge de quinze ans, Céliour, at the age of fifteen, avait été dans le monde ce had been in the world what qu'on appelle un petit pro- dige.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

The author employs the pluperfect, because he speaks of a period of time anterior to all those which he is going to mention.

*Il faisait des vers les plus ga-lans du monde ; il n'y avait pas dans le voisinage une joli-femme qu'il n'ait célèb-rée ; c'étoit dommage de laisser sans de talents enfouis dans une petite ville ; Paris devoi-en être le théâtre.*

*He composed the most agree-able love-sonnets imagin-able : there was not a pretty woman in the neighbourhood that he had not celebrated ; it was pity to let so many talents be buried, in a little town ; Paris was the theatre on which they ought to be exhibited.*

Here the author makes use of the imperfect, because he speaks of the habitual employ of Celicour.

*Et l'on fit si bien, que son père se résolut de l'y envoyer ;* And they contrived matters so, that his father determined to send him there.

Now the author passes to the preterit definite, because he is no longer speaking of what Celicour used to do, but of what he did at a time past, and of which nothing remains.

*Ce père était un honnête homme, qu'avait l'esprit sans en avoir, et qui aimait, sans savoir pourquoi, tout ce qui venoit de la capitale. Il avait même des relations li-téraires, et du nombre de ses correspondans étoit un con-noisseur nommé M. de Fintac.*

*This father was a good sort of man, who was fond of wit, without having any, and admired, without knowing why, every thing that came from the metropolis. Nay, he even had some literary connexions, and among his correspondents was a connoisseur of the name of Fintac.*

Here, again, the author resumes the form of the imperfect, because he is now speaking of the habitual state of Celicour's father, in his little town, and because in this passage he merely relates what that father was doing at a time past, which has no kind of relation to the present.

*Il fut principalement à lui que Celicour fut recommandé,* It was particularly to him that Celicour was recommended.

The form of the preterit definite is now resumed, because this is an action passed, at a time of which nothing is left, etc.
EXERCISE.

1. God, who had created his angels in holiness, would have their happiness depend upon themselves: they might insure their felicity, by giving themselves willingly to their Creator; but they delighted in themselves, and not in God: immediately those spirits of light became spirits of darkness.

2. There is a letter which Philocles has written to a friend of his, about his project of making himself king of Carpathus. I perused that letter, and it seemed to me to be the hand of Philocles. They had perfectly imitated his writing. This letter threw me into a strange surprise. I read it again and again, and could not persuade myself that it was written by Philocles, when I recalled to my mind the affecting marks which he had given me of his disinterestedness and integrity.

3. Those who had shown the greatest zeal for the state and my person did not think themselves obliged to undeceive me, after so terrible an example. I myself was afraid lest truth should break through the cloud, and reach me in spite of all my flatterers. I felt within myself that it would have raised in me bitter remorse. My effeminacy, and the dominion which a treacherous minister had gained over me, threw me into a kind of despair of ever recovering my liberty.

1. Have their happiness to depend, (that their happiness), dépendre, subj-2; might, pouvoir; delighted in, se plaire en; of light, lumineux; darkness, ténèbres.

2. There is, voila; about, sur; Carpathus, Carpathie: to be, de; they, on; again and again, sans cesse; by, de; when I recalled to, repasser dans, int-3; integrity, bonne foi.

3. Think not themselves obliged to, se croire dispensé de; was afraid lest, craindre que; break through, percier, subj-2; reach, parvenir jusqu'à; in spite of, malgré; raised in, causer à; effeminacy, mollesse; dominion, ascendant; treacherous, perfide; gained, prendre; threw, plonger; recovering, rentrer en.

The difference between the two future tenses is, that the period of time expressed by the future absolute may or may not be determined, as: j'irai à la campagne, or, j'irai demain à la campagne; while, in the future anterior, the time is necessarily determined, as: j'aurai fini quand vous arriverez.

EXERCISE.

1. Remember that youth is but a flower, which will wither up almost as soon as open. Thou wilt see thyself gradually changed.

1. Will wither, (will be almost as soon withered) sécher;
PARTICULAR RULES OF THE VERB.

353

Smiling graces, sweet pleasures, strength, health, and joy will vanish like a pleasing dream; nothing but the sad remembrance will be left thee.

2. I shall next year take a journey into Greece, and I am preparing myself for it by reading that of the young Anarcheist.

3. When you have read the celebrated discourse of Bossuet on Universal History, and studied in it the causes of the grandeur and the fall of states, you will be less astonished at the revolutions, more or less sudden, that modern empires have experienced, which appeared to you in the most flourishing state.

open, écrire; gradually, insensiblement; lively, riant; nothing will be left, il n'en restera.

2. Faire, faire; for it, y; reading, lecture de.

3. Have read, ind.8; and, que vous, ind.8; in it, y; fall, chute; sudden, subite; (that have experienced the modern empires, which, etc.); appeared, ind.2.

CONDITIONAL.

We make use of the conditional:

1st. To express a wish, as: que je serois, or, j’aurais été, content de réussir dans cette affaire, how glad I should be, or should have been, to succeed in that affair.

2dly. With si, if, whether, expressing a doubt, as: Demandez-lui s’il serait venu avec nous, supposé qu’il n’est pas eu affaire; ask him whether he would have come with us, had he not been busy.

3dly. Before or after the imperfect, or pluperfect of the indicative, preceded by si, as: nous nous épargnions bien des peines, si nous savions modérer nos désirs; we should spare ourselves much pain, did we know how to moderate our desires. Vous auriez été plus heureux, si vous aviez suivi mes conseils; you would have been more happy, if you had followed my advice.

4thly. With quand, used instead of si, quoique, or quand même, the verb preceded by quand is generally in one of the conditionals, as: quand l’aveure possèderoit tout l’or du monde, il ne serait pas encore content; were the miser to possess all the gold in the world, still he would not be satisfied.
5thly. Lastly, for various tenses of the indicative, as: croiriez-vous votre fils ingrat? could you think your son ungrateful? which means croyez-vous, etc. l'auriez-vous soupçonné d'un tel vice? could you have suspected him of such a vice? which means l'avez-vous, etc. quelle raison pourrait m'empêcher d'aller vous voir, what cause could prevent me from coming to see you? which means quelle cause pourra, etc.

**Exercise.**

1. If it were even possible for men always to act conformably to equity, as it is the multitude that must judge their conduct, the wicked would always blame and contradict them from malignity, and the good sometimes from mistake.

2. What false steps I should have made but for you, at my entrance into the world!

3. But for your counsels, I should have failed in this undertaking.

4. How satisfied I should have been, if you had sooner informed me of your happiness!

5. If we gave to infancy none but just and clear notions, there would be a much less considerable number of false wits in the world.

6. Had Alexander conquered the whole world, his ambition would not have been satisfied; he would still have found himself confined in it.

7. Could you believe him vain enough to aspire to that high degree of honour?

8. Could you ever have thought him capable of deserting the good cause, to go and side with the rebels?

9. Would you renounce being useful to the present generation; because envy fastens on you?

1. Si even, quadranté; were, cond-1; for men (that men); to act, subj-2; judge, juger de; would blame, ind-7; contradict, croiser, ind-7.

2. Que, que de; steps, démarche; but for, sans.

3. But for, sans; failed, s'écouer.

4. How, que.

5. A, on; a much less considerable number, bien moins.

6. (When Alexander would have conquered); confined, trop à l'étroit.

7. Deserting, abandonner; to go and side with, pour se ranger sous les drapeaux de.

8. Renounce, renonce à; fasten, s'attacher; en you, à vos
Particular Rules of the Verb. 355

Remark on the use of the Conditional and Future.

Foreigners are very apt to use the future or the conditional after si, when meaning supposé que. They say J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il sera beau; I shall go into the country to-morrow, if the weather be fine. Vous auriez vu le roi si vous seriez venu, you would have seen the king if you had come. The impropriety of this construction will be obviated by attending to the following,

Rule. When a verb is preceded by si, meaning supposé que, the present is used instead of the future absolute; the preterit indefinite, instead of the future anterior; the imperfect instead of the conditional present, and the pluperfect instead of the conditional past.

Examples.

J'irai demain à la campagne, s'il fait beau; I shall go to-morrow into the country, if it be fine weather.
Il aura eu l'avantage, s'il a suivi vos conseils; He will have had the advantage, if he has followed your advice.
Je serais content, si je vous voyais appliqué; I should be pleased, if I saw you apply to study.
J'aurais été content, si je vous avais vu appliqué; I should have been pleased, if I had seen you attentive to your studies.

Remark. This rule does not hold good, either when si is placed between two verbs, the first of which implies doubt, uncertainty, as: je ne sais s'il viendra; or with the second conditional past, as: vous m'eussiez trouvé si vous fussiez venu ce matin.

Exercise.

1. A young man who is just entering the career of letters, will conciliate the good will of the public, if he consider his first successes only as an encouragement to do better.

1. Le just entering, débuter dans; career, carrière; will conciliate, s'attirer; good will, bienveillance; consider, regarder.
2. That absurd criticism will have amused only fools or malicious people, if attention has been paid to the spirit that pervades the whole, and the manner in which it is written.

3. Life would possess many more sweets and charms, if men, instead of tearing one another to pieces, formed but one society of brethren.

4. The Athenians would have found in the young Alcibiades the only man capable of ensuring their superiority in Greece, had not that vain thoughtless people forced him by an unjust, or at least imprudent, sentence, to banish himself from his country.

5. I know not whether reason will soon triumph over prejudice and ignorance, but I am certain it will be the case, sooner or later.

6. Rome had never attained that high degree of splendour and glory which astonishes us, had it not extended its conquests as much by its policy as by its arms.

2. Fools, sat; malicious, méchant; paid, faire; pervades the whole, répand d’un bout à l’autre; in which, dont.

3. Possess, avoir; tearing one another to pieces, s’entre-déchirer.

4. Superiority, prépondérance; thoughtless, léger.

5. Know, savoir; it will be so, cela être.

6. Attained, parveur à; policy, politique.

SUBJUNCTIVE.

We have said that there are conjunctions which govern the indicative, and others which govern the subjunctive. We call principal proposition the phrase which is followed by the conjunction, and incidental, or subordinate proposition, that which is placed after the conjunction. In this sentence, je crois que vous aimeriez à jouer, je crois is the principal proposition, and vous aimeriez à jouer is the subordinate proposition: que is the conjunction that unites the two phrases.

GENERAL RULE. The verb of the subordinate proposition must be put in the indicative, when the verb of the principal proposition expresses affirmation, in a direct, positive, and independent manner; but it is put in the subjunctive, when that of the principal proposition expresses doubt, wish or uncertainty.

We say, je sais qu’il est surpris, I know he is sur-
prised; je crois qu'il viendra, I believe he will come. But we ought to say, je doute qu'il soit surpris, I doubt his being surprised; je doute qu'il vienne, I doubt his coming; je souhaite qu'il réussisse, I wish he may succeed; je tremble qu'il ne succombe, I tremble lest he should fail.

**EXERCISE.**

1. The glory which has been ascribed to the Egyptians of being the most grateful of all men, shows that they were likewise the most sociable.

2. In Egypt, when it was proved that the conduct of a dead man *had been* bad, they condemned his memory, and he was denied burial.

3. I am sure that, by moderation, mildness and politeness, you will disarm even *envy itself.*

4. The new philosophers say that colour is a sensation of the soul.

5. I believe you are as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

6. I doubt whether the Romans *would ever have triumphed* over the Gauls, if the different chiefs of this warlike people had not been disunited.

7. I could wish that the love which we ought to have for one another were the principle of all our actions, as it is the basis of all virtues.

8. Fear lest it should be said that you feed upon chimeras, and that you take the shadow for the reality.

9. The new philosophers *will have colour to be a sensation of the soul.*

10. I will have you to be as honest and disinterested as you seem to be.

1. Which has, etc. qu'on; ascribed, donner; grateful, reconnaissant.
2. Was denied, priver de; burial, sépulture.
3. By, avec; politeness, honnêteté.
4. Sensation, sentiment.
5. Seem to be, le paraître.
6. Whether, que.
7. It, ou ne; feed upon, se repaître de.
8. Will have, vouloir; colour to be, (that colour be).

Do, did, will, would, should, can, could, may, and might, are sometimes, with respect to the French language, simply signs of tenses; at others they are real verbs.
There can be no difficulty about do and did; there are mere expletives, denoting interrogation, negation or merely emphasis, when they are joined to a verb. 
I do love, j'aime; I did love, j'aimois or, j'aimai; do I love, aimé-je; did I love, aimois-je or aimai-je; I do not love, je n'aime pas; I did not love, je n'aimois pas or je n'aimai pas. In all these cases they are not expressed in French. But when they are followed by a noun or pronoun, then they are real verbs, and mean faire. Do me that favour, faites-moi ce plaisir; he did it, il le fit; or, in short, by any thing else except the verb with which they are necessarily connected, as: he did more than could have been expected, il fit plus qu'on n'eût pu espérer.

Should is only a sign of the conditional, when it expresses a thing which may happen upon some condition: I should like a country life, if my affairs would permit me to indulge my inclination: j'aimeris la vie champêtre, si mes affaires me permettaient de suivre mon goût. But, when it implies duty or obligation, it is a verb, and must be expressed by the verb devoir, as: we should never swerve from the path of virtue, nous ne devrions jamais nous écarter du sentier de la vertu.

Can, could, may and might, are not so difficult as they appear at first sight; because, in almost every instance, there is no impropriety in rendering them by the verb pouvoir. In general, the first two imply a power, a possibility, a capability, etc. and the others, permission, probability, etc.

Do, did, shall, will, etc. are sometimes used elliptically in the answers to interrogative sentences. This construction is not used in French. We must repeat the verb, accompanied with a pronoun expressive of the idea of the interrogative sentence: shall you do your exercise to-day? yes, I shall; must be translated by, ferez-vous votre thème aujourd'hui? oui, je le ferai.
RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TENSES OF THE INDICATIVE.

RULE. When the first verb is in the imperfect, the preterit or the pluperfect, and the second denotes a temporary action, this second verb is put in the imperfect, if we mean to express a present.

EXAMPLE.

Je croyois, j'ai cru, j'avais cru, I thought, I have thought, I had
que vous étudiez les mathé-
matiques; thought, that you were study-
In the pluperfect, if we mean to express a past.

EXAMPLE.

Il m'assura qu'il n'avait jamais He assured me that he had never
rant ri, laughed so much.
And in the present of the conditional, if we mean to express a future absolute.

EXAMPLE.

On m'a dit que votre frère vient I was told your brother would
droit à Londres l'hiver pro-
chain, come to town next winter.

But, although the first verb may be in some of these tenses, yet the second is put in the present, when this second verb expresses a thing which is true at all times.

EXAMPLE.

Je vous disois, je vous ai dit, je told you, I have told you, I
vous avois dit, que la santé had told you, that health
fait la Félicité du corps, et le constitutes the happiness of
savoir celle de l'âme; the body, and knowledge that

REMARK. In phrases where the imperfect is preceded by que, it denotes sometimes a past, sometimes a present, with respect to the preceding verb. It denotes a past, when the verb which is joined to it by the conjunction que is in the present or future.

EXAMPLE.

Vous savez que le peuple Roman était aussi You know or you must know
avide qu'ambitieux, that the Romans were a people as covetous as they were
ambitions.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

But it denotes a present, when the verb which precedes it is in the imperfect, one of the preterits or the pluperfect.

EXAMPLES.

On disoit, on a dit, on avait dit, It was said, it has been said, it had been said, that Phocion was the greatest and most upright man of his age.
que Phocion était le plus grand et le plus honnête homme de son temps;
Dès qu'on eut appris à Athènes qu'Alcibiades était à Lacédémon, on se repentit de la précipitation avec laquelle on l'avait condamné;
As soon as it was known at Athens that Alcibiades was at Lacedemon, the Athenians repented of the precipitancy with which they had condemned him.

Nevertheless, the imperfect denotes the past, in this last instance, when it signifies an action which was past before that which is expressed by the first verb.

EXAMPLE.

En lisant l'histoire des temps héroiques, vous devez avoir remarqué que ces hommes, dont on a fait des demi-dieux, étoient des chefs féroces et barbares, dignes à peine du nom d'homme;
In reading the history of heroic times, you must have remarked that those men who have been made demi-gods, were ferocious and barbarous chiefs, scarcely deserving the name of men.

EXERCISE.

1. I thought you were not ignorant that, to teach others the principles of an art or science, one needs to have experience and skill.

2. I had been told, that your sweetest occupation was to form your taste, your heart and your understanding.

3. Darwin, in his flight, being* reduced to the necessity of drinking water muddy and infected by dead bodies, affirmed that he never had drunk with so much pleasure.

4. Care has been taken to inculcate in me, from infancy, that I should succeed in the world, only in proportion as I should join to the desire of pleasing, a great deal of gentleness and civility.

1. Were ignorant, ignorer ; teach, instruire dans ; needs, avoir besoin ; skill, habileté.

2. I had, etc. (by the active voice), on.

3. Flight, déroute ; muddy, bourbeux ; affirmed, assurer.

4. Care has, etc (active voice), on avoir ; in me, me ; in proportion, autant ; civility, bonneté.
5. Ovid has said, that study softens the manners and corrects everything that is found in us rude and barbarous.

6. You know that those pretended heroes, of whom pagan antiquity has made gods, were only barbarous and ferocious kings, who overran the earth, not so much to conquer as to ravage it, and who left every where traces of their fury and of their vices.

7. It has been said of Pericles, that his eloquence was like a thunderbolt, which nothing could resist.

8. As soon as Aristides had said, that the proposal of Themistocles was unjust, the whole people exclaimed, that they must not think of it any longer.

9. Had you read the history of the early ages, you would know that Egypt was the most enlightened country in the universe, and that whence knowledge spread into Greece and the neighbouring countries.

5. Corrects, effacer; is found, se trouver de.
6. Overran, parcourir; not so much, moins.
7. It, on; thunderbolt, foudre, m.; (to) which.
8. Exclaimed, s'écrier; they must, falloir, ind-2; of it, y; any longer, plus.
9. Ages, temps; whence, celui d'où; neighbouring, circonvoisin; countries, lieu.

RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TENSES OF THE SUBJUNCTIVE AND THOSE OF THE INDICATIVE.

RULE I. When the verb of the principal proposition is in the present or future, we put in the present of the subjunctive that of the subordinate proposition, if we mean to express a present or future; but we put it in the preterit, if we mean to express a past, we say:

Il faut que celui qui parle se mette à la portée de celui qui écoute,

He that speaks should accommodate himself to the understanding of him that listens.

Il voudra que votre frère soit de la partie;

He will wish your brother to be one of the party.

But we must say,

Pour s'être écbée à ce point de grandeur, il faut que Rome ait en une suite non interrompue de grands hommes;

To have risen to that pitch of grandeur, Rome must have had an uninterrupted succession of great men.
Exception. Though the first verb be in the present or future, yet we may put the second in the imperfect, or pluperfect of the subjunctive, when some conditional expression is introduced into the sentence.

Examples.

Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait. qui ne fût très-mortifié, s'il savoit tout ce qu'on pense de lui;

There is no man, whatever merit he may have, that would not feel very much mortified, were he to know all that is thought of him.

Où trouvera-t-on un homme qui ne fît la même faute, s'il étoit exposé aux mêmes tentations?

Where will you find the man who would not have committed the same error, had he been exposed to the same temptations?

Je doute que votre frère eût réussi sans votre assistance.

I doubt whether your brother would have succeeded, had it not been for your assistance.

Exercise.

1. He who wishes to teach an art, must know it thoroughly; he must give none but clear, precise, and well-digested notions of it; he must instil them, one by one, into the minds of his pupils, and, above all, he must not overburthen their memory with useless or unimportant rules.

2. He must yield to the force of truth, when they shall have suffered it to appear in its real light.

3. There is no work, however perfect people may suppose it, that would not be liable to criticism, if it were examined with severity and in every point of view.

4. I doubt whether his piece would have had the approbation of connoisseurs, if he had not determined to make in it the changes you judged necessary.

1. (It must that he who, etc. know it); he must (not repeated), que; instil, faire entrer; by, à; overburthen, surcharger.

2. (It must ind.7, that he); yield, se rendre; suffered, permettre; it to appear, (that it appear); real light, vrai jour.

3. Would be liable. prêter, subj.2; with severity, à la rigueur; in, sous; point of view, face.

4. Had determined, se décider; in it, y; judge, ind.4.

Rule II. When the first verb is in the imperfect, either of the preterits, the pluperfect, or either of the conditionals, we put the second in the imperfect of the
Particular Rules of the Verb.

subjunctive, if we mean to express a present or a future: but we put it in the pluperfect, if we mean to express a past.

We say: je voulois, j'ai voulu, j'eus voulu, je voudrois, or j'eusse voulu que vous finissiez cette affaire; but we ought to say: je ne savoits pas, je n'ai pas su, etc. que vous eussiez étudié les mathématiques.

Remark. With the preterit indefinite the second verb is put in the present, if it expresses an action which is, or may be done at all times, as: Dieu a entouré les yeux de tuniques fort minces, transparentes au dehors, afin qu'on puisse voir à travers; God has surrounded the eyes with very thin tunics, transparent on the outside, that we may see through them: and in the preterit, if we mean to express a past, as: il a fallu qu'il ait sollicité ses juges, he must have been obliged to solicit his judges.

Exercise.

1. M. de Turenne never would buy any thing on credit, of tradesmen, for fear, he used to say, they should lose a great part of it, if he happened to be killed. All the workmen who were employed about his house, had orders to bring in their bills before he set out for the campaign, and they were regularly paid.

2. It would be better for a man who truly loves himself, to lose his life, than to forfeit his honour by some base and shameful action.

3. Lycurgus, in one of his laws, had forbidden the lighting of those who came from a feast in the evening, that the fear of not being able to reach their houses might prevent them from getting drunk.

4. People used the bark of trees, or skins, to write upon, before paper was known.

1. Would, vouloir, ind-2; buy on credit, prendre à crédit; of, chez; happened, venir; were employed, travailler; about, pour; bills, mémoire; he, on: set out for, se mettre en.

2. To lose, (that he would lose); forfeit, ternir.

3. In, par; the lightning of, que on éclairer, subj-2; that, afin que; reach their houses, se rendre chez eux; getting drunk, s'enivrer.

4. People, on; bark, écorce; skins, peau; known, en usage.
5. Go and * ask that old man, for whom you are planting? he will answer you, for the immortal gods, who have ordered, both that I should profit by the labour of those that have preceded me, and that those who should come after me should profit by mine.

5. Have ordered, vouloir; both, et; by, de.

In interrogative and negative sentences, the second verb is generally in the subjunctive, as: quel est l'insensé qui tienne pour sûr qu'il vivra demain? Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les choses pussent tourner si mal.

The verb is likewise in the subjunctive after the superlative relative, and frequently after an impersonal verb, as: le meilleur cortège qu'un prince puisse avoir, c'est le cortège de ses sujets.

The subjunctive is elegantly used in elliptical phrases where the principal proposition is omitted, as: qu'il vive! (je souhaite qu'il) may he live! qu'il se soit oublié jusqu'à ce point! (je suis surpris qu'il) that he should so far forget himself! qui m'aime me suive! (je veux que celui qui) whoever loves me let him follow me! heureux l'homme qui peut, ne fût-ce que dans sa vieillesse, jouir de toute la force de sa raison! (quand ce ne serait que) happy the man that can, were it only in his old age, enjoy the whole strength of his reason!

**EXERCISE.**

1. *Is there any one who does not feel* that nothing is more degrading in a writer, than the pains he takes to express ordinary and common things in a singular and pompous style.

2. *Do you think that, in forming the republic of bees, God has not had in view to teach kings to govern with gentleness, and subjects to obey with love?*

3. *You will never be at peace, either with yourself or with others, unless you seriously endeavour to restrain your natural imbecility.*

1. *Is degrading in,* dégrader; in, de.

2. *Had in view,* vouloir.

3. *Be at peace,* avoir la paix; either, ni; or, ni.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

Remark. The relative pronouns qui, que, quel, dont and où, govern the subjunctive in similar circumstances.

1. Who is the writer that does not sometimes experience moments of sterility and languor?
2. There is not in the heart of man, a good impulse that God does not produce.
3. Choose a retreat where you may be quiet, a post whence you may defend yourself.
4. The reward the most flattering that a man can reap from his labours, is the esteem of an enlightened public.
5. May he live, reign, and long constitute the happiness of a nation which he loves, and by which he is adored!
6. That he should thus degrade himself, is what posterity will find very difficult to believe.
7. A man just and firm is not shaken, either by the clamours of an inconsiderate mob, or by the threats of an imperious tyrant: though the whole world were to fall into ruins, he would be struck by it, but not moved.

2. Impulse. mouvement.
3. May. pouvoir.
5. (May he, repeated before every verb); constituer, faire; which he loves, chérir.
6. Find difficult, avoir de la peine; believe, se persuader.
7. Is shaken, ébranler; inconsiderate. incepes; mob, populace; imperious, fier; were, devoir; to fall into ruins, s'écrouler.

We cannot close this account of the conditional and the subjunctive, without making some further observations upon these two moods, as well on account of some few examples which we have left untranslated, as of those the translation of which does not perfectly agree with the models of the conjugations which we have given.

We have said the English auxiliaries should, would, could, may and might, are not always to be considered as essentially and necessarily appertaining to the conditional and subjunctive. Indeed, it seldom happens that the French tenses are the same as the English, at least in subordinate, though they may be principal propositions. For this reason, we commend to the learner a strict adherence to the rules of the language.
we have already given in the different sections and paragraphs of this chapter. Much depends upon that, and likewise on a clear view of the operations of the mind. For instance, I wish you would come to-night, cannot be translated by je souhaite que vous veniez ce soir, because “when the verb of the principal proposition is in the present, the verb of the subordinate proposition is put in the present of the subjunctive, if we mean to express a future.” Therefore, we must say je souhaite que vous veniez. (See Rule I.) Or, “if the first verb is in either of the conditionals, the second must be in the imperfect of the subjunctive.” For which reason we must also say je voudrais que vous vinsiez. (See Rule II.) Now, in the first example, que vous veniez is marked in the conjugation of the verb by, that you may come, and in the second, que vous vinsiez, by, that you might come, neither of which is in the examples given.

Again, Il n’y a personne qui le croie, cannot be translated by there is nobody who may believe it, although may is the sign of the subjunctive in the model: but we mean, there is nobody that believes it, or simply, nobody believes it.

RELATIONS BETWEEN THE TENSES OF THE DIFFERENT MOODS.

REMARK. Our intention is not to give the relations which all the tenses bear to each other, but simply to mention some of the principal.

RELATIONS OF THE INDICATIVE.

The imperfect is accompanied by three tenses.

STANDARDS.

Je lisais \{ quand vous avez écrit.
\{ quand vous écriviez.
\{ quand vous écrivites.

The preterit anterior requires the preterit definite, as : quand j’eus fini, vous entrâtes.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

The pluperfect is accompanied by the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the preterit anterior, and the imperfect.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\text{J'avais lu:} \\
\{ & \text{quand vous entrâtes.} \\
\text{quand vous êtes entré.} \\
\text{quand vous fûtes entré.} \\
\text{quand vous entrîez.} \\
\end{align*}
\]

The preterit anterior indefinite is accompanied by the preterit indefinite, as: quand j'ai eu dîné, vous êtes entré.

In conjunction with si for supposé que, the future absolute requires the present, and the future anterior the preterit indefinite.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\text{Vous partirez, si je veux.} \\
\text{Il sera parti, si vous l'avez voulu.}
\end{align*}
\]

Relations to the Conditional and of the Conditional.

In conjunction with si for supposé que, the conditional present is accompanied by the imperfect, and the first conditional past by the pluperfect, or by the second conditional past.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\text{Vous partiriez, si je le voulais.} \\
\text{Vous seriez parti:} \\
\{ & \text{si je l'avais voulu.} \\
\text{si je l'eusse voulu.}
\end{align*}
\]

The tenses of the conditional present, and of the two conditionals past, are likewise accompanied by themselves.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\text{Quand l'avare posséderoit tout l'or du monde, il ne serait pas encore content.} \\
\text{Quand Alexandre aurroit conquis tout l'univers, il n'aurroit pas été content.} \\
\text{Vous fussiez parti, si je l'eusse voulu.}
\end{align*}
\]

It has been observed, that when two verbs are joined by the conjunction que, the second verb is put some-
times in the indicative and sometimes in the subjunctive.

**Relations of the present of the indicative to the tenses of its own mood and of the conditional.**

This tense may be accompanied by all the tenses of the indicative and conditional.

**STANDARDS.**

\[
\begin{align*}
&\text{vous partez aujourd'hui.} \\
&\text{vous partirez demain.} \\
&\text{vous serez parti, quand, etc.} \\
&\text{vous partiez hier.} \\
&\text{vous parties hier.} \\
&\text{On dit que} \\
&\text{vous êtes parti ce matin.} \\
&\text{vous fûtes parti hier, quand, etc.} \\
&\text{vous étiez parti hier, quand, etc.} \\
&\text{vous partirez aujourd'hui, si, etc.} \\
&\text{vous seriez parti hier, si, etc.} \\
&\text{vous fussiez parti plutôt, si, etc.}
\end{align*}
\]

**Remark.** The same relation subsists when the sentence is negative, except for the present absolute of the indicative, for which the present of the subjunctive is substituted. We cannot say: *on ne dit pas que vous partez aujourd'hui*; the genius of our language requires that we should say: *on ne dit pas que vous partiez aujourd'hui*.

The imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite; and the pluperfect, are accompanied either by the imperfect or by the pluperfect.

**STANDARDS.**

\[
\begin{align*}
&\text{On disoit} \quad \text{vous partiez aujourd'hui} \\
&\text{On dit que} \\
&\text{On a dit} \\
&\text{On avoit dit} \quad \text{vous étiez parti.}
\end{align*}
\]

The future absolute is accompanied, like the present, by almost all the tenses of the indicative and conditional, as may be seen by the examples annexed to the present.
The future anterior, requires the preterit indefinite, as: on aura dit que vous avez menti.

The conditional present may be accompanied by the present, the imperfect, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, the future of the indicative, as well as by the three conditionals.

\[
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\begin{align*}
\text{qu'il se trompe.} \\
\text{qu'il se trompoit.} \\
\text{qu'il s'est trompé.} \\
\text{qu'il s'étoit trompé.} \\
\text{qu'il se trompera.} \\
\text{qu'il se tromperoit, si, etc.} \\
\text{qu'il se seroit trompé, si, etc.} \\
\text{qu'il se fut trompé, si, etc.}
\end{align*}
\]

The first conditional past may be accompanied by the imperfect, the pluperfect, as well as by the two other conditionals.

\[
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\begin{align*}
\text{qu'il tomboit.} \\
\text{qu'il étoit tombé.} \\
\text{qu'il seroit tombé.} \\
\text{qu'il fut tombé.}
\end{align*}
\]

The second conditional past may be accompanied by the same tenses.

Principal relations with the Subjunctive.

The present, the future absolute, and the future anterior of the indicative are generally accompanied by the present of the subjunctive.

\[
\text{STANDARDS.} \\
\begin{align*}
\text{Il veut} \\
\text{Il vendra} \\
\text{Il aura voulu}
\end{align*}
\]

The imperfect, the preterit definite, the preterit indefinite, the pluperfect, and the second conditional past may be accompanied by the imperfect of the subjunctive.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

STANDARDS.

Je voulois
Je voulus
J'ai voulu
J'avais voulu
J'eusse voulu
}
que vous partissiez.

The future anterior by the preterit of the subjunctive, as: il aura voulu qu'il soit parti.
The conditional present is accompanied either by the imperfect, or by the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARDS.

Je voudrois que
} vous partissiez.
vous fussiez parti.

The first and second conditionals past by the pluperfect of the subjunctive.

STANDARDS.

J'aurois voulu
Jeussé voulu
}
que vous fussiez parti,
etc., etc., etc., etc.

INFINITIVE.

The preposition to before an infinitive, is, according to circumstances, rendered either by pour, by à, or by de; sometimes even it is not expressed at all.

When to means in order to, it is expressed in French by pour, as:

He came to speak to me, Il vint pour me parler.

As for the other two cases, there is hardly any fixed rule to distinguish whether à or de is to be used; the regimen which the preceding French verb requires after it is the only guide. Thus,

He likes to play, will be expressed by il aima à jouer; he told me to go, by il me dit d'aller; and he preferred dying, by il aima mieux mourir.
Particular Rules of the Verb.

The participle present is used in English both as a substantive and an adjective, and frequently instead of the present of the infinitive.

*His ruling passion is hunting.*

*He is gone a-walking.*

*Prevent him from doing mischief.*

*There is a pleasure in silencing great talkers.*

It likewise takes almost every other preposition. In the first of the above examples it is translated by the substantive, in the second by the verbal adjective, and in the others by the present of the infinitive. But sometimes it must be expressed by the relative *qui,* with the verb in the indicative, especially when a different mode might create any ambiguity in the sense, as:

*I met them riding post.*

Je les ai rencontrés qui couraient la poste.

Sometimes it must be expressed by the conjunction *que,* with the verb in the indicative, or in the subjunctive, as circumstances may require: this is when the participle present is preceded by a possessive pronoun, as:

*The fear of his coming vexed.*

*Je doute qu’il soit fidèle, etc.*

It may be proper to observe that, in French, the preposition *en* alone is followed by the participle present. All other prepositions require the present of the infinitive.

Foreigners are apt to mistake in the use of the participle present, because they do not consider that, as it expresses an incidental proposition, it must evidently relate to the word which it restrains and modifies.

**RULE.** The participle present always forming a phrase incidental and subordinate to another, must
necessarily relate to the subject of the principal phrase, when it is not preceded by another noun as in this sentence:

Je ne puis vous accompagner dans la campagne, ayant des affaires qui exigent ici ma présence; I cannot accompany you into the country, having some business that requires my presence here.

The participle present *ayant* relates to the subject *je*, since the subordinate proposition, formed by *ayant*, could have no kind of relation to the principal proposition, if it could not be resolved into this, parce que j'ai des affaires qui, etc. But, in this sentence:

Combien voyons-nous de gens qui, connaissant le prix du temps, le perdent mal-à-propos! How many people do we see who, knowing the value of time, waste it improperly?

*connaissant* relates to the substantive *gens*, because this is the word which it restrains and modifies, and because the relative *qui*, placed between that substantive as the regimen, and the participle present, obviates every kind of ambiguity.

**Remarks.** 1. Two participles ought never to be used together without being united by a conjunction, as:

*C'est un homme aimant et craignant Dieu.* He is a man loving and fearing God.

The relative *en* ought never to be put either before a participle present, or before a gerund. We cannot say:

Je vous ai remis mon fils entre les mains, en voulant faire quelque chose de bon,

because the sense would be ambiguous; for the meaning is not:

As I wish to do something good, or, as I wish to do well, I have put my son into your hands,

but,

I have put my son into your hands, as I wish to make some thing of him.
Particular Rules of the Prepositions. 373

We should say: voulant en faire, etc.

Likewise this sentence would be improper:

Le prince tempère la rigueur du pouvoir, en en partageant les fonctions,
on account of the repetition of the word en, used in two different senses, viz. as a preposition and a relative. Another turn must then be adopted, as:

C'est en partageant les fonctions du pouvoir, qu'un prince en tempère la rigueur.

CHAP. VI.

OF PREPOSITIONS.

The office of prepositions is to bring the two terms between which they are placed, into a state of relation. And that relation is generally expressed by their own signification, as:

Avec, sur, pendant, dans, etc.

But à, de, and en express it, either by their primitive and proper meaning, or figuratively and by extension; so that, in this last case, they are merely prepositions serving to unite the two terms; whence it happens that they often express either the same relations that others do, or opposite relations. For instance, in these two sentences:

Approchez-vous du feu,  Come near the fire.
Eloignez-vous du feu.  Go from the fire.

De merely establishes a relation between the two terms, without expressing in the first the relation of approximation, or in the second the relation of distance. In order, therefore, to form a just idea of these three prepositions, it is of importance to consider only their primitive and proper signification.

En and dans have nearly the same meaning; but they differ in this, that the former is used in a more vague, the latter in a more determinate sense, as:
Particular Rules of the Prepositions.

J'étais en Angleterre, dans la province de Middlesex.

From what has just been said, it follows then that
en, on account of its indeterminate nature, ought not
to be followed by the article, except in a small num-
ber of phrases sanctioned by usage, such are:

En la présence de Dieu; en la grand chambre du parlement;
en l'absence d'un tel; en l'année mil huit cent dix-sept, etc.

with respect to the expressions,

En l'honneur, en l'âge. it is better to say, à l'honneur, à l'âge.

Avant is a preposition in this phrase:
Avant le jour, | Before day-light.

But it is an adverb in this:
N'allez pas si avant, | Do not go so forward.

Some other prepositions are likewise occasionally
adverbs.

Autour and alentour must not be confounded; au-
tour is a preposition, and alentour an adverb, thus:

Tous les grands étoient autour du trône. | All the grandees stood around the throne.
Le roi étoit sur son trône, et les grands étoient alentour; | The king was upon the throne, and the grandees stood round.

Avant and auparavant are not used indifferently.

Avant is followed by a regimen, as:
Avant Pâques, | Before Easter,
Avant ce temps, | Before that time.

Auparavant is followed by no regimen, as:
Si vous partez, venez me voir | If you set off, come and see me
first.

Prêt à and près de are not the same expressions.

Prêt is an adjective:
Je suis prêt à faire ce que vous voudrez. | I am ready to do what you please.

But près is a preposition:
Mon ouvrage est près d'être fini. | My work is nearly finished.
Particular Rules of the Prepositions. 375

Au travers and à travers differ in this: the first is followed by the preposition de, the second is not, as:

Il se fit jour au travers des ennemis,
Il se fit jour à travers les ennemis.

(He fought his way through the enemy.

Avant denotes priority of time and order, as:

Il est arrivé avant moi, l'article se met avant le nom.

Devant is used for en présence, vis-à-vis, as:

Il a paru devant le juge; il loge devant l'église.

Remark. Devant is likewise a preposition marking order, and is the opposite of après, as:

It a le pas devant moi.  
Si vous êtes pressé, courtz devant.  
| He has precedence of me.  
| If you are in a hurry, run before.

The use of the Article with Prepositions.

Some prepositions require the article before their regimen; others do not; and others again sometimes admit, sometimes reject it.

Rule I. The following prepositions generally require the article before the noun, which they govern:

| avant,  | depuis,  | envers,  | nonobstant,  | selon,  |
| après,  | devant,  | excepté,  | parmi,  | suivant,  |
| chez,   | derrière,  | hors,  | pendant,  | touchant,  |
| dans,   | durant,  | hormis,  | pour,  | vers,  |

avant l'aurore,  
chez le prince,  
envers les pauvres,  
daussi la promenade,  
dans la maison,  
devant l'église, etc.

There are however exceptions, as:

avant terme,  
avant dîner,  
pour lit une paillasse,  
avant midi,  
avant dîner,  
depuis minuit, etc.

Rule II. A noun governed by the preposition en, is not, in general, preceded by the article, as:

En ville, en campagne, en extase, en songe, en pièces, etc.

Remark. L'armée est entrée en campagne, means
the army has taken the field, but Mr. N. est allé à la campagne, means, Mr. N. is gone into the country.

Rule III. These eleven prepositions, à, de, avec, contre, entre, malgré, outre, par, pour, sur, sans, sometimes admit, sometimes reject the article before their regimien.

If the article is used in these phrases:

Jouer sur le velours.
St. Paul veut de la subordination entre la femme et le mari.
Sans les passions, où serait le mœurs?

It is suppressed in,

Être sur pied; un peu de façon ne gâte rien entre mari et femme.
Vivre sans passions, c'est vivre sans plaisir et sans peines.

Repetition of the Prepositions.

Rule I. The prepositions de, à, and en, must be repeated before all the nouns which they govern, as:

Voyons qui l'emportera de vous, de lui, ou de moi; Let us see which of us will excel, you, he, or I,
Elle a de l'honnêteté, de la douceur, des grâces, et de l'esprit. She has politeness, sweetness, grace, and abilities.
La loi, que Dieu a gravée au fond de mon cœur, m'instruit de tout ce que je dois, à l'auteur de mon être, au prochain, à moi-même; The law which God has deeply engraved on my heart, instructs me in every thing I owe to the author of my being, to my neighbour, and to myself.
En Asie, en Europe, en Afrique, et jusqu'en Amérique, on trouve le même préjugé; In Asia, in Europe, in Africa, and even in America, we find the same prejudice.

Rule II. The other prepositions, especially those consisting of two syllables, are generally repeated—before nouns which have meanings totally different; but seldom before nouns that are nearly synonymous.

Rien n'est moins selon Dieu et selon le monde,
Nothing is less according to God and according to the world.
Particular Rules of the Prepositions.

Cette action est contre l'honneur et contre toute espèce de principes.
That action is contrary to honour and to every kind of principle.

But we ought to say:

Il perd sa jeunesse dans la mollesse et la volupté.
Our laws condemn nobody without having heard and examined him.

Notre loi ne condamne personne sans l'avoir entendu et examiné.

Our laws condemn nobody without having heard and examined him.

OF THE GOVERNMENT OF PREPOSITIONS.

Some prepositions govern nouns without the help of another preposition, as:

Devant la maison, Before the house,
Hormis son frère, Except his brother.
Sans son épée, Without his sword, etc.

Others require the help of the preposition de, as:

Près de la maison, Near the house.
À l'insu de son frère, Unknown to his brother.
Au-dessus du pont, Above the bridge, etc.

These four, jusque, par rapport, quant and suff, are followed by the preposition à, as:

Jusqu'au mois prochain, Till the next month.
Quant à moi, As for me, etc.

Practice alone can teach these different regimens.

Rule. A noun may be governed by two prepositions, provided they do not require different regimens; thus we may say with propriety:

Celui qui écrit selon les circonstances, pour et contre un parti, est un homme bien méprisable.

He who writes according to circumstances, both for and against a party, is a very contemptible man.

But it would be wrong to say:

Celui qui écrit en faveur et contre un parti, etc.

because en faveur requires the preposition de.

Rule. Prepositions which, with their regimen, express a circumstance, are generally placed as nearly as possible to the word to which that circumstance relates, as:

1 2
Particular Rules of the Adverb.

On voit des personnes qui, avec beaucoup d'esprit, commettent de très-grandes fautes ; We see persons who, with a great deal of wit, commit very great faults.

J'ai envoyé à la poste les lettres que vous avez écrites, I have sent to the post-office the letters which you have written.

Croyez-vous pouvoir ramener par la douceur ces esprits égarés ? Do you think you can reclaim by gentleness those mistaken people?

If we attempt to alter the place of these prepositions, we shall find that the sentences will become ambiguous.

CHAP. VII.

OF THE ADVERB.

Of the Negative ne.

Negation is expressed in French by ne, either alone or accompanied by pas or point. On this point the Academy has examined the four following questions:

1. Where is the place of the negatives?

2. When is pas to be used in preference to point, and vice versa?

3. When may both be omitted?

4. When ought both to be omitted?

As this subject is of very material importance, we shall treat it upon the plan of the Academy, and agreeably to their views.

First Question. Where is the place of the negatives?

Ne is always prefixed to the verb; but the place of pas and point is variable.

When the verb is in the infinitive, these are placed indifferently before or after it; for we say:

Pour ne point voir, or pour ne voir pas.
In the other moods, except the imperative, the tenses are either simple or compound. In the simple tenses, *pas* or *point* is placed after the verb.

Il ne parle pas; ne parle-t-il pas?

In the compound tenses, it is placed between the auxiliary and the participle.

Il n'a pas parlé; n'a-t-il pas parlé?

In the imperative, it is placed after the verb.

Ne badines pas. Ne vous en alles pas.

---

**SECOND QUESTION. When is *pas* to be used in preference to *point*, and vice versa?**

*Point* is a stronger negative than *pas*: besides, it denotes something permanent: *il ne lit point*, means he never reads.

*Pas* denotes something accidental: *il ne lit pas*, means he does not read now, or he is not reading.

*Point de* denotes an absolute negation. To say:

Il n'a point d'esprit, is to say, he has no wit at all.

*Pas de* allows the liberty of a reserve. To say:

Il n'a pas d'esprit, is to say, he has nothing of what can be called wit.

Hence the Academy concludes, that *pas* is more proper,

1. Before *plus*, *moins*, *si*, *autant*, and other words denoting comparison, as:

Milton n'est pas moins sublime

| Milton is not less sublime than Homer. |

2. Before nouns of number, as:

Il n'y a pas dix ans,

| It is not ten years ago. |

*Point* is elegantly used,

1. At the end of a sentence, as:

On s'amusaît à ses dépens, et il ne s'en apercevoit point;

| They were amusing themselves at his expense, and he did not perceive it. |

2. In elliptical sentences, as:
Particular Rules of the Adverb.

I thought I had to deal with an honest man, but no.

3. In answer to interrogative sentences, as:

Irez-vous ce soir au parc?—Shall you go this evening to the Park?—no.

The Academy also observes, that when pas or point is introduced into interrogative sentences, it is with meanings somewhat different. We make use of point, when we have any doubt on our minds, as:

N'avez-vous point été là? | Have you not been there?

But we use pas, when we are persuaded. Thus,

N'avez-vous pas été là? | But you have been there, have not you?

---

Third Question. When may both pas and point be omitted?

They may be suppressed,

1. After the words cesser, oser, and pouvoir; but this omission is only for the sake of elegance, as:

Je ne cesse de m'en occuper, | I am incessantly attentive to it.
Je n'ose vous en parler, | I dare not speak to you about it.
Je ne puis y penser sans frémir, | I cannot think of it without shuddering.

We likewise say, but only in familiar conversation:

Ne bougez, | Do not stir.

2. In expressions of this kind:

Y a-t-il un homme dont elle ne médise? | Is there a man that she does not slander?
Avez-vous un ami qui ne soit des miens? | Have you a friend that is not likewise mine.

---

Fourth Question. When ought both pas and point to be omitted?

They are omitted,

1 When the extent which we mean to give to the negative is sufficiently expressed either by the words which restrict it, by words which exclude all restriction, or lastly, by such as denote the smaller parts of a whole, and which are without article.
Particular Rules of the Adverb.

To exemplify the first part of this remark, we say:

Je ne sors guère, I go out but seldom.
Je ne sortirai de trois jours, I shall not go out for three days.

To exemplify the second, we say:

Je n'y vais jamais, I never go there.
Je n'y pense plus, I think no more of it.
Nul ne sait s'il est digne d'amour, Nobody knows whether he be
ou de haine, deserving of love, or hatred.
N'employez aucun de ces stratagèmes, Use none of these stratagems.
Il ne plait à personne, He pleases nobody.
Rien n'est plus charmant, Nothing is more charming.
Je n'y pense nullement, I do not think of it at all.

To exemplify the third, we say:

Il n'y voit goutte, He cannot see at all.
Je n'en ai cueilli brin, I did not gather a sprig.
Il ne dit mot, He speaks not a word.

But if to mot we join an adjective of number, pas must be added, as:

Il ne dit pas un mot qui n'intéresse, He speaks not a word but what
Dans ce discours, il n'y a pas trois mots à reprendre; is interesting.
In that speech, there are not
three words that are exception

Pas is likewise used with the preposition de, as:

Il ne fait pas de démarche inutile, He does not take any useless

Remark. If, after the sentences we have just mentioned, either the conjunction que, or the relative pronouns qui, or dont, should introduce a negative sentence, then in this last pas and point are omitted, as:

Je ne fais jamais d'excès que je n'en sois incommodé, I never commit any excess, without being ill after it.
Je ne vois personne qui me voû I see nobody but what com

2. When two negatives are joined by ni, as:

Je ne l'aime ni ne l'estime, I neither love nor esteem him.

And when the conjunction ni is repeated, either in the subject, as:
Particular Rules of the Adverb.

Neither gold nor greatness can make us happy.

He is neither prudent nor wise.

He has neither debts nor lawsuits.

Pas is preserved, when ni is not repeated, and when this last serves only to unite two members of a negative sentence, as:

I do not like that vain display of erudition, lavished without choice and without taste, nor that pomp of words which have no meaning.

3. With the verb which follows que, used instead of pourquoi, and with à moins que, or si, used instead of it, as:

Why are you not as sedate as your brother?

I shall not go, unless you come to fetch me.

I shall not go to his house, if he do not invite me.

4. With ne—que used instead of seulement, as:

Youth, which abandons itself to its passions, transmits to old age nothing but a worn-out body.

When before the conjunction que, the word rien is understood, as:

He does nothing but laugh.

The success wholly depends upon you.

Too many masters at once only serve to perplex the mind.

Il ne fait que rire,

Il ne tient qu'à vous de réussir,

Trop de maîtres à la fois ne servent qu'à embrouiller l'esprit,
5. With a verb in the preterit, preceded by the conjunction *depuis que*, or by the verb *il y a*, denoting a certain duration of time, as:

*Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que je ne vous ai vu?*  How have you been since I saw you?

*Il y a trois mois que je ne vous ai vu,*  I have not seen you for these three months.

But they are not omitted, when the verb is in the present, as:

*Comment vit-il depuis que nous ne le voyons point?*  How does he live now we do not see him.

*Il y a six mois que nous ne le voyons point,*  We have not seen him these six months.

6. In phrases where the conjunction *que* is preceded by the adverbs of comparison *plus*, *moins*, *mieux*, etc. or some other equivalent term, as:

*On méprise ceux qui parlent autrement qu’ils ne pensent.*  We despise those who speak differently from what they think

*Il écrit mieux qu’il ne parle,*  He writes better than he speaks.

*C’est pire qu’on ne le disait,*  It is worse than was said.

*C’est autre chose que je ne croyais,*  It is different from what I thought

*Peu s’en faut qu’on ne m’ait trompé,*  I have been very near being deceived.

7. In sentences united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *douter*, *désespérer*, *nier*, and *disconvenir*, forming a negative member of a sentence, as:

*Je ne doute pas qu’il ne vienne,*  I doubt not that he will come.

*Ne désespèrerez pas que ce moyen ne vous réussisse,*  Do not despair of the success of these means.

*Je ne nie pas, or je ne disconviens pas que cela ne soit;*  I do not deny that it is so.

The Academy says, that after the last two verbs, *ne* may be omitted; as

*Je ne nie pas, or je ne disconviens pas que cela soit.*

8. With a verb united by the conjunction *que* to the verbs *empêcher* and *prendre garde*, meaning to take care, as:
Particular Rules of the Adverb.

Jumpecherai bien que vous ne [I shall prevent your being of]
soyez du nombre. [the number.]
Prenez garde qu'on ne vous sé- [Take care that they do not cor-
duise. rupt you.]

Remark. The Academy observes, that in the above
acceptation, prendre garde is followed by a subjunc-
tive; but when it means to reflect, the indicative is used
with pas or point, as:

Prenez garde que vous ne m'en- [Mind, you do not understand
tendes pas, what I mean.]

9. With a verb united by the conjunction que to
the verb craindre, and those of the same meaning, when
we do not wish the thing expressed by the second
verb, as:

Il craint que son frère ne l'a- [He is afraid his brother should
be abandonné, forsake him.]
Je crains que mon ami ne [I fear my friend will die.]
meure.

But pas is not omitted when we wish the thing ex-
pressed by the second verb, as:

Je crains que mon père n'arrive [I am afraid my father will not
come.]

10. With the verb which follows de peur que, de
craindre que, in similar circumstances with craindre.
Thus, when we say:

De crainte qu'il ne perde son procès.
We wish that he may gain it; and when we say:

De crainte qu'il ne soit pas puni.
We wish that he may be punished.

Remark. In these phrases,

Je crains que mon ami ne [I am afraid my friend will die.]
meure.

Vous empêchez qu'on ne chante, [You prevent them from sing-
ing.]

The expression ne is not a negation; it is the ne or
guin of the Latins introduced into the French lan-
guage, as may be seen by the English translation.
11. After savoir, whenever it has the meaning of pouvoir, as:

Je ne saurois en venir à bout, I cannot accomplish it.

When it means être incertain, it is best to omit pas and point, as:

Je ne sais où le prendre, I do not know where to find him.
Il ne sait ce qu'il dit, He does not know what he says.

Remark. But pas and point must be used when savoir is taken in its true meaning, as:

Je ne sais pas le François, I do not know French.

12. We also say:

Ne vous déplaise, ne vous en déplaise, By your leave, under favour, or, let it not displease you.

Plus and davantage must not be used indifferently. Plus is followed by the preposition de, or the conjunction que, as:

Il a plus de brillant que de solide, He has more brilliency than solidity.
Il se fie plus à ses lumières qu'à celles des autres, He relies more upon his own knowledge than upon that of others.

Davantage is used alone and at the end of sentences, as:

La science est estimable, mais la vertu l'est davantage; Learning is estimable, but virtue is still more so.

Though davantage cannot be followed by the preposition de, it may be preceded by the pronoun en, as:

Je n'en dirai pas davantage, I shall not say any more about it.

It is incorrect to use davantage for le plus. We must say:

De toutes les fleurs d'un parterre, Of all the flowers of a parterre,
une est celle qui me plaît le plus; the anemone is that which pleases me most.
Of Grammatical Construction.

Si, aussi, tant, and autant, are always followed by the conjunction que, expressed or understood.

Si and aussi are joined to adjectives, adverbs, and participles; tant and autant to substantives and verbs.

L'Angleterre n'est pas si grande que la France.
It est aussi estimé qu'aimé.
Elle a autant de beauté que de vertu.

He is as much esteemed as he is beloved.
She has as much beauty as virtue.

Remark. Autant may, however, be substituted for aussi, when it is preceded by one adjective, and followed by que and another adjective, as:

It est moindre autant que sage. | He is as modest as wise.

Aussi and autant are used in affirmative; si and tant in negative and interrogative sentences. The two last are, however, alone to be used in affirmative sentences, when they are put for tellement as:

It est devenu si gros qu'il a de la peine à marcher.
It a tant couru qu'il en est hors d'haleine.

He is become so bulky that he can hardly walk.
He has been running so fast that he is out of breath.

Jamais takes sometimes the preposition à, and toujours the preposition pour as:

Soiez à jamais heureux.
C'est pour toujours.
Be for ever happy.
It is for ever.

CHAP. VIII.

OF GRAMMATICAL CONSTRUCTION.

Grammatical construction is the order which the genius of a language has assigned, in speech, to the different sorts of words into which it is distinguished. Construction is sometimes mistaken for syntax; but there is this difference, the latter consists in the rules which we are to observe, in order to express the relations of words one to another; whereas grammatical
construction consists in the various arrangements which are allowed while we observe the rules of syntax. Now this arrangement is irrevocably fixed, not only as phrases may be interrogative, imperative, or expositive, but also as each of these kinds may be affirmative or negative.

In sentences simply interrogative, the subject is either a noun or pronoun.

If the subject be a noun, the following is the order to be observed: first, the noun, then the verb, then the corresponding personal pronoun, the adverb, if any, and the regimen the simple tenses: in the compound tenses, the pronoun and the adverb are placed between the auxiliary and the participle, as:

Les lumières sont-elles un bien. Are sciences an advantage to
pour les peuples? Ont-elles nations? Have they ever
jamais contribué à leur bonheur? contributed to their happiness?

If the subject be a pronoun, the verb begins the series, and the other words follow in the order already pointed out, as:

Vous plairiez-vous toujours à Will you always take pleasure
médire? in slandering?
Aurez-vous bientôt fini? Shall you have soon done?

N. B. When the verb is reflected, the pronoun forming the regimen begins the series; this pronoun always preserves its place before the verb, except in sentences simply imperative.

In interrogative sentences, with negation, the same order is observed; but ne is placed before the verb and pas, or point, after the verb in the simple tenses, and between the auxiliary and the participle in the compound tenses, as:

Votre frère ne viendra-t-il pas Will your brother come to
demain? tomorrow?
N’auriez-vous pas bientôt fini? Shall you have soon done?

Remark. There are in French several other ways of interrogating.
1. With an absolute pronoun, as:
   Qui vous a dit cela? or,
   Qui est-ce qui vous a dit cela? | Who told you that?

2. With the demonstrative pronoun ce, as:
   Est-ce vous? | Is it you? || Est-ce qu'il pleut? | Does it rain?

3. With an interrogative verb, as:
   Pourquoi ne vient-il pas? | Why does he not come?
   Comment vous trouvez-vous? | How do you find yourself?

Hence we see that the absolute pronouns and the interrogative adverbs always begin the sentence; but the demonstrative pronoun always follows the verb.

In sentences, simply imperative, the verb is always placed first, in the first and second persons; but in the third, it comes after the conjunction que and the noun or pronoun, as:

   Allons là, | Let us go there.
   Vnnez ici, | Come here.
   Qu' ils y aillent, | Let them go there.
   Que Pierre aille à Londres, | Let Peter go to London.

With negation, ne and pas are placed as in interrogative sentences.

For the place of the pronouns, see p. 213.

Sentences are expositive, when we speak without either interrogating or commanding. The following is the order of the words in those which are affirmative: the subject, the verb, the adverb, the participle, the regimen, as:

   Un bon prince mérite l'amour de ses sujets et l'estime de tous les peuples.
   César eût inutilement passé le Rubicon, s'il y eût eu de son temps des Fabii;

   A good prince deserves the love of his subjects and the esteem of all nations.
   Caesar would have crossed the Rubicon to no purpose, had there been Fabii in his time.

The negative sentences differ from this construction, only as ne is always placed before the verb, and pas, or point, either after the verb, or between the auxiliary and the participle, as:
Un homme riche ne fait pas toujours le bien qu'il pourrait.
Cicéron n'eût peut-être été un si grand orateur, si le désir de s'élever aux premières dignités n'eût enflammé son âme.

A rich man does not always do all the good he might.
Cicero would not perhaps have been so great an orator, had not the desire of rising to the first dignities inflamed his soul.

Sentences are either simple or compound. They are simple, when they contain only one subject and one attribute, as:

Vous lisez.
Vous êtes jeune.

You read.
You are young.

They are compound, when they associate several subjects with one attribute, or several attributes with one subject, or several attributes with several subjects, or several subjects with several attributes.

This sentence, Pierre et Paul sont heureux, is compound by having several subjects; this, cette femme est jolie, spirituelle et sensible, is compound by having several attributes; and this, l'homme et Paul sont spirituels et savants, is composed at once of several subjects and several attributes.

A sentence may be compound in various other ways; by the subject, by the verb, or by the attribute.

By the subject, when this is restricted by an incident proposal, as:

Dieu, qui est bon.

By the verb, when it is modified by some circumstances of time, order, etc. as:

Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais.

By the attribute, when this attribute is modified by a regimen which is itself restricted, as:

Dieu, qui est bon, n'abandonne jamais. Les hommes qui mettent sincèrement leur confiance en lui.

These simple or compound sentences may be joined to others by a conjunction, as:

xk2
Quand on aime l'étude, le temps passe sans qu'on s'en aperçoive; when we love study, time flies without our perceiving it.

The two partial phrases here form but one.

**Rule.** When a sentence is composed of two partial phrases, joined by a conjunction, harmony and perspicuity generally require the shortest to go first.

**Examples.**

Quand les passions nous quittent, nous nous flattons en vain, que c'est nous qui les quittons. When our passions leave us, we in vain flatter ourselves that it is we that leave them.

On n'est point à plaindre. He is not to be pitied, who, for want of real pleasures, finds means to amuse himself with chimeras.

Periods result from the union of several partial phrases, the whole of which make a complete sense. Periods, to be clear, require the shortest phrases to be placed first. The following example of this is taken from Flechier.

N'attendez pas, Messieurs,
1. Que j'ouvre une scène tragique;
2. Que je représente ce grand homme étendu sur ses propres trophées;
3. Que je découvre ce corps pâle et sanglant, auprès duquel fume encore la foudre qui l'a frappé;
4. Que je fasse crier son sang comme celui d'Abel, et que j'expose à vos yeux les images de la religion et de la patrie éploisée.

This admirable period is composed of four members, which go on gradually increasing. It is a rule not to give more than four members to a period, and to avoid multiplying incidental sentences.

Obscurity in style is generally owing to those small phrases which divert the attention from the principal sentences, and make us lose sight of them.

The construction which we have mentioned is called direct, or regular, because the words are placed...
Of Grammatical Construction.

in those sentences according to the order which has been pointed out. But this order may be altered in certain cases, and then the construction is called indirect, or irregular. Now, it may be irregular, by inversion, by ellipsis, by pleonasm, or by syllepsis; these are what are called the four figures of words.

OF INVERSION.

Inversion is the transposition of a word into a place, different from that which by usage is properly assigned to it. This ought never to be done except when it introduces more perspicuity, energy, or harmony into the language; for it is a defect in construction, whenever the relation subsisting between words is not easily perceived.

There are two kinds of inversion: the one by its boldness seems to be confined to poetry: the other is frequently employed even in prose.

We shall speak here of the latter kind only.

The following inversions are authorized by custom.

The subject by which a verb is governed may, with propriety be placed after it, as:

_Tout ce que lui promet l'amitié_ | All that the friendship of the Romans promises him.

_REMARK. This inversion is a rule of the art of speaking and writing, whenever the subject is modified by an incidental sentence, long enough to make us lose sight of the relation of the verb governed to the subject governing.

The noun governed by the prepositions _de_ and _à_ may likewise be very properly placed before the verb, as:

_D'une voix entrecoupée de sanglots, ils s'écrièrent_; | In a voice interrupted by sobs, they exclaimed.
_A tant d'injures, qu'a-t-elle répondu?_ | To so much abuse, what answer did she give?
The verb is likewise elegantly preceded by the prepositions après, dans, par, sous, contre, etc. with their dependencies, as well as by the conjunctions si, quand, parce que, puisque, quoique, lorsque, etc. as:

*Par la loi du corps, je tiens à* By the law of the body, I am connected with this passing world.

*Puisqu'il le veut, qu'il le fasse.* Since he wishes it, let him do it.

**OF THE ELLIPSIS.**

*Ellipses is the omission of a word, or even several words, which are necessary to make the construction full and complete. In order to form a good ellipsis, the mind must be able easily to supply the words omitted, as:*

*I accept the offers of Darius, if I were Alexandre; and so would I, if I were Parmenio.*

Here the mind easily supplies the words *je les accepterois* in the second member.

The ellipsis is very common in answers to interrogative sentences, as:

*Quand viendrez-vous?* When will you come? *-demain.*

that is, *je viendrai demain.*

In order to know whether an ellipsis be good, the words that are understood must be supplied. It is correct, whenever the construction completely expresses the sense denoted by the words which are supplied; otherwise it is not exact.

**OF THE PLEONASM.**

*Pleonasm, in general, is a superfluity of words: in order to constitute this figure good, it must be sanctioned by custom, which never authorizes its use, but to give greater energy to language, or to express, in
Of Grammatical Construction.

a clearer manner, the internal feeling with which we are affected.

Et que m'a fait à moi cette Troie où je cours?
Je me meurs. S'il ne veut pas vous le dire, je vous le dirai, moi.
Je l'ai vu de mes propres yeux.
Je l'ai entendu de mes propres oreilles.

À moi, in the first sentence; me, in the second; moi, in the third; de mes propres yeux, in the fourth; and de mes propres oreilles, in the fifth, are employed merely for the sake of energy, or to manifest an internal feeling. But this manner of speaking is sanctioned by custom.

Remark. Expletives must not be mistaken for pleonasm, as:

C'est une affaire, où il y va d'Il is an affair in which the

salut de l'état; | safety of the state is concerned.

Which is better than c'est une affaire où il va, etc. by omitting y, which is in reality useless on account of où: but y here is a mode of expression from which it is not allowed to deviate.

OF THE SYLEPSIS.

The syllepsis is a figure by which a word relates more to our meaning, than to the literal expressions, as in these:

Il est onze heures ; l'an mil sept cent quatre-vingt-dix-neuf.

When using it, the mind, merely intent upon a precise meaning, pays no attention to either the number or the gender of heure and an.

There is likewise a syllepsis in these sentences:

Je crains qu'il ne vienne.
J'empêcherai qu'il ne vous nuise.
J'ai peur qu'il ne m'oublie, etc.

Full of a wish that the event may not take place, we are willing to do all we can, that nothing should prevent an obstacle to that wish. This is the cause
of the introduction of the negative, which, although unnecessary to complete the sense, yet must be preserved for the idiom.

There is again a very elegant syllepsis in sentences like the following from Racine:

Entre le peuple et vous, vous prennez Dieu pour juge;
Vous souvenant, mon fils, que caché sous ce lin,
Comme eux vous fûtes pauvre, et, comme eux orphelin.

The poet forgets that he has been using the word peuple: nothing remains in his mind but des pauvres and des orphelins, and it is with that idea of which he is full that he makes the pronoun eux agree. For the same reason, Bossuet and Mézengui have said:

Quand le peuple Hébreu entra dans la terre promise, tout y célèbrent leurs ancêtres.—Bossuet.

Moïse eut recours au Seigneur, et lui dit: que serai-je à ce peuple? bientôt ils me lapideront.—Mézengui.

Leurs and ils stand for les Hébreux.

CHAP. IX.

OF GRAMMATICAL DISCORDANCES, AMPHIBOLOGIES, AND GALLICISMS.

We have chiefly to take notice of two vicious modes of construction, which are contrary to the principles laid down in the preceding chapters; grammatical discordances, and amphibologies.

OF DISCORDANCES.

In general, there is a discordance in language, when the words which compose the various members of a sentence or period do not agree with each other, either because their construction is contrary to analogy or because they bring together dissimilar ideas, between which the mind perceives an opposition, or can see no manner of affinity.

The following examples will serve to illustrate this:

Notre célébrité ne dépend pas des langues qu’en nous donne, mais des actions louables que nous faisons.
This sentence is not correct, because the first member being negative, and the second affirmative, cannot come under the government of the same verb. It ought to be:

Notre réputation dépend, non des louanges qu'on nous donne, mais des actions, etc.  Our reputation depends not upon the praises which are bestowed on us, but upon the praise-worthy actions which we perform.

But the most common discordances are those which arise from the wrong use of tenses, as in this sentence:

Il regarde votre malheur comme une punition du peu de complaisance que vous avez eue pour lui, dans le temps qu'il vous pria, etc.

because the two preterits, definite and indefinite, cannot well agree together; it should be:

Que vous eûtes pour lui dans le temps qu'il vous pria.

There is discordance in this sentence:

On en ressentit autant de joie que d'une victoire complète dans une autre temps,

because the verb cannot be understood after the que which serves for the comparison, when that verb is to be in a different tense; it should be:

On en ressentit autant de joie qu'on en aurait ressenti, etc.

This line of Racine,

Le flot, qui l'apporta, reëmple étonnant.

is also incorrect, because the form of the present cannot associate with that of the preterit definite; it should have been: qui l'a apporté,

OF AMPHIBOLOGIES.

Amphibology in language is when a sentence is constructed as to be susceptible of two different interpretations: this must be carefully avoided. As we speak only to be understood, perspicuity is the first and most essential quality of language: we should always recollect that what is not clearly expressed in any language, is no language at all.
Of Grammatical Discordances.

EXAMPLES.

Il s'en faut bien qu'il soit aussi habile qu'il croit l'être. He is far from being so clever as he thinks.
Peu s'en est fallu qu'il n'ait succombé dans cette entreprise. He was very near failing in that undertaking.
Il ne s'en est presque rien fallu qu'il n'ait été tué. He was as near as possible being killed.
Vous dites qu'il s'en faut vingt livres que la somme entière n'y soit, mais vous vous trompez, il ne peut pas s'en falloir tant. You say it wants twenty pounds to complete the sum, but you are mistaken, it cannot want so much.
Son rhume est entièrement guéri, ou peu s'en faut. His cold is entirely well, or very near
Que s'en est-il fallu que ces deux amis ne se soient brouillés? How near were these two friends quarrelling?
Je ne suis pas content de votre application à l'étude, tant s'en faut. I am not satisfied with your application to study, far from it.
Tant s'en faut que cette comédie me plaise, elle me semble au contraire détestable. So far from this play pleasing me, I think it insufferable.
Il s'en fallait beaucoup que je vous approuvasse dans cette circonstance. I was far from approving your conduct on that occasion.

The sentences:

Il n'est rien moins que généreux.
Vous avez beau dire,
A ce qu'il me semble,
Nous voilà à nous lamerter,
Qu'est-ce que de nous!

He is far from being generous.
You may say what you please, but, etc.
By what I can see, as the matter appears to me, etc.
We began to lament, here we are lamenting, crying, etc.
What wretched beings we are, etc. etc.

are also gallicisms.

The use which is made of the preposition en, in many sentences, is likewise another source of gallicisms; some of this kind will be found in the following expressions:

A qui en avez-vous?
Où en veut-il venir?
Il lui en voit,

Whom are you angry with?
What does he aim at? what would he be at?
He has a quarrel with him, etc.
Of Grammatical Discordances.

The preposition en changes also, sometimes, the significations of verbs, and then gives rise to gallicisms. The conjunction que produces as great a number of gallicisms, as:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>French</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Gaming is a terrible passion.</td>
<td>C'est une terrible passion que le jeu.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>It is in vain then that I work.</td>
<td>C'est donc en vain que je travaille.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>That is not too much.</td>
<td>Ce n'est pas trop que cela,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>There is nothing like having courage.</td>
<td>Il n'est que d'avoir du courage,</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Many others will be found in the use which is made of the prepositions à, de, dans, après, etc. but enough has been said on this subject.

Gallicisms are of very great use in the simple style; therefore La Fontaine and Mad. de Sévigné abound in them. The middling style has not so many, and the solemn oratorical but few, and these even of a peculiar nature. Only two examples of this kind, both taken from the tragedy of Iphigenia, by Racine, will be here inserted.

*Avez-vous pu penser qu'au sang d'Agamemnon*  
Achille préférait une fille sans nom.  
Qui de tout son destin ce qu'elle a pu comprendre,  
C'est qu'elle sort d'un sang, etc.

*And*  
*Je ne sais qui m'arrête et retient mon courroux,*  
*Que par un prompt avis de tout ce qui se passe*  
*Je ne cours des dieux divulguer la menace.*

In the first sentence, *qui* is the subject though without relating to any verb; and in the second, *je ne sais qui m'arrête que je ne coure*, is contrary to the rules of common construction. "But," says Vaugelas, "these extraordinary phrases, far from being vicious, possess the more beauty, as they belong to a particular kind of language."
FREE EXERCISES.

I.

MADAME DE MAINTENON TO HER BROTHER.

We can only be 1 unhappy by our own fault; this shall always be my text, and my reply to your lamentations. Recollect 2, my dear brother, the voyage to America, the misfortunes of our father, of our infancy and our youth 3; and you will bless Providence instead of murmuring against fortune. Ten years ago, we were both very far (below our present situation 4;) and our hopes were so feeble 5, that we limited our wishes to an (income of three thousand livres 6.) At present we have four times that sum 7, and our desires are not yet satisfied! we enjoy the happy mediocrity which you have so often extolled 8; let us be content. If possessions 9 come to us, let us receive them from the hand of God, but let not our views be 10 too extravagant 11. We have (every thing necessary 12) and comfortable 13; all the rest is avarice 14; all these desires of greatness spring from 15 a restless heart. Your debts are all paid, and you may live elegantly 16, without contracting more 17. What have you to desire? must 18 schemes of wealth and ambition occasion 20 the loss of your repose and your health? read the life of St. Louis; you will see how unequal 21 the greatness of this world is to the desires of the human heart; God only can satisfy them 22. I repeat it, you are only unhappy by your own fault. Your uneasiness 23 destroys your health, which you ought to preserve, if it were 24 only because I love you. Watch 25 your temper 26; if you can render it less spleenetic 27 and less gloomy, (you will have gained a great advantage 28.) This is not the work of reflection only; exercise, amusement, and a regular life, (are necessary for the purpose 29.) You cannot think well (whilst your health is affected 30;) when the body is debilitated 31, the mind is without vigour. Adieu! write to me more frequently, and in a style less gloomy.

II.

THE CONVERT.

AN EASTERN TALE.

Divine mercy had brought a vicious man into a society of sages, whose morals were holy and pure. He was affected by their virtues; it was not long before he imitated them and lost his old habits: he became just, sober, patient, laborious and benevolent. His deeds nobody could deny, but they were attributed to odious motives. They praised his good actions, without loving his person: they would always judge him by what he had been, not by what he was become. This injustice filled him with grief; he shed tears in the bosom of an ancient sage, more just and more humane than the others. "Oh my son," said the old man to him, "thou art better than thy reputation; be thankful to God for it. Happy the man who can say: my enemies and my rivals censure in me vices of which I am not guilty. What matters it, if thou art good, that men perse-cute thee as wicked? Hast thou not, to comfort thee, the two best witnesses of thy actions, God and thy conscience."

SAINT-LAMBERT.

M. de Montausier has written a letter to Monseigneur upon the taking of Philippsbourg, which very much pleases me. "Monseigneur; I do not compliment you on the capture of Philippsbourg; you had a good army, bombs, cannon, and Vauban; neither shall I compliment you upon your valour; for that is an hereditary virtue in your family. But I rejoice that you are liberal, generous, humane, and that you know how to recompense the services of those who behave well: it is for this that I congratulate you."

Sévigné.

III.

THE GOOD MINISTER.

AN EASTERN TALE.

The great Aaron Raschid began to suspect that his vizier Giafar was not deserving of the confidence which he had reposed in him. The women of Aaron, the inhabitants of Bagdad, the courtiers, the dervises, censured the vizier with bitterness. The calif loved Giafar; he would not condemn him upon the clamours of the city and the court: he visited his empire; every where he saw the land well cultivated, the country smiling, the cottages opulent, the useful arts honoured, and youth full of gaiety. He visited his fortified cities and sea-ports: he saw

1 Miséricorde. 2 Ne pas tarder. 3 A inf. 4 On donner des motifs. 5 importer.
Free Exercises.

numerous ships, which threatened the coasts of Africa and of Asia; he saw warriors disciplined and content; these warriors, the seamen and the peasantry, exclaimed: "O God, pour thy blessings upon the faithful, by giving them a calif like Aaron, and a vizier like Giafar." The calif, affected by these exclamations, enters a mosque, falls upon his knees, and cries out: "Great God, I return thee thanks; thou hast given me a vizier of whom my courtiers speak ill, and my people speak well." Saint-Lambert.

Providence conducts us with so much goodness through the different periods of our life, that we (do not perceive our progress). This loss takes place gently, it is imperceptible, it is the shadow of the sun-dial whose motion we do not see. If, at twenty years of age, we could see 3 in a mirror the face we shall have at three-score, we (should be shocked at the contrast) and terrified at our own figure; but it is day by day that we advance: we are to-day as we were yesterday, and shall be to-morrow as we are to-day; so we go forward without perceiving it; and this is a miracle of that Providence which I adore. Sévigné.

IV.

THE MAGNIFICENT PROSPECT.

This beautiful house was on the declivity of a hill, from whence you beheld the sea, sometimes clear and smooth as glass, sometimes idly 1 irritated against the rocks on which it broke, bellowing 2 and swelling its waves like mountains. On another side was seen a river, in which were islands bordered with blooming limes, and lofty poplars, which raised their proud heads to the very clouds. The several channels, which formed those islands, seemed sporting 3 in the plain. Some rolled their limpid waters with rapidity: some had a peaceful and still course; others, by long windings, ran back again, to re-ascend as it were to their source, and seemed not to have power to leave these enchanting borders. At a distance were seen hills and mountains, which were lost in the clouds, and formed, by their fantastic figure, as delightful a horizon (as the eye could wish to behold 4.) The neighbouring mountains were covered with verdant (vine branches 5,) hanging in festoons; the grapes, brighter than purple, could not conceal themselves under the leaves, and the vine 6 was overloaded

---

1 Ne le sentir quasi pas. 2 Va douceur. 3 On nous faire voir. 4 Tomber à la renverse. 1 Follement. 2 En gémir. 3 Se jouer. 4 A souhait pour le plaisir de. 5 Pamplemuse, vin. 6 Vigne.
Free Exercises.

with its fruit. The fig, the olive, the pomegranate, and all other trees, overspread the plain, and made it one large garden.

Fénelon.

Long hopes wear out 7 joy, as long maladies wear out pain. All philosophic systems are only good when one (has no use for them 8)

Sévigné.

V.

A GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

With what magnificence does nature shine 1 upon earth! A pure light, extending from east to west, gilds successively the two hemispheres of this globe; an element, transparent and light, surrounds it; a gentle fecundating heat animates, gives being 2 to the seeds of life: salubrious running streams contribute to their preservation and growth; eminences diversified over the level land, arrest the vapours of the air, make these springs inexhaustible and always new; immense cavities made to receive them divide the continents. The extent of the sea is as great as that of the earth: it is not a cold, barren element; it is a new empire, as rich, as populous as the first. The finger of God has marked their boundaries.

The earth, rising above the level of the sea, is secure 3 from its eruptions: its surface, enamelled with flowers, adorned with ever springing verdure, peopled with thousands and thousands of species of different animals, is a place of rest, a delightful abode, where man, placed in order to second nature, presides over all beings. The only one among them all, capable of knowing and worthy of admiring, God has made him spectator of the universe, and a witness of his wonders. The divine spark with which he is animated enables him to participate in the divine mysteries: it is by this light that he thinks and reflects; by it he sees and reads in the book of the universe, as in a copy of the Deity.

Nature is the exterior throne of the divine Majesty: the man who contemplates, who studies it, rises by degrees to the interior throne of Omnipotence. Made to adore the Creator, the vassal of heaven, sovereign of the earth, he ennobles, peoples, enriches it; he establishes among living beings order, subordination, harmony; he embellishes nature herself; he cultivates, extends, and polishes it; lops off the thistle and the briar, and multiplies the grape and the rose.

Buffon.

7 User. 8 N'en avoir que faire. 1 Ne briller pas. 2 Faire éclore. 3 À l'abri de,
VI.

ANOTHER GENERAL VIEW OF NATURE.

Trees, shrubs, and plants are the ornaments and clothing of the earth. Nothing is so melancholy as the prospect of a country naked and bare, exhibiting to the eye nothing but stones, mud, and sand. But, vivified by nature, and clad in its nuptial robe, amidst the course of streams and the singing of birds, the earth presents to man, in the harmony of the three kingdoms, a spectacle full of life, of interest and charms; the only spectacle in the world of which his eyes and heart are never weary.

The more a (contemplative man’s soul is fraught with sensibility), the more he yields to the extacies which this harmony produces in him. A soft and deep melancholy then takes possession of his senses, and, in an intoxication of delight, he loses himself in the immensity of that beautiful system, with which he feels himself identified. Then, every particular object escapes him; he sees and feels nothing but in the whole. Some circumstance must contract his ideas and circumscribe his imagination, before he can observe by parcels that universe which he was endeavouring to embrace.

J. J. Rousseau.

VII.

CULTIVATED NATURE.

How beautiful is cultivated nature! How, by the labours of man, how brilliant it is, and how pompously adorned! He himself is its chief ornament, its noblest part; by multiplying himself, he multiplies the most precious germ; she also seems to multiply with him: by his art, he (brings forth to view) all that she concealed in her bosom. How many unknown treasures! What new riches! Flowers, fruits, seeds brought to perfection, multiplied to infinity; the useful species of animals transported, propagated, increased without number; the noxious species reduced, confined, banished; gold, and iron more necessary than gold, extracted from the bowels of the earth; torrents confined, rivers directed, contracted; the sea itself subjected, explored, crossed, from one hemisphere to the other; the earth accessible in every part, and every where rendered equally cheerful and fruitful: in the valleys, delightful meadows, in the plains, rich pastures and still richer harvests; hills

1 Vêtément. 2 Triste. 3 Pelé. 4 Revêtu. 5 Se lasser. 6 Contemplateur avoir l’âme sensible. 7 Pour qu’il.
1 Mettre au jour. 3 Recéler. 3 Contenu. 4 Resserré. 5 Reconnu.
Free Exercises.

covered with vines and fruits; their summits crowned with useful trees and young forests; deserts changed into cities inhabited by an immense population, which, continually circulating, spreads itself from these centres to their extremities; roads opened and frequented, communications established everywhere, as so many witnesses of the strength and union of society: a thousand other monuments of power and glory sufficiently demonstrate that man, possessing dominion over the earth, has changed, renewed the whole of its surface, and that, at all times, he shares the empire of it with nature.

VIII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

However, man only reigns by right of conquest: he rather enjoys than possesses, and he can preserve only by means of continual labour. If this ceases, every thing droops, every thing declines, every thing changes and again turns 1 under the hand of nature; she 'exercites her rights, erases the work of man, covers with dust and moss his most pompous monuments, destroys them in time, and leaves him nothing but the regret of having lost, through his fault, what his ancestors had conquered by their labours. Those times, in which man loses his dominion, those barbarous 2 ages, during which every thing is seen to perish, are always preceded by war, and accompanied by scarcity and depopulation. Man, who can do nothing but by number, who is strong only by union, who can be happy only by peace, is mad enough to arm himself for his misery, and to fight for his ruin. Impelled by an insatiable thirst of having, blinded by ambition still more insatiable, he renounces all the feelings of humanity, turns all his strength against himself, seeks mutual destruction, actually 3 destroys himself; and, after these periods of blood and carnage, when the smoke of glory has vanished, he contemplates with a sad eye, the earth wasted, the arts buried, nations scattered, the people weakened, his own happiness ruined, and his real power annihilated.

Buffon.

IX.

INVOCATION TO THE GOD OF NATURE.

Almighty God! whose presence alone supports nature, and maintains the harmony of the laws of the universe: Thou, who, from the immovable throne of the empyrean, seest the celestial spheres roll under thy feet, without shock or confusion: who, from the bosom of repose, reproduc's every moment their im-

1 Rentier. 2 De barbarie. 3 En effet.
mense movements, and alone governest, in profound peace, that infinite number of heavens and worlds; restore, restore at length tranquillity to the agitated earth! let it be silent at thy voice; let discord and war cease their proud clamours! God of goodness, author of all beings, thy paternal eye takes in all the objects of the creation; but man is thy chosen being; thou hast illumined 2 his soul with a ray of thy immortal light: complete the measure of thy kindness by penetrating his heart with a ray of thy love: this divine sentiment, diffusing itself every where, will reconcile opposite natures; man will no longer dread the sight of man; his hand will no longer wield the murderous steel 3; the devouring flames of war will no longer dry up 4 the sources of population; the human species, now weakened, mutilated, mowed down in the blossom, will spring anew 5 and multiply without number; nature, overwhelmed under the weight of scourges 6, will soon re-assume, with a new life, its former fruitfulness; and we, beneficent God, will second it, we will cultivate it, we will contemplate it incessantly, that we may every moment offer thee a new tribute of gratitude and admiration.

Buffon.

X.

Happy they who are disgusted with 1 turbulent pleasures, and know how to be contented 2 with the sweets of an innocent life! Happy they who delight in being instructed 3, and who take a pleasure 4 in storing their minds with knowledge! Wherever adverse fortune may throw them, they always carry entertainment with them; and the disquiet which preys upon others, even in the midst of pleasures, is unknown to those who can employ themselves in reading. Happy they who love to read, and are not like me deprived of the ability. As these thoughts were passing in my mind, I went into a gloomy forest, where I immediately perceived an old man holding a book in his hand. The forehead of this sage was broad, bald, and a little wrinkled; a white beard hung down to his girdle; his stature was tall and majestic; his complexion still fresh and ruddy, his eyes lively and piercing, his voice sweet, his words plain and charming. I never saw so venerable an old man. He was a priest of Apollo, and officiated 5 in a marble temple, which the kings of Egypt had dedicated to that God in this forest. The book which he held in his hand was a collection of hymns in honour of the Gods. He accosted me in a friendly manner, and we discoursed to-

1 Embrasser. 2 Eclairer. 3 Le fer . . . armer sa main. 4 Tuir. 5 Germer de nouveau. 6 Fleur.
1 Se découter de. 2 Se contenter de. 3 S'instruire. 4 Se plaire. 5 Servir.
Free Exercises. 407

gather. He related things past so well, that they seemed present, and yet with such brevity that his account never tired me. He foresaw the future by his profound knowledge, which made him know men, and the designs of which they are capable. With all this wisdom he was cheerful and complaisant, and the sprightliest youth has not so many graces as this man had at so advanced an age. He accordingly loved young men when they were teachable 6, and had a taste for study and virtue.

Pénélon.

XI.

THOUGHTS ON POETRY.

Wherever I went, I found that poetry was considered as the (highest learning 1), and regarded with a veneration (somewhat approaching to 2) that which men would pay to angelic nature. It yet fills me with wonder that, in almost all countries, the most ancient poets are considered as the best; whether (it be that 3) every kind of knowledge is an acquisition gradually attained, and poetry is a gift conferred at once; or that the first poetry of every nation surprised them as a novelty, and retained the credit by consent, which it received by accident at first; or whether, as the province 4 of poetry is to describe nature and passion, which are always the same, the first writers (took possession 5) of the most striking objects for description 6, and (the most probable occurrences for fiction 7), and left nothing to those that followed them, but transcription 8 of the same events, and new combinations 9 of the same images. Whatever be the reason, it is commonly observed, that the early writers are in possession of nature, and their followers 10 of art: that the first excel in strength and invention, and the latter in elegance and refinement.

I was desirous to add my name to this illustrious fraternity 11. I read all the poets of Persia and Arabia, and was able to repeat by memory the volumes that are suspended in the mosque of Mecca. But I soon found that no man was ever great by imitation. My desire of excellence 12 impelled 13 me to transfer 14 my attention to nature and to life 15. Nature was to be my subject, and men to be my auditors: I could never describe what I had not seen; I could not hope (to move those with de-
light or terror 16) whose interests and opinions I did not under stand 17.

XII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

Being now resolved to be a poet, I saw every thing (with a new purpose 18); my sphere of attention was suddenly magnified: no kind of knowledge (was to be overlooked 19). I ranged mountains and deserts for 20 images and resemblances, and (picture upon my mind 21) every tree of the forest and flower of the valley. I observed with equal care the crags of the rock and the pinnacles of the palace. Sometimes I wandered along the mazes of the rivulet, and sometimes watched the changes of the summer-clouds. To a poet nothing can be useless. Whatever is beautiful, and whatever is dreadful, must be familiar to his imagination; he must (be conversant 22) with all that (is awfully vast or elegantly little 23). The plants of the garden, the animals of the wood, the minerals of the earth, and the meteors of the sky, must all concur to store his mind with inexhaustible variety; for every idea is useful for the (enforcement or decoration 24) of moral or religious truth; and he who knows most will have most power 25 of diversifying his scenes 26, and gratifying his reader with remote allusions and unexpected instruction.

All the appearances of nature I was, therefore, careful to study 27), and every country which I have surveyed has contributed something to my poetical powers.

In so wide a survey, interrupted the prince, you must surely have left much unobserved. I have lived, till now, within the circuit of these mountains, and yet cannot walk abroad without the sight of something which I had never beheld before or never heeded 28.

XIII.

THE SAME SUBJECT CONTINUED.

The business of a poet, said Imiac, is to examine, not the individual, but the species; to remark general properties and (large appearances 29): he does not number the streaks of the

16 Réveiller le plaisir ou la terreur dans ceux. 17 Ne connaître ni. 18 Sous un nouveau jour. 19 Je ne devois négliger. 20 Pour recueillir. 21 Pénétrer mon esprit du tableau de. 22 Bien connaître. 23 Etonne par sa grandeur, ou charme par son élégante petitesse. 24 Fortifier, ou embellir. 25 Ressources pour. 26 Tableau. 27 Étudier avec soin toutes les, etc. 28 Remarquer. 29 Considérer les objets en grand.
Free Exercises.

tulip, or describe the different shades in the verdure of the forest. He is to exhibit, in his portraits of nature, such prominent and striking features, as 30 recall the original to every mind; and must neglect the minuter discriminations 31, which one may have remarked, and another neglected, for those characteristics 32 which are alike obvious 33 to vigilance 34 and carelessness 35.

But the knowledge of nature is only half 36 the task of a poet: he must be acquainted likewise with all the modes 37 of life. His character requires that he estimate 38 the happiness and misery of every condition: observe the power of all the passions, in all their combinations, and trace the changes 39 of the human mind, as they are modified by various institutions, and accidental influences of climate or custom; from the sprightliness of infancy to the despondence of decrepitude. He must divest himself 40 of the prejudices of his age or country; he must consider right and wrong 41 in their abstracted and invariable state 42; he must disregard present laws and opinions, and rise to general and transcendental truths, which will always be the same; he must, therefore, (content himself with the slow progress of his name) 43, condemn the applause of his own time, and commit his claims to the justice of posterity. He must write as the interpreter of nature, and the legislator of mankind, and consider himself as presiding 44 over the thoughts and manners of future generations, as a being superior to time and place.

His labour is not yet at an end: he must know many languages and many sciences; and, that his style may be worthy of his thoughts, he must, by incessant practice, familiarize himself to every delicacy of speech and grace of harmony.

S. Johnson.

XIV.

First follow nature, and your judgment frame
By her just standard, which is still the same:
Unerring nature, still divinely bright.
One clear, unchang'd, and universal light,

30 De ces traits saillans et frappans qui, etc. 31 Ces petits détails. 32 Pour s'appliquer à caractériser, etc., etc. 33 Frappe également. 34 Œil observateur. 35 Esprit insouciant. 36 The half of. 37 Tous les différents aspects. 38 Apprécier. 39 Suivre les vicissitudes. 40 Se dépoiller. 41 Ce qui est juste ou injuste. 42 Abstraction faite de ces divers préjugés. 43 Se résigner à voir son nom percer difficilement. 44 Influer.
Life, force, and beauty, must to all impart;  
At once the source, and end, and test of art.  
Art, from that fund, each just supply provides;  
Works without show, and without pomp presides:  
In some fair body thus th' informing soul  
With spirits feeds, with vigour fills the whole,  
Each motion guides, and every nerve sustains  
itself unseen, but in th' effect remains.  
Some, to whom heav'n in wit has been profuse,  
Want as much more to turn it to its use:  
For wit and judgment often are at strife,  
Tho' meant each other's aid, like man and wife.  
'Tis more to guide, than spur the muse's steed;  
Restrain his fury, than provoke his speed:  
The winged courser, like a gen'rous horse,  
Shows most true mettle, when you check its course.  

Pope.

1 Light, clear, immutable, and universal nature, which never 
err, and shines always with a divine splendour, must impart to 
all she does, life, force, and beauty.
2 She is at once the source, etc.
3 So in a fair body, unseen itself, but always sensible by its 
effects, the soul continually acting, feeds the whole with spirits, 
fills it with vigour, guides every motion of it, and sustains every 
nerve
4 Some to whom heaven has given wit with profusion, want as 
much yet to know the use they ought to make of it; for wit and 
judgment though made, like man and wife, to aid each other, 
are often in opposition.
5 It is more difficult to guide than spur the courser of the 
muse, and to restrain its ardour than provoke its impetuosity.
6 The winged courser is like a generous horse: the more we 
strive to stop it in its rapid course, the more it shows uncon- 
querable vigour.
Examples of Phrases on the Principal Difficulties of the French Language.

On the Collective Partitives.

La plupart des fruits verts sont d’un goût austère.
The greater part of green fruit is of a harsh taste.

La plupart des gens ne se conduisent que par intérêt.
The major part of society are guided only by interest.

La plupart du monde se trompe.
The greater part of mankind live in error.

Il méprise par philosophie les honneurs que la plupart du monde recherche.
As a true philosopher he despises those honours which mankind in general court.

Il devoir me fournir tant d’arbres, mais j’en ai rejeté la moitié qui ne valait rien.
He was to furnish me so many trees, but I refused half of them which were good for nothing.

Un grand nombre de spectateurs ajoutait à la beauté du spectacle.
A considerable number of spectators added to the splendor of the scene.

Toutes sortes de livres ne sont pas également bons.
Every kind of books are not equally good.

Beaucoup de personnes se sont présentées.
Many people presented themselves.

Bien des personnes se font des principes à leur fantaisie.
Many persons form principles to themselves, according to their fancy.

On some Verbs which cannot be conjugated with the verb Avoir, without making barbarous phrases.

Il lui est échu une succession du chef de sa femme.
An estate fell to him in right of his wife.

Il est bien échu de son crédit.
He has lost much of his credit.

Ne sommes-nous pas convenus du prix ?
Have we not agreed about the price ?

N’est-il pas intervenu dans cette affaire, comme il l’avait promis ?
Did he not interfere in that affair as he had promised ?

Il est survenu à l’improviste.
He came up unawares.

La neige, qui est tombée ce matin, a adouci le temps.
The snow which fell this morning has softened the weather.

Que de neige il est tombé ce matin !
How much snow has fallen this morning !

Toutes les dents lui sont tombées.
All his teeth has fallen out.
Ce propos n'est pas tombé à terre.  
*Have you been to see your friend?*

*Est-ce que vous avez vu votre ami?*

Ils sont arrivés à midi, et sont repartis de suite.  
*They arrived at noon and set out again immediately.*  

*Ces fleurs sont à peine écloses.*

Il est né de parents vertueux, qui n'ont rien négligé pour son éducation.  
*He was born of virtuous parents, who bestowed on him the best education.*

*Mademoiselle votre sœur est-elle rentrée?*

Madame votre mère n'est-elle pas encore venue?  
*Is your sister returned?*

Sur les mots de Quantité.

Il a beaucoup d'esprit, mais encore plus d'amour-propre.  
*He has a great deal of sense, but still more vanity.*

Il a assez d'argent pour ses menus plaisirs.  
*He has sufficient pocket-money.*

Il y avait bien du monde à l'Opéra.  
*There were a great many people at the Opera.*

Il y avait hier au Parc je ne sais combien de gens.  
*There were I do not know how many people in the Park yesterday.*

Il boit autant d'eau que de vin.  
*He drinks as much water as wine.*

Il a tant d'amis qu'il ne manquera de rien.  
*He has so many friends that he will want for nothing.*

Personne n'y a plus d'intérêt que lui.  
*Nobody has more interest there than he.*

Il n'a pas plus d'esprit qu'il n'en faut.  
*He is not overloaded with sense.*

Trop de loisir perd souvent la jeunesse.  
*Too much leisure time is frequently the destruction of youth.*

J'y ai bien moins d'intérêt que vous.  
*I am much less concerned in it than you.*

Sur les Pronoms Personnels.

Sors et te retire.  
*Go out and retire.*

Cours vite et ne t'amuse point.  
*Go quick and do not loiter.*

Il dit aujourd'hui une chose, et demain il se démentira.  
*He advances a thing to-day, and will contradict himself tomorrow.*

Il s'est démenti lui-même.  
*He has contradicted himself.*

La jeunesse est naturellement emportée; elle a besoin de quelque entrave qui la retienne.  
*Youth is naturally hasty, it needs some bridle to restrain it.*

On Words of Quantity.

He has a great deal of sense, but still more vanity.

He has sufficient pocket-money.

There were a great many people at the Opera.

There were I do not know how many people in the Park yesterday.

He drinks as much water as wine.

He has so many friends that he will want for nothing.

Nobody has more interest there than he.

He is not overloaded with sense.

Too much leisure time is frequently the destruction of youth.

I am much less concerned in it than you.

On the Personal Pronouns.

Go out and retire.

Go quick and do not loiter.

He advances a thing to-day, and will contradict himself tomorrow.

He has contradicted himself.

Youth is naturally hasty, it needs some bridle to restrain it.
Phrases on some Difficulties.

Il ne peut voir personne dans la prospérité sans lui porter envie.

Ce que vous me dites est une énigme pour moi.

C'est un homme extrême en tout ; il aime et il hait avec fureur.

Si vous n'avez jamais été, je vous y mènerai.

Je l'ai connu doux et modeste ; il s'est bien gâté dans le commerce de ses nouveaux amis.

Elle n'est pas encore revenue du saisissement que lui causa cette nouvelle.

Il menace de l'exterminer, lui et toute sa race.

Si vous n'avez que faire de ce livre-là, prêtez-le-moi.

Je lui avais envoyé un diamant, il l'a refusé, je le lui ai renvoyé.

Il apprend facilement et oublié de même.

Je lui pardonne facilement d'avoir voulu se faire auteur ; mais je ne saurais lui pardonner toutes les puérilités dont il a furci son livre.

Je me plains à vous de vous-même.

Si vous ne voulez pas être pour lui au moins ne soyez pas contre.

Quand sera-ce que vous viendrez nous voir ?

Sur soi, lui, soi-même et lui-même.

Quand on a pour soi le témoignage de sa conscience, on est bien fort.

L'estime de toute la terre ne sert de rien à un homme qui n'a pas le témoignage de sa conscience pour lui.

Un homme fait mille fautes, parce qu'il ne fait point de réflexions sur lui.

He can see the prosperity of nobody, without envying them.

What you tell me is a perfect riddle to me.

He is a man that carries everything to excess; he is alike violent in his love and in his hatred.

If you have never been there, I will take you.

I knew him when he was mild and modest; he has been much corrupted by associating with his new acquaintances.

She is not yet recovered from the consternation into which that intelligence threw her.

He threatens to exterminate him and all his family.

If you have done with this book, lend it me.

I had sent him a diamond, and he refused it, but I sent him it back again.

He learns easily and forgets the same.

I can easily pardon him for having attempted to turn author; but I cannot pardon him all the absurdities with which he has filled his book.

I complain to you of yourself.

If you will not be for him, at least do not be against him.

When will you come to see us?

On soi, lui, soi-même and lui-même.

The approbation of our conscience imparts great courage.

The good opinion of the whole world is of no use to a man who has not the approbation of his own conscience.

A man commits a thousand faults, because he does not reflect on future consequences.
Phrases on some Difficulties.

On fait milfe fautes, quand on ne fait aucune réflexion sur soi.

Il aime mieux dire du mal de lui, que de n'en point parler.

L'egoïste aimera mieux dire du mal de soi, que de n'en point parler.
On a souvent besoin d'un petit que soi.

Un prince a souvent besoin de beaucoup de gens plus petits que lui.

C'est un bon moyen de s'élever soi-même, et d'exalter les pairs; et un homme adroit s'élève ainsi lui-même.

Sur les Pronoms Relatifs.

Il n'y a rien de si capable d'affamer le courage que l'oisiveté et les délices.
Il faut empêcher que la division, qui est dans cette famille, n'éclate.
Il y a bien des événements qui l'on suppose se passer pendant les entr'actes.
Je le trouvai qui s'habilloit.
Qui le tirera de cet embarras, le tirera d'une grande misère.

Ceux-là sont véritablement heureux, qui croient l'être.
Il n'y a que la verité qui puisse rendre un homme heureux en cette vie.
Il n'y a règle si générale qui n'ait son exception.
C'est un orateur qui se possède et qui ne se trouble jamais.
Il n'y a pas dans le cœur humain de replis que Dieu ne connaisse.

On n'a trouvé que quelques fragments de grand ouvrage qu'il avait promis.

We commit a thousand faults when we neglect to reflect on ourselves.

He had rather speak ill of himself than not talk of himself at all.

The egotist prefers speaking ill of himself rather than not be the subject of his own conversation.

We frequently want the assistance of one who is below ourselves.

A prince frequently needs the assistance of many persons inferior to himself.

It is an excellent method of exalting ourselves to exalt our equals, and a man of address by this means exalts himself.

On the relative Pronouns.

Nothing is so calculated to ennervate the mind as idleness and pleasure.

The dissonance in that family must be prevented from becoming public.

There are many events in a piece which are supposed to happen between the acts.

I found him dressing.

Whoever extricates him from this difficulty will relieve him from much distress.

Those are really happy who think themselves so.

Virtue alone can render a man happy in this life.

There is no rule so general but it admits of exceptions.

He is an orator who is master of himself, and who is never embarrassed.

There is no recess of the human heart but God perceives it.

Only some fragments of the great work he had promised have been found.
La faute, que vous avez faite, est plus importante que vous ne pensez.

Les premières démarches qu’on fait dans le monde, ont beaucoup d’influence sur le reste de la vie.

Celle force est une des plus visibles qu’on ait encore vues.

Amusez-vous des trésors que les vers et la rouille ne puissent point gâter, et que les voleurs ne puissent point dérober.

L’incertitude où nous sommes de ce qui doit arriver, fait que nous ne savons prendre des mesures justes.

Je m’étonne qu’il ne voie pas le danger où il est.

L’homme dont vous parlez n’est plus ici.

Celui de qui je tiens cette nouvelle ne vous est pas connu.

Celui à qui ce beau château appartient, ne l’habite presque jamais.

Ce sont des événements auxquels il faut bien se soumettre.

C’est ce à quoi vous ne pensez guère.

---

On the Demonstrative pronouns.

Not to acknowledge the divinity, is totally to renounce the light of reason.

To lie is to despise God and to fear man.

There are moral contagious diseases, and these are the most dangerous.

What you advance is, I think, widely different from your sentiments.

Men in general love only those who flatter them.

He who persuades another to the commission of a crime, is
moins coupable que celui qui le commet.

Penser ainsi, c'est s'avouer soi-même.

Ce qu'on rapporte de lui est inconcevable.

Ce qui m'afflige, c'est de voir le triomphe du crime.

Connaissez-vous la jeune Emilie ? c'est une enfant dont tout le monde dit du bien.

Imitez en tout votre amie; elle est douce, appliquée, honnête et compatissante.

Sur le verbe avoir employé à l'impersonnel.

Remarque. Quand le verbe avoir s'emploie à l'impersonnel, c'est dans le sens d'être et alors il se joint toujours avec y.

Il y a un an que je ne vous ai vu.

Y a-t-il des nouvelles ?
Non, il n'y en a pas, du moins que je sache.

N'y a-t-il pas cinquante-quatre mille de Londres à Brighton?
Il y avait déjà beaucoup de monde lorsque j'arrivai.

Il n'y avait hier presque personne au Parc.

Y avait-il de grands débats ?
N'y avait-il pas beaucoup de curieux ?

Je l'avais vu il y avait à peine vingt-quatre heures.

Il n'y avait pas deux jours qu'il y avait dité chez moi.

Y avait-il si longtemps que vous ne l'aviez vu ?
Il y eut hier un bal chez M. un tel.

Il n'y eut pas hier de spectacle.

Y eut-il beaucoup de confusion et de désordre ?
N'y eut-il pas un beau feu d'artifices ?

hardly less guilty than he who commits it.

To think in this manner is to be wilfully blind.

The reports concerning him are hardly conceivable.

What distresses me is to see guilt triumphant.

Do you know little Emily? she is a child of whom everybody speaks well.

Imitate your friend in every thing; she is mild, amiable, polite and compassionate.

On the Verb avoir. to have employed impersonally.

When the verb avoir is used impersonally, it signifies être, to be, and in this sense it is always accompanied by the adverb y.

It is a twelvemonth since I saw you.

Is there any news ?
No, there is none, at least that I know.

Is not it fifty-four miles from London to Brighton ?
There were already a great many people when I arrived.

There was hardly any body in the Park yesterday.

Were there violent debates ?
Were there not many curious people ?

I had seen him scarcely four-and-twenty hours before.

He had dined with me not two days before.

Was it so long since you had seen him ?
There was yesterday a ball at Mr. A's.

There was no play yesterday.

Were there a great deal of confusion and disorder ?
Were there not handsome fireworks ?
Il y a eu aujourd'hui une foule immense à la promenade.
Il n'y a pas eu de bal comme on l'avait annoncé.
Est-il vrai qu'il y a eu un duel?
N'y a-t-il pas eu dans sa conduite un peu trop d'emportement?
Quand il y eut eu une explication, les esprits se calmèrent.
N'y avait-il pas eu un plus grand nombre de spectateurs?
Il y aura demain un simulacre de combat naval.
Il n'y aura aucun de vous.
Y aura-t-il une bonne récolte cette année?
N'y aura-t-il pas quelque un de votre famille?
A coup sûr il y aura eu bien du désordre.
Sur cent personnes, il n'y aura pas eu dix de satisfaits.
Y aura-t-il eu un bon soupe?
N'y aura-t-il pas eu de mécontents?
Il y aurait de la malhonnêteté dans ce procédé.
Il n'y aurait pas grand mal à cela.
Y aurait-il quelqu'un assez hardi pour l'attaquer.
N'y aurait-il pas quelqu'un assez charitable pour l'avertir de ce qu'on dit de lui?
Il y aurait eu de l'imprudence à cela.
Il n'y aurait pas eu tant de médisance, si l'on m'en avait cru.
Il n'y aurait pas eu dix personnes.
Y aurait-il eu de l'inconvenienc
N'y aurait-il pas eu de jaloux pour le traverser dans ses projets?
Je ne crois pas qu'il y ait un spectacle plus magnifique.
Phrases on some Difficulties.

Je désirerois qu'il y eût moins de fausseté dans le commerce de la vie.

Je n'ai pas oui dire qu'il y avait eu hier des nouvelles du continent.

Auriez-vous cru qu'il y eût eu tant de personnes compromises dans cette affaire?

Phrases diverses.

Sa vie, ses actions, ses paroles, son air même et sa démarche, tout prêche, tout édifie en lui.

On croyait qu'il n'arriverait que de tarder dans l'assemblée, mais toutes choses s'y passèrent fort doucement.

La vigne et le lierre s'enroulant autour des armées.

On ne discute point qu'il ne soit brave, mais il est un peu trop fanfaron.

Le cadet est riche, mais l'aîné est encore davantage.

Le ciel est couvert de nuages, et l'orage est prêt à fondre.

Après qu'il eut franchi les Alpes avec ses troupes, il entra en Italie.

La frugalité rend les corps plus sains et plus robustes.

Ce discours est peut-être un des plus beaux morceaux d'éloquence qu'il y ait jamais eu. Il est un homme qui aime la liberté; il ne se gêne pour quoi que ce soit.

Il est plus haut que moi de deux doigts.

Trez-vous-vous en éveiller à la barbarie et à l'inhospitalité de ces peuples?

À la longue, les erreurs disparaissent, et la vérité surnage.

I wish there had been less duplicity in the concerns of life.

I have not heard that there was any news from the continent yesterday.

Could you have thought so many persons would have been exposed in that affair?

Promiscuous phrases.

His life, his actions, his very look and deportment, every thing in him instructs and edifies.

It was apprehended some disorder would take place in the assembly; but every thing went off very quietly.

The vine and the ivy twist round the elms.

They do not deny that he is brave, but he boasts rather too much.

The youngest is rich, but the eldest is still more so.

The sky is covered with clouds, and the storm is preparing to burst.

After having crossed the Alps with his troops, he entered Italy.

Temperance imparts an increase of health and strength to the body.

This speech is perhaps one of the finest pieces of eloquence that was ever pronounced.

He is a man fond of liberty; he will be constrained by nobody.

He is taller than me by two inches.

Will you go and expose yourself to the barbarity and inhospitality of those nations?

In time errors vanish and truth survives.
Si vous le prenez avec moi sur ce ton de fierté, je serai aussi fier que vous.
C'est un homme rigide qui ne pardonne rien ni aux autres ni à lui-même.
Les uns montent, les autres descendent; ainsi va la roue de la fortune.
Je ne vois rien de solide dans tout ce que vous me prospérez.
L'art n'a jamais rien produit de plus beau.
Lequel est-ce des deux qui a tort?
On aime quelquefois la trahison, mais on hait toujours les traitres.

Continuation.
L'éléphant se sert de sa trompe pour prendre et pour enlever tout ce qu'il veut.
Plus j'examine cette personne, plus je crois l'avoir vue quelque part.
La nuit vint, de façon que je fus contraint de me retirer.
Il faut vivre de façon qu'on ne fasse tort à personne.
Elle est qu'on attaqua son mari; elle courut aussitôt tout dépouiller pour le secourir.
Je trouvai ses parents tout éplorés.
Cet arbre pousse ses branches toutes droites.
J'en ai encore la mémoire toute fraîche.
Il a voulu faire voir par cet essai qu'il pouvait réussir en quelque chose de plus grand.
Il eut blessé au front, et mourut de cette bessure.
Ces chevaux prirent le morceau de dents et entraînèrent le carrosse.

If you treat me with that haughtiness, I can be as haughty as you.
He is a stern character, who pardons nothing either in himself or others.
Some mount, others descend; thus goes the wheel of fortune.
I see nothing certain in all you propose to me.
It is one of the finest productions of art.
Which of the two is in the wrong?
We sometimes love the treason, but we always hate the traitor.

Continuation.
The elephant makes use of his trunk to take and lift whatever he pleases.
The more I look at that person, the more I think I have seen him somewhere.
Night came on, so that I was obliged to retire.
We must live in such a manner as to injure nobody.
She knew her husband was attacked, and in a state of distraction ran to his assistance.
I found his relations all in tears.
The branches of that tree grow quite straight.
It is still quite fresh in my memory.
He wished to shew by that attempt that he could succeed in an enterprise of more consequence.
He was wounded in the forehead, and died of his wound.
These horses ran away with the carriage.
C'est un homme qui compose sans chaleur ni imagination ; tout ce qu'il écrit est froid et plat.

Ce bâtiment a plus de profondeur que de largeur.

Cet homme est un prodige de savoir, de science, de valeur, d'esprit et de mémoire.
Il est attaché à l'un et à l'autre, mais plus à l'un qu'à l'autre.
Il est bien de l'air l'un de l'autre.

Si l'on ruine cet hommage, le contre-coup retombera sur vous.
Il serait mort, si on ne l'eût assisté avec soin.

Ce poème serait parfait, si les incidents, qui le font languir, n'interrompraient la continuité de l'action.

He is a man that writes without the least warmth or animation : all his productions are cold and insipid.

That building is deeper than it is broad.

That man is a prodigy of knowledge, judgement, courage, sense and memory.

He is attached to both, but to one more than the other.

They very much resemble each other.

If that man is ruined, his misfortune will recoil upon you.

He would have died if he had not been kindly assisted.

That would be a perfect poem, if the incidents, which give a heavi ness to it, did not break the connexion of the subject.

---

Continuation.

Quand je le voudrais, je ne le pourrais pas.
Je serai toujours votre ami, quand même vous ne le voudriez pas.

Quand nous auriez réussi, que vous en seroit-il revenu ?

Quand on découvriraient votre démarche, on ne pourroit la blâmer.

Quand vous auriez consulté quelqu'un sur votre mariage, vous n'auriez pas mieux réussi.

Le tonnerre et l'éclair ne sont sensibles que par la propagation du bruit et de la lumière jusqu'à l'œil et à l'oreille.

Le langage de la prose est plus simple et moins figuré que celui des vers.

Le commencement de son discours est toujours assez sage ; mais, dans la suite, à force de vouloir s'élever, il se perd dans les nues : on ne sait plus ni ce qu'on voit, ni ce qu'on entend.

---

Continuation.

If I were disposed, I could not do it.

I will always be your friend, even though you should not wish it.

Had you even succeeded, what were you to have derived from it ?

Should the steps you have taken be discovered, they could not be blamed.

Had you consulted somebody about your marriage, you could not have succeeded better.

Thunder and lightning are only perceptible by the transmission of sound and light to the ear and eye.

Prose language is much more simple and less figurative than poetic.

The beginning of his speech is always tolerably sensible ; but afterwards, by aspiring the sublime, he loses himself, and we no longer understand either what we see or hear.
Phrases on some Difficulties.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>C'est une faute excusable dans</td>
<td>This fault would be excusable</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>un autre homme, mais à un</td>
<td>in another man, but in a man of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>homme aussi sage que lui, elle ne</td>
<td>his sense it is unpardonable.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>peut pardonner.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Il ne suffit pas de paraître hon-</td>
<td>It is not enough to seem an</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nête homme. il faut l'être.</td>
<td>honest man, we must be so.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Il nous a reçu avec bonté, et</td>
<td>He received us with kindness and heard us patiently.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nous a écouté avec patience.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Tout y est si bien peint, qu'on</td>
<td>Every thing in it is so well</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>croit voir ce qu'il a écrit.</td>
<td>delineated you think you see</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>what he describes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On ne pense rien de vous, qui</td>
<td>They think nothing of you</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ne vous soit glorieux.</td>
<td>but what is to your honour.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Les eaux de cîternes ne sont</td>
<td>Cistern water is generally</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>que des eaux de pluies ramassées.</td>
<td>only rain water collected.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S'il n'est pas fort riche, du</td>
<td>If he is not rich, at least he</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>moins a-t-il de quoi vivre hon-</td>
<td>has enough to live upon respectable.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>nêtement.</td>
<td>What day of the month is it?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quel quatrième du mois avons-nous?</td>
<td>He longs to be of age, and</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>counts the days and months.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Il lui tarde qu'il ne soit ma-</td>
<td>Excellent qualities joined</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jeur, il compte les jours et les</td>
<td>distinguished talents constitute</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mois.</td>
<td>perfect merit.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Des qualités excellentes,</td>
<td>He has one bad quality, he</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>jointes à de rares talents, font</td>
<td>cannot keep a secret.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>le parfait mérite.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Il a une mauvaise qualité, c'est</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>qu'il ne sauroit garder un secret.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Modèles de phrases dans lesquelles on doit faire usage de l'article.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>French</th>
<th>English</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>L'homme est sujet à bien des</td>
<td>Man is liable to a variety of</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vicissitudes.</td>
<td>changes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Les hommes d'un vrai génie</td>
<td>Men of real genius are scarce.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sont rares.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Les hommes à imagination</td>
<td>Men of a visionary character are seldom happy.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>sont rarement heureux.</td>
<td>The man you speak of is a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L'homme, dont vous parlez, est</td>
<td>friend of mine.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>un de mes amis.</td>
<td>Life is a compound of good</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La vie est un mélange de biens</td>
<td>and evil.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>et de maux.</td>
<td>Perfection in every thing</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La perfection en tout genre</td>
<td>ought to be our object.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>est le but auquel on doit tendre.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La beauté, les graces, et l'es-</td>
<td>Beauty, gracefulness, and wit, are valuable endowments when</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prit, sont des avantages bien pré-</td>
<td>heightened by modesty.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>cieux, quand ils sont relevés par</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ça modestie.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Phrases on some Difficulties.

**Voilà des tableaux d'une grande beauté.**
These are very beautiful pictures.

**Faites-vous des principes, dont vous ne vous écarterez jamais.**
Establish rules for yourself, and never deviate from them.

**Cet arbre porte des fruits excellents.**
This tree bears very excellent fruit.

**Ces raisons sont des conjectures bien faites.**
These reasons are very idle conjectures.

**Servez-vous des termes établis par l'usage.**
Use the expressions established by custom.

**On doit éviter l'air de l'affected.**
We ought to avoid the appearance of affectation.

**Le Jupiter de Phidias était d'une grande beauté.**
The Jupiter of Phidias was extremely beautiful.

---

**Continuation des mêmes phrases.**

**La mémoire est le trésor de l'esprit, le fruit de l'attention et de la réflexion.**
Memory is the treasure of the mind, the result of attention and reflection.

**J'achetai hier des gravures précieuses et rares.**
I yesterday bought some valuable and scarce engravings.

**La France est le plus beau pays de l'Europe.**
France is the finest country in Europe.

**L'intérêt de l'Allemagne était opposé à celui de la Russie.**
The German interest was contrary to the Russian.

**La longueur de l'Angleterre du nord au sud est de 360 milles, et sa largeur de l'est à l'ouest est de 300.**
The length of England from north to south is 360 miles, and in breadth from east to west is 300.

**Il arrive de la Chine, du Japon, et des Indes Orientales, etc.**
He comes from China, Japan, and the East Indies.

**Il arrive de l'Amérique, de la Barbade, de la Jamaïque, etc.**
He comes from America, Barbados, Jamaica, etc.

**Il vient de la Flandres Française.**
He has settled in the county of Middlesex.

**Il s'est établi dans la province de Middlesex.**
Coxcombs are unsufferable beings in society.

**Des petits-maîtres sont des êtres insupportables dans la société.**
It is the opinion of the new philosophers.

**C'est l'opinion des nouveaux philosophes.**
She does every thing most gracefullly.

**Elle a bien de la grâce dans tout ce qu'elle fait.**
This stuff sells at a guinea the ell.

**Cette étoffe se vend une guinée l'année.**
This wine costs seventy pounds the hogshead.

---

**Le vin coûte 70 livres sterling la pièce.**
Phrases on some Difficulties.

Modèles de phrases dans lesquelles on ne doit pas faire usage de l'article.

Nos connaissances doivent être tirées de principes évidents.

Cet arbre porte d'excellents fruits.

Ces raisons sont de faibles conjectures.

Évitez tout ce qui a un air d'affectation.

Ces exemples peuvent servir de modèles.

Il a une grande présence d'esprit.

La mémoire de raison et d'esprit est plus utile que les autres sortes de mémoire.

Peu de personnes réfléchissent sur la rapidité de la vie.

Que d'événements inconcevables se sont succédés les uns aux autres !

Il y a plus d'esprit, mais moins de connaissances, dans ce siècle que dans le siècle dernier.

On ne vit jamais autant d'effronterie.

Je pris hier beaucoup de peine pour rien.

Candie est une des îles les plus agréables de la Méditerranée.

Il arrive de Perse, d'Italie, d'Espagne, etc.

Il est revenu de Suisse, d'Allemagne, etc.

Les vins de France seront chers cette année ; les vignes ont coulé.

L'empire d'Allemagne est composé de grands et de petits états.

Les chevaux d'Angleterre sont excellents.

Après mon départ de Suisse, je me retirai à Rome.

Examples of phrases in which the Article is omitted.

Our knowledge ought to be derived from evident principles.

This tree produces excellent fruit.

These reasons are idle conjectures.

Avoid whatever bears the appearance of affectation.

These examples may serve as models.

He has great presence of mind.

The memory of reason andsense is more useful than any other kind of memory.

Few people reflect on the rapidity of life.

How many inconceivable events have followed in succession !

There's more wit, but less knowledge, in this age than in the last.

So much assurance never was met with.

I took a great deal of trouble yesterday about nothing.

Candia is one of the most agreeable islands in the Mediterranean.

He comes from Persia, Italy, Spain, etc.

He is returned from Switzerland, Germany, etc.

French wines will be dear this year ; the vines have been blasted.

The German empire is composed of great and small states.

The English horses are excellent.

After leaving Switzerland, I retired to Rome.
Continuation des mêmes phrases.


Ne portez envie à personne. Si vous promettez, tenez parole. Dans les affaires importantes, ne vous décidez jamais sans prendre conseil. Courage, soldats, tenons ferme : la victoire est à nous. Cette femme n'a ni grâce ni beauté. Monseigneur le duc de, etc., prince du sang, alla hier à la campagne. Montrer tant de foiblesse, c'est n'être pas homme. Cet homme est une espèce de misanthrope, dont les brusqueries sont quelquefois très-plaisantes.

L'ananas est une sorte de fruit très-commun aux Antilles. C'est un genre de vie qui ne me plaît point.

Continuation des mêmes phrases.

Cette dame plaît à tout le monde par son honnêteté et sa douceur. Tout homme a des défauts plus ou moins sensibles. Cette conduite augmentait chaque jour le nombre de ses amis.

Continuation of the same phrases.

You will find this passage in page 120, first book, chapter tenth. He has retired to England. He lives in his retreat like a real philosopher. When he reflected on his conduct, he was ashamed of it. He is a man that seeks to make a fortune. He puts a malicious construction on everything. Envy nobody. If you promise, keep your word. In matters of consequence never decide without advice.

Cheer up, soldiers, let us continue firm; the day is our own. This woman is destitute both of grace and beauty. The duke of, etc. a prince of the blood, went yesterday into the country. To shew so much weakness is not acting like a man. This man is a kind of misanthropist, whose oddities are sometimes comical.

The pine-apple is a kind of fruit very common in the Antilles. It is a kind of life that is not agreeable to me.

The same sentences continued.

This lady pleases everyone by her good breeding and mildness. Every man has defects more or less obvious. This behaviour daily increased the number of his friends.
Phrases on some Difficulties.

Tous les biens nous viennent de Dieu.
Venus était la déesse de la beauté, et la mère de l’amour et des grâces.
Selon les païens, Jupiter était le premier des dieux.
Apollon était frère jumeau de Diane.
Rubens a été un grand peintre.
Hômer et Virgile sont les deux plus grands poètes épiques.
Londres est la plus belle ville que je connaisse.
L’eau de rivière est douce, et l’eau de mer est salée.
C’est un excellent poisson de mer.
Voilà une superbe table de marbre.
L’eau de Seine est celle qu’on préfère à Paris.
Pauvreté n’est pas vice.
Citoyens, étrangers, grands peuples, se sont montrés sensibles à cette perte.

Modèles de phrases sur le pronom Le.

Est-ce là votre opinion ? — ne doutez point que ce ne la soit.
Sont-ce là vos domestiques ? — oui, ce les sont.
Mendames, êtes-vous les étrangères qu’on m’a annoncées ? — oui, nous les sommes.
Madame, êtes-vous la malade pour laquelle on m’a appelé ? — oui, je la suis.
Madame, êtes-vous la mère de cet enfant ? — oui, je la suis.
Mendames, êtes-vous contentes de cette musique ? — oui, nous le sommes.
Elle est malheureuse, et je crains bien qu’elle ne le soit toute la vie.

Every blessing comes from God.
Venus was the goddess of beauty, and the mother of love and the graces.
According to the Heathens, Jupiter was the first of the gods.
Apollo was twin brother to Diana.
Rubens was a great painter.
Homer and Virgil are the two greatest epic poets.
London is the finest city that I know.
River water is sweet, and sea water is salt.
It is an excellent sea-fish.
There is a superb marble table.
The water of the Seine is preferred at Paris.
Poverty is not a vice.
Citizens, strangers, grandees, people, have shewn themselves sensible of this loss.

Forms of phrases upon the pronoun Le.

Is that your opinion ? — do not question it.
Are those your servants ? — yes, they are.
Ladies, are you the strangers that have been announced to me ? — yes, we are.
Madam, are you the sick person, for whom I have been called ? — yes, I am.
Madam, are you the mother of this child ? — yes, I am.
Ladies, are you pleased with this music ? — yes, we are.

She is unhappy, and I much fear she will continue so for life.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Formes de phrases sur les différentes règles du participe passé.</th>
<th>Forms of phrases upon the different rules of the participle passé.</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>La nouvelle pièce a-t-elle été applaudie ?</td>
<td>Did the new piece meet with applause ?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Vos paroles seront-elles arrivées à temps ?</td>
<td>Will your relations arrive there in time ?</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elle s'est donné de belles robes.</td>
<td>She has given herself fine gowns.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Elles nous ont apporté de superbes collets.</td>
<td>They have brought us beautiful pinks.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cette ruse ne lui a pas réussi.</td>
<td>He has not succeeded in this stratagem.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>La vie tranquille que j'ai menée depuis dix ans a beaucoup contribué à me faire oublier mes malheurs.</td>
<td>The quiet life I have led these ten years has greatly contributed to make me forget my misfortunes.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Les lettres que j'ai reçues m'ont beaucoup affligé.</td>
<td>The letters I have received have affected me greatly.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Que de peines vous voulez donner !</td>
<td>What a deal of trouble you have given yourself !</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Quelle tâche vous voulez imposer !</td>
<td>What a task you have imposed on yourself !</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>C'est une satire que j'ai retrouvée dans mes papiers.</td>
<td>It is a satire that I have again met with in my papers.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
| Les lettres qu'a écrites Pluton.                             | The letters which the young Pluton

Madame, êtes-vous mère ?—oui, je le suis. 
Madame, êtes-vous malade ?—oui, je le suis. 
Madame, depuis quel temps êtes-vous mariée ?—je le suis depuis un an. 
Y a-t-il long-temps que vous êtes arrivée ?—je le suis depuis quinze jours. 
Aristote croyait que le monde était de toute éternité, mais Plato ne le croyait pas. 
Quoique cette femme montre plus de fermeté que les autres, elle n'est pas pour cela la moins affligée. 
Cette femme a l'art de répandre des larmes dans le temps même qu'elle est le moins affligée.
Phrases de some Difficulties.

Je ne suis pas entré avec vous dans tous ces détails de grammaire, ni je ne té trois fois nécessaires.

L'Egypte s'était rendue célèbre par la sagesse de ses lois, long-temps avant que la Grèce sortit de la barbarie.

C'est une des plus grandes surprise qu'on ait vue.

L'homme de lettres, dont vous m'avez parlé, a un goût exquis Vous avez très-bien instruit vos élèves.

Lucrèce s'est donné la mort.

La sécheresse qu'il y a eu au printemps a fait perir tous les fruits.

Je n'ai point réussi, malgré les mesures que vous m'aviez conseillé de prendre.

Quelle aventure vous est-il arrivé ?

Cette femme s'est proposée pour modèle à ses enfants.

Cette femme s'est proposée d'enseigner la géographie et l'histoire à ses enfants.

Modèles de phrases sur les principaux rapports des modes et des temps.

Je l'attendois depuis long-temps, quand il vint me joindre.

Il sortit au moment même que j'entrais.

Je commençais à avoir des scrupules sur la réussite de votre affaire, lorsque j'ai reçu votre lettre.

Dès que j'eus fait quelques visites indispensables, je rentrai chez moi, et je ne sortis plus.

Forms of phrases upon the principal relations of 'mood and tenses.'

I had waited a long time for him, when he came to me.

He was going out at the time I was entering.

I was beginning to be apprehensive of the success of your business when I received your letter.

As soon as I had paid some indispensable visits, I went home and did not go out afterwards.
J'avais déjà tout préparé pour mon départ, lorsque des affaires imprévues m'ont forcé à le différer de quelques jours.

Vous êtes déjà sorti, quand je me présentai chez vous.

J'avais déjà livré à l'impression mon ouvrage, lorsque vous me demandez si je le donnerois bientôt au public.

Lorsque j'ai eu terminé mon ouvrage, vous avez commencé la vôtre.

Lorsque je suis déjeuné, je monterai à cheval, et je fuis à Londres.

Lorsque j'aurai lu la nouvelle pièce, je vous dirai avec franchise ce que j'en pense.

Iriez-vous à Rome si vous le pouviez ?—oui, j'irais.

Auriez-vous consenti à ces conditions, si on vous les avait proposées ?

Iriez-vous demain à Londres, si vous le pouviez ?—oui, j'irai.

Il sera sûrement parti, si vous l'avez voulu.

Vous auriez laissé échapper une occasion si favorable, si l'on ne vous eût averti à temps.

On dit que vous partez aujourd'hui pour Paris.

Tout le monde soutient que vous accepterez la place qui vous offre.

On soupçonne que vous aviez hier reçu cette agréable nouvelle, quand on vous rencontra.

Beaucoup de vos amis croient que vous partez hier pour la campagne.

I had already made every preparation for my departure, when some unexpected business occurred, that obliged me to defer it for some days.

You were already gone out when I called upon you.

My work had been sent to be printed when you asked me if I should soon bring it out.

When my business was over you began yours.

When I had done breakfast, I got on horseback, and went to London.

When I have read the new piece, I will candidly give you my opinion of it.

Would you go to Rome if it were in your power?—yes, I would.

Would you have agreed to these terms, had they been proposed to you?

Shall you go to London tomorrow, if you can?—yes, I shall.

He will certainly have set out, if you wished it.

You would have let so favourable an opportunity slip, had you not been warned in time.

Continuation des mêmes phrases.

On dit que vous partez aujourd'hui pour Paris.

Tout le monde soutient que vous accepterez la place qu'on vous offre.

On soupçonne que vous aviez hier reçu cette agréable nouvelle, quand on vous rencontra.

Beaucoup de vos amis croient que vous partez hier pour la campagne.

The same phrases continued.

It is said that you set off today for Paris.

Everyone maintains that you will accept of the place that is offered to you.

I am suspected that you had received this agreeable intelligence when you were met yesterday.

Many of your friends believe that you set out yesterday for the country.
Phrases on some Difficulties

Le bruit se répand que vous avez fait une grosse perte.

J'apprends dans l'instant que vous vous fustés parti il y a trois jours, si des engagements, que vous aviez contractés depuis long-temps, ne vous avaient retenu.

N'est-il pas vrai que vous partirez aujourd'hui, si vous le pouviez?

Est-il vrai que vous seriez parti depuis long-temps pour la campagne, si votre amour pour les arts ne vous avait retenu à la ville?

Je ne crois pas que vous partiez, quoique tout le monde l'assure:

Je ne croyois pas qu'il fût si tôt de retour.

Il a fallu qu'il ait eu affaire à bien des personnes.

Je doute que votre ami fût venu à bout de ses projets, s'il n'avait pas été fortement protégé.

Il n'est point d'homme, quelque mérite qu'il ait, qui ne soit très-mortifiqué, s'il savoit tout ce qu'on pense de lui.

Vous ne vous persuadiez pas que les affaires pussent si mal tourner.

Forms of phrases upon the negative Ne:

Il n'y a pas beaucoup d'argent chez les gens de lettres.

Il n'y a point de ressources dans une personne qui a point d'esprit.

C'est à tort que vous accusez de jouer; je vous assure qu'il nie jouer point.

Entrez dans le salon; vous pourrez lui parler; il ne joue pas.

There is a report that you have met with a considerable loss.

I have this moment learnt that you would have set out three days since, had not engagements, which you had formed long ago, detained you.

Is it not true that you would set out to-day, if you could?

Is it true that you would have set out for the country long since, had not your love for the arts detained you in town?

I do not imagine that you will set out, although everybody asserts it.

I did not believe he had gone back so soon.

He must have had business with a great many people.

I doubt that your friend would have succeeded in his plans, had he not been strongly patronised.

There is not a man, whatever merit he may possess, that would not be very much mortified, were he to know every thing that is thought of him.

You never persuaded yourself that matters could have taken so unfortunate a turn.

There is not much money to be found among men of letters.

There are no resources in a person without sense.

You accuse him wrongfully of gaming; I assure you he never gains.

Go into the room, you may speak to him; he is not playing.
Phrases on some Difficulties.

Si pour avoir du bien il en coûte à la probité, je n'en veux point.

Rien n'est sûr avec les capricieux: vous croyez être bien en faveur, point du tout: l'instant de la plus belle humeur est suivi de la plus fâcheuse.

Vous ne cesserez de nous répéter les mêmes choses.

Je n'aurais osé vous en parler le premier.

Malgré ses protections, il n'a pu réussir dans ses projets.

Cet ouvrage serait fort bon, s'il n'était pour la négligence du style.

Y a-t-il quelqu'un dont elle ne médise.

Pauvre! Dieu se doit pour une vie retirée, que je ne sort presque jamais.

Voici ce qui s'est passé; n'en parlez à personne.

Mon parti est pris; ne m'en parlez plus.

N'employez aucun de ces moyens: ils sont indignes de vous.

Rien n'est plus joli.

Je ne dis rien que je ne pense.

Je ne fais jamais d'excès, que je n'en sois incommodé.

Continuation des mêmes phrases.

C'est un homme pour qui je n'ai ni amour ni estime.

Il n'est ni assez prudent ni assez éclairé.

Je vous assure que je ne le fréquente ni ne le vois.

Ne faire que parcourir les différentes branches des connaissances humaines sans s'arrêter à aucune, c'est moins chercher à s'instruire, qu'à tuer le temps.

I do not wish to make a fortune, if it can only be done at the expense of honesty.

Nothing is certain with capricious people: you think yourself in favour, by no means: the moment of the best humour is followed by that of the worst.

You are constantly repeating the same thing to us.

I should not have dared to be the first to speak to you of it.

With all his interest he has not been able to succeed in his plans.

This work would be very good, were it not for the negligence of the style.

Is there any one she does not slander?

I have acquired no great taste for retirement, that I seldom go abroad.

This is what has passed; do not speak of it to any one.

My resolution is fixed; talk to me no more of it.

Do not employ any one of these measures; they are unworthy of you.

Nothing is more beautiful.

I never speak but what I think.

I never commit any excess without suffering by it.

Continuation of the same phrases.

He is a man for whom I have neither love nor esteem.

He is neither sufficiently prudent nor enlightened.

I assure you I neither associate with him nor see him.

To go through the different branches of human knowledge only, without fixing upon any one of them, is not to seek for instruction, but to kill time.
Phrases on some Difficulties...

Que n'êtes-vous toujours aussi complaisant?  
Il ne le sera pas, à moins que vous ne l'y engagez.  
Il n'ira pas, si vous ne l'en priez.  
Il nous a menacés de se venger; nous n'avons fait qu'en rire.  
Trop d'insouciance ne peut que nuire.  
Que devenez-vous? il y a trois mois que nous ne vous avons vu?

Comment vous êtes-vous porté depuis que nous ne vous avons vu?  
C'est bien pire qu'on ne le disait.  
Peu s'en faut que je n'aie donné être baissée dans le piège.  
Dites la vérité en toute occasion; on méprise toujours ceux qui parlent autrement qu'ils ne pensent.  
Ne désespérez pas que la vérité ne se fasse jour à la longue.  
Je ne dis convienais pas que la chose ne soit ainsi.  
Prenez garde qu'on ne vous entraîne dans quelque fausse démarche.  
J'empêcherai bien qu'on ne vous nuise dans cette affaire.

Il craint qu'on ne le soupçonne d'avoir trempé dans ce complot.

On lui a donné d'excellens conseils, de crainte qu'il ne manque l'occasion de faire connaître ce qu'il est en état de faire.  
J'y ai long-temps travaillé; je ne saurais en venir à bout.  
Vous seriez mieux de vous taire; vous ne savez ce que vous dites.

Vous ne sauriez me faire un plus grand plaisir.

Why are you not at all times equally complaisant?  
He will not do it, unless you persuade him to it.  
He will not go, if you do not request it of him.  
He has threatened us with vengeance; we only laughed at him.  
Too great supineness cannot but be hurtful.  
What has become of you? we have not seen you these three months.  
How have you been since we saw you?

It is much worse than was said.  
I was near running headlong into the snare.  
Tell the truth on all occasions: those who speak what they do not think are always despised.  
Do not despair that truth will appear in time.  
I admit that it is so.  
Take care that you are not led into some false step.  
I shall prevent them from doing you any harm in this business.

He is apprehensive that he is suspected of being concerned in this plot.  
They have given him excellent advice, lest he should lose the opportunity of shewing what he was capable of doing.  
I have been long employed about it; I cannot accomplish it.  
You had better be silent; you do not know what you are saying.  
You cannot do me a greater favour.
Phrases on some delicacies of the French Language.

Shall you go to the opera this evening?—yes, I shall.
Would you cheerfully go to Rome?—yes, I would.

Posterity knows how to do us that justice which is sometimes refused us by our contemporaries.

That greatness which so much astonishes you he owes to your indifference.

That hero, so dear to his country, perished.

I foresaw that the greatness of his elevation would be his ruin.

Citizens, strangers, enemies, nations; kings, emperors, pity and respect him.

The assembly being over, each returned home.

Happy are the people who are governed by a wise king!

He refused the greatest honors, satisfied with having deserved them.

Entreaties, remonstrances, injunctions, all are useles.

The wind overturns towers, cottages, palaces, churches.

Our reputation does not depend on the caprice of men, but on the commendable actions we perform.

There are many things which it is of no consequence at all to know.

The eye of the mind reaches much farther than the bodily eye.

What promotes vanity is only vanity.

All that is confined to this lower world disappears and vanishes with the world.

It is the prerogative of great men to conquer envy; merit
Phrases on Some Difficulties.

mérite la fait naître, le mérite fait mourir.

L’amour-propre est plus habile que le plus habile homme du monde.

En quittant le monde, on ne quitte le plus souvent ni les erreurs ni les folles passion du monde.

gives it birth and merit destroys it.

Self-love is more ingenious than the most ingenious man in the world.

In renouncing the world we generally renounce neither the errors nor giddy passions of the world.
TREATISE
ON FRENCH VERSIFICATION.

French versification is the art of making French verses agreeably to certain rules.
These rules relate; 1, to the construction of the verses; 2, to the manner of intermingling them.

ARTICLE I.
On the Construction of French Verses.

§ I.

On the different kinds of Verses.

French verses are measured by the number of syllables. Variety in the number of syllables produces various kinds of verses.

1. Example of verses of twelve syllables,
   C'est en vain qu'au Parnasse un téméraire auteur,
   Pense de l'art des vers atteindre la hauteur,
   S'il ne sent point du ciel l'influence secrète,
   Si son aître en naissant ne l'a formé poète.

   French verses of twelve syllables are called Alexandrines, vers Alexandrins, or heroic verses, vers héroïques or grand vers.

2. Example of verses of ten syllables,
   Chez les amis, tout s'excuse, tout passe;
   Chez les amants, tout plaît, tout est partit;
   Chez les époux, tout ennui, tout lasse;
   Le devoir nuit; chacun est ainsi fait.

3. Example of verses of eight syllables,
   Ne forçons pas notre talent;
   Nous ne ferions rien avec grâce;
   Jamais un lourd pour, quoi qu'il fasse,
   Ne saurait passer pour galant.

4. Example of verses of seven syllables,
   J'avais juré d'être sage,
   Mais avant peu j'en fus las;
   O raison! c'est bien dommage
   Que l'ennui suive tes pas.
5. Example of verses of six syllables.

A sol-même odieux,
Le sort de tout s'irrite,
En tous lieux il s'évite,
Et se trouve en tous lieux.

6. Example of verses of five syllables,

La sombre tristesse
Toujours me poursuit ;
La crainte me presse,
Le repos me fait.

7. Example of verses of four syllables,

Oui, pour jamais
Chassons l'image
De la voisine
Que j'adorais

8. Example of verses of three syllables,

De ce vin
Le venin
Est extrême.

9. Example of verses of two syllables,

Quel bout
Fait chaque maison !
Je vois danser en rond
Les ormes.

10. Example of verses of one syllable,

Pluton dans son manoir
Noir
D'amour soupirer.

The line, in each of these kinds of verse, of which the last word ends in e mute: as in soupirer, or in e mute followed by an s: as in the plural of nouns, les hommes; or followed by nt, as in the third person plural of verbs, ils aiment, have always a syllable more; that is to say, the lines of twelve syllables have thirteen, those of ten syllables have eleven, and so on, because the syllable in which is the e mute is not reckoned.

The lines so terminated are called feminine, and the others masculine.

The e which is followed by nt in the third person plural of the imperfect tense of the indicative mood, and
of the conditional present, is not to be reckoned as an \( e \) mute, because the termination \( oient \) has the sound of \( e \) open.

Lines of five syllables and under, are seldom used but in comic pieces, or such as are intended to be set to music.

§ II.

On the Rhyme.

Rhyme is the consonance of two sounds which terminate two lines. It is indispensable in French verse. Rhyme being intended merely for the ear, it is generally to be judged from the sound rather than from the orthography. Thus, though the final syllable of two words be written differently, it is sufficient that they produce the same sound to rhyme together.

As the lines are divided into masculine and feminine lines, so is the rhyme into masculine and feminine rhymes.

It is in general only the sound of the last syllable which is considered in masculine rhymes; thus \( vérité \) rhymes with \( fierté \); but the sound of the last syllable is not sufficient for feminine rhymes, because the hollow pronunciation of the last syllable prevents the perception of a palpable consonance. It must therefore be formed by the consonance of the sounds of the penultima. Thus \( monde \), which would not rhyme with \( demande \), rhymes perfectly well with \( profonde \).

The masculine and feminine rhymes are divided into what the French call rich, \( riches \), and sufficient, \( suffisantes \), and what may be called in English perfect and allowable.

The rhyme is rich or perfect, when formed by two sounds exactly similar, and often represented by the same letters, as: \( impétueux \) and \( tortueux \), \( pensée \) and \( insensée \).

The rhyme is sufficient or allowable, when it does not afford so exact a consonance of sound and orthography, as: \( main \) and \( seing \), \( assidue \) and \( vue \).
In general it may be said that when a masculine rhyme is good it will be yet better by becoming feminine. For instance, if interdit rhymes well with petit, interdite will rhyme yet better with petite.

As the consonance of sounds is essential to rhyme, short syllables cannot well be made to rhyme with long ones, nor the l liquid with the l harsh.

The e close, the i and the u, whether alone or followed by one of the consonants l, r, s, t, x, cannot make good masculine rhymes, unless preceded by the same consonants or the same vowels.

It is the same with a in the third person singular of the preterit tense of verbs; with the sounds ant, ent, est and on, and in general with all the sounds common to a great number of words.

A word ending in s, x or z, can rhyme but with a word ending with one of those consonants.

The persons of verbs ending in ent, ois, oit, oient or aient can rhyme but with persons of verbs having the same termination.

The consonance of sound and orthography cannot authorise making the same word rhyme with itself, a simple with its compound, or even two words having the same derivation, when they are nearly synonymous.

§. III.

On the Cæsura.

The cæsura is a pause, or rest, which divides the line into two parts, each of which is called hemistich.

It is only in verses of twelve or ten syllables that the cæsura is found.

The cæsura in verses of twelve syllables falls immediately after the sixth, and divides the line into equal parts:

Que toujours dans vos vers—le sens, coupant les mots,
Suspend a l'hémistich, en marque le repos.

The cæsura, in lines of ten syllables, is immediately after the fourth.

A Nevers done—chez les Visitandines,
Vivoit naguère—un perroquet fameux.
When we say that the \textit{caesura}, in heroic verse, is immediately after the sixth syllable, and in lines of ten syllables immediately after the fourth, we mean that there should be a natural pause, forming an interval between the first and second hemistick, so as to be felt in recitation without straining or obscuring the sense of the phrase.

The \textit{caesura} is, therefore, vicious when the word on which it falls, and which terminates the first hemistick, cannot be separated in the pronunciation from the word that immediately follows it.

It is not necessary, for the regularity of the \textit{caesura}, that the sense should be absolutely completed with the sixth or fourth syllable, and that there should be nothing in one hemistick depending on, or that is the complement of, what is in the other; it is sufficient if the complement of what is in the other hemistick does not prevent the pause, nor oblige to pronounce too closely upon each other the last syllable of the first hemistick and the first syllable of the second.

The \textit{e} mute alone, or followed by the letters \textit{s} or \textit{st}, having but a hollow sound, can never terminate the syllable on which the \textit{caesura} falls. But when a word ending in \textit{e} mute is followed by another beginning with a vowel with which the \textit{e} mute is liquified, then the \textit{caesura} may fall on the syllable which precedes the \textit{e} mute, and which, by the elision of that \textit{e}, becomes the last of the word:

\begin{quote}
Et qui seul, sans ministre, à l'exemple des dieux,
Soutiens tout par toi-même, et vois tout par tes yeux.
\end{quote}

The \textit{caesura} is not allowed to separate an adjective from its substantive; but if a substantive be preceded, or followed, by several adjectives, it may then be separated from them by the \textit{caesura}:

\begin{quote}
Les chanoines vermeils—et brillans de santé,
S'engraissaient d'une longue—et sainte cœuveté.
\end{quote}

All similitude of sounds must be carefully avoided at the end of each hemistick in the same line, or at the end of the first hemistick in two lines that follow.
each other, or at the end of a line and of the first hemistick of the preceding or ensuing line. The following are, therefore, not proper for imitation:

Aux Sauvages futur préparer des tortures.
J'eus un frère, Seigneur, illustre et généreux,
Digne, par sa valeur, du sort le plus heureux.
Il faut pour les avoir employer notre soin :
Ils sont à moi du moins tout autant qu'à mon frère.

§. IV.

On the Junction of Vowels.

When the last syllable of a word ends in e mute, and the next word begins with a vowel, or h not aspirated, that syllable is liquified and blended in the pronunciation with the first of the word that follows it:

Dieu sait, quand il lui plait, faire éclater sa gloire,
Et son peuple est toujours présent à sa mémoire.

But if the word ending in e mute be followed by a word beginning with a consonant, or an h aspirate, the e mute forms a syllable, and is pronounced as in the following line:

Quelle fausse pudeur à fréindre vous oblige?

When the e mute in the last syllable of a word is followed by an s, or by nt, it always forms a syllable:

Que mes propres périls t'assurent de ta grâce.
Que tes méchants apprennent aujourd'hui.

Words ending in e mute preceded by another vowel, such as vie, sue, proie, joie, etc., cannot be employed with elegance in the body of a line, unless they be followed by a word beginning with a vowel with which the e is blended.

The following line is therefore proper.

C'est Venus toute entière à sa proie attachée.

If the e mute preceded by a vowel be followed by an s, or by nt, the word can be placed only at the end of the line:

Je vois combien tes vœux sont loin de tes pensées.

The e mute in the middle of a word, preceded by another vowel, does not form a syllable of itself; there-
Treatise on French Punctuation

fore, tuerai, crieront, are pronounced as if written têrai crient.

A word ending with any other vowel than e mute can never be placed before a word beginning with a vowel, or an h not aspirated.

Though the word est begins and ends with a vowel, it may nevertheless be repeated in a line, or placed immediately after an interjection ending with a vowel.

The t final of the conjunction et being never pronounced, that conjunction can never be placed before a word beginning with a vowel.

We often meet, even in the best poets, with words ending with nasal letters, placed before others beginning with a vowel; but this junction of letters has in it something harsh, and should be avoided as much as possible.

§. V.

On Vowels forming or not forming Diphthongs.

Eau is only one syllable in all words in which the e is not accentuated; beau, seau.

Eo is likewise but one syllable in all words in which it is not accentuated.

Ia generally forms two syllables: di-amant, confi-a, étudi-a.

Some words are to be excepted; such as diable, fiacre, bréviaire, galinathias, liard, familiarié, viande.

Iai makes two syllables: je confi-aï, j'étudi-aï. Those letters form sometimes two syllables, sometimes but one, in the words biais, biaiser.

Iau always makes two syllables: mi-aüer, besti-aux.

Ie generally forms but one syllable: fief, ciel, troisième pièce, barrière, pitié, etc. Are to be excepted the following words, in which ie, forms two syllables: 1. bri-ef, gri-ef, essenti-el, Gabri-el, matéri-el, substanti-el, kyri-elle, ti-erre. 2. Verbs of the first conjugation ending in ier, excepting the tenses in which the e is mute, as: in j'oubliérai. 3. Substantives derived from those verbs. 4. Adjectives denoting condition, proper names denoting profession or country, as: phrygi-en,
Treatise on French Versification.

histror-en, comédi-en. Except chrétien. 5. Substantives ending in ence : expéri-ence, sci-ence. In the words hier and ancien it is sometimes but one syllable and sometimes two.

Ieu is monosyllabical in substantives, and in the word vieux; it is dissyllabical in adjectives: juri-eux précieux.

Io generally forms two syllables: li-on, nous mari-ons, vi-olence, vi-olon. Must be excepted the following words in which io is monosyllabical: 1. Babiole, fiole, pioche. 2. The first person plural of the imperfect tense of the indicative mood, of the conditional present, of the present and imperfect tenses of the subjunctive mood of verbs, when not preceded by an r and another consonant.

Oe is but one syllable in all words in which it is not accentuated.

Oi is never more than one syllable.

Oue makes two syllables, except in the word fouet.

Oui makes likewise two syllables, except in the word oui.

Ua generally forms two syllables.

Ue always forms two syllables, except in words in which the e is mute.

Ui makes but one syllable: lui, construire, etc. except in the words ru-iner, bru-ine, pitu-ite, and in the termination uis.

Uo always makes two syllables.

§. VI.

On the Running of Verses.

Verses that run into one another, that is to say, in which the sense remains imperfect at the end of one line and is completed but at the beginning of the next, are destitute of grace.

This running of the lines one into another is tolerated but in three cases: 1. When the sense is entirely suspended:

Faut-il qu’en un moment un scrupule timide
Perdie ? . . . mais quel bonheur nous envoie Atalide?
2. When the sense is already completed by a word betwixt a comma and a full period:

Je ne te vante pas cette faible victoire,
Titus. Ah plût au ciel que sans blesser ta gloire....

3. When the sense is completed but by a word betwixt a comma and a semi-colon, or a colon:

Sitôt que du nectar la troupe est abreuvée,
On dessert ; et soudain la nappe étant levée.....

This running of the lines into one another is disallowed only in lofty composition. It is allowed in comedy, in fables, and in poetry on light subjects.

§ VII.

On poetic licences, and words not to be used.

Though the French poetic language does not differ from that of prose, and though the same words are generally used, the poet is, however, allowed to make, in the construction of his phrase, certain transpositions not permitted in prose, and which contribute much to the harmony and majesty of the verses. These transpositions should always be made with judgment and taste, so as to occasion neither harshness nor obscurity:

Celui qui met un frein à la fureur des flots,
Sait aussi des méfaits arrêter les complots.

Ce traitement, madame, a droit de vous surprendre ;
Mais enfin, c'est ainsi que se venge Alexandre.

French poetry allows also the use of expressions which would be improper in prose, such as: les humains or les mortels for les hommes, forfaits for crimes, coursier for cheval, glaive for épée, penser for pensée, ondes for eaux, flank for sein, antique for ancien, l'Eternel for Dieu, hymen or hyménée for mariage, espoir for espérance, Olympe for ciel, misère for calamité, labeur for travail, repentance for repentir, jadis for autrefois, soudain for aussitôt, naguère for il n'y a pas long-temps.

The best French poets, Corneille, Racine, Boileau, Molière, La Fontaine, have sometimes allowed them-
Apoes poetic licences in which they should be imitated but with great temperance. Those licences are either in opposition to the rules of grammar or to custom.

The licences in opposition to the rules of grammar consist in the elision of the s in the first person of the indicative mood in verbs of the 2d, 3d, and 4th conjugations, in varying the participle active, or in varying a participle passive when it is invariable, and in making verbs active of verbs neuter; in writing que je die for que je dis, grâces à for grâce à, mêmes for même, en for dans, dont for avec lequel, eux-même for eux-mêmes, ou for auquel, est for sont.

EXAMPLES.

En les blâmant enfin, j'ai dit ce que je croy, Et tel qui m'en reproche, en pense autant que moi.  

Boissoy.

Et les petits en même temps,  
Volontes, se cultuelles,  
Délogèrent tous sans trompette.  

La Fontaine.

Le seul amour de Rome à sa main animée.  
............. les misères  
Que durant notre enfance ont enduré nos pères.  

Corneille.

Ce n'était pas jadis sur ce ton ridicule  
Qu'amour dictait les vers que soupirait Tibulle.  
Je ne prends point plaisir à croître ma misère.  

Boissoy.

Mais qu'importe que je craignisse, il faut que je le dise,  
Je n'en ai pas venu que la moindre partie.  
Grâses au ciel, nos mains ne sont point criminelles.  

Racine.

Ici dispenses-moi du récit des blasphèmes  
Qu'ils ont vomis tous deux contre Jupiter mêmes.  

Corneille.

The licences in opposition to custom consist in writing encore for encore, cette for cette, etc.

In poetry, and particularly in lofty poetry, all words that are unpleasant to the ear should be carefully avoided; whether it be because they have some similitude of sound with other words in the same line, or
because they are too mean, or too prosaic, as: ceux-ci, c'est pourquoi, parce que, ainsi, car, en effet, afin que, etc.

Il est un heureux choix de mots harmonieux.
Fuyez des mauvais sons le concours odieux.
Le vers le mieux rempli, la plus noble pensée.
Ne peut plaire à l'esprit quand l'oreille est blessée.

Taste and discernment, aided by an attentive reading of the best poets, will teach better than all the rules that can be given, the proper use and choice of words; for an able poet will sometimes make a happy use of a word which seems to be excluded from poetic language.

Article II.

On the intermingling of Verses.

The intermingling of verses may be considered with respect to measure and with respect to rhyme.

The measure is arbitrary in poems on light subjects, and lyric poetry; but it is determined in serious pieces which are generally written in verses of twelve or ten syllables. Epic poem, tragedy, and noble comedy are written only in verses of twelve syllables. Didactic and descriptive poems, epistles, satires, elegies, and eclogues, are written in verses of twelve or ten syllables.

In all French poetical writings the masculine rhymes are mixed with the feminine.

According to the different manners in which the rhymes may be mixed, they are divided into following or close rhymes, rimes suivies, or into intermingled rhymes, rimes croisées ou entremêlées.

The rhymes are called following or close, when, after two masculine rhymes, come two feminine, then two masculine, and so on, as in the following lines.

Dans le réduit obscur d'une alcôve enfoncée,
S'élève un lit de plume à grands frais amassée,
Quatre rideaux pompeux, par un double contour,
En défendent l'entrée à la clarté du jour ;
Là, parmi les douceurs d'un tranquille silence,
Règne sur le duvet une heureuse indolence.
The rhymes are called *intermingled* when a masculine rhyme is separated from that which corresponds with it, by one or two feminine rhymes, and reciprocally, as in the following verses.

```
Fortune dont la main couronne
Le forfaits le plus inouis,
Eu faux éclat qui t'environne
Serons nous toujours éblouis ?
Jusques à quand, trompense idole,
D'un culte honteux et frivole
Honorons-nous tes autels ?
Verra-t-on toujours tes caprices
Consacrés par les sacrifices
Et par l'hommage des mortels ?
```

Following or close rhymes are seldom used but in verses of twelve and ten syllables, and consequently but in serious and long poems.

The fault chiefly to be avoided in following rhymes is ending four masculine lines with the same rhyme, when they are separated but by two feminine lines; or four feminine, when separated but by two masculine.

Similitude of sound in masculine and feminine rhymes which follow each other, produces also an effect unpleasant to the ear, and which should be avoided.

Intermingled rhymes are used in all kinds of verse, in stanzas and irregular verses; in a word, in lyric poetry, in pieces on light subjects, and those intended to be set to music.

On Stanzas.

Stanzas are a certain number of lines at the end of which the sense is finished and complete.

A stanza may be composed of a greater or lesser number of lines; there should not be less than four, and there are seldom more than ten.

When all the stanzas of a poem are of an equal number of lines, having the same mixture of rhymes,
and the number of syllables in each line is equally distributed, they are called regular stanzas. They are on the contrary called irregular when they differ from each other, either by the intermingling of the rhymes or by the number of syllables in each line.

It is necessary that stanzas written on the same subject should begin and end with the same kind of rhyme; that is to say, that if the first stanza begin with a masculine rhyme and end with a feminine, the second must likewise begin with a masculine rhyme and end with a feminine, and the same with the rest; whence it results, that when a stanza begins and ends with the same kind of rhyme, a feminine rhyme for instance, the one which immediately follows beginning likewise with a feminine rhyme, two different rhymes of the same kind are thus found together. The last line of a stanza should never rhyme with the first of the next stanza.

Stanzas considered with respect to the number of lines of which they are composed, may be divided into stanzas of an even number of lines and stanzas of an odd number of lines (stances de nombre pair, stances de nombre impair).

As the intermingling of verses with respect to the number of syllables is arbitrary in stanzas, the rules we are going to lay down relate to the intermingling of the rhymes.

**RULES FOR STANZAS OF AN EVEN NUMBER OF LINES.**

*Stanzas of four lines.*

In quatrains, or stanzas of four lines, the lines may be intermingled two ways:

Auprès d'une seconde source
D'où coulent cent petits ruisseaux,
L'amour, fatigué de sa course,
Dormoit sur un lit de roseaux.

L'univers te dut la naissance,
Feu créateur, céleste amour !
Le plaisir te révèle au jour,
Et la mort n'est que ton absence.
Stanzas of six lines.

The stanza of six lines is nothing more than a quatrains, to which are added two verses that rhyme together.

These two lines are generally placed at the beginning; then there should be a slight pause after the third line: sometimes they are placed at the end, and there is no pause after the third line. The interminning of the rhymes in the four other lines is the same as in the quatrains.

Renonçons au stérile appui
Des grands qu'on adore aujourd'hui:
Ne foudros point sur eux une espérance folle;
Leur pompe, indigne de nos vœux,
N'est qu'un simulacre frivole,
Et les solides biens ne dépendent point d'eux.

Seigneur, dans ton temple adorable
Quel mortel est digne d'entrer?
Qui pourra, grand Dieu, pénétrer
Dans ce séjour impénétrable,
Où tes saints inclinés, d'un œil respectueux,
Contemplent de tout front l'éclat majestueux.

Stanzas of eight lines.

Stanzas of eight lines are in general only two quatrains united. There should be a pause after the first quatrains.

Dans l'aurore de la vie,
Les jeux font tous nos plaisirs:
A cette heureuse folie
Succèdent d'autres désirs;
Bacchus, dans notre vieillesse
Fait oublier les amours:
La mort vient, le charme cesse,
Et nous dormons pour toujours.

In stanzas of eight lines the rhymes may also be so arranged as to begin or end with two lines that rhyme together, while three of the remaining six have one rhyme, and the other three another.
Stanzas of ten lines.

Stanzas of ten lines are, properly speaking, but a quatrain and sextain united, in each of which the rhymes are intermingled as we have just said. There should be a pause after the fourth line and after the seventh.

Ce n'est pas d'un amas funeste
De massacres et de débris
Qu'une vertu pure et céleste
Tire son véritable prix :
Un héros qui de la victoire
Emprunte son unique gloire,
N'est héros que quelques momens ;
Et pour être toute sa vie
Il doit opposer à l'envie
De plus paisibles monuments.

Rules for stanzas having an odd number of lines.

These stanzas must necessarily have three lines that rhyme together. They must all three be separated by different rhymes, or at least one of them must be separated from the other two.

Stanzas of five lines.

In these stanzas the only rules to be observed are those we have just given for stanzas of an odd number of lines.

O rives du Jourdain ! ô champs aimés des cieux !
Sacrés monts, fertiles vallées,
Par cent miracles signalées,
Du doux pays de nos âieux
Serons-nous toujours exilés ?

Stanzas of seven lines.

Stanzas of seven lines begin with a quatrain, at the end of which there is a pause,

L'hypocrite en fraudes fertile,
Dès l'enfance est pétri de fard :
Il sait colorer avec art
Le siel que sa bouche distille ;
Et la morsure du serpent
Est moins aiguë et moins subtile
Que le venin caché que sa langue.
Stanzas of nine lines.

The first part is a quatrain, ending with a pause, and the latter part a stanza of five lines.

Oftens, à l'exemple des anges,
A ce Dieu, votre unique appui,
Un sacrifice de louanges,
Le seul qui soit digne de lui ;
Chantez d'une voix ferme et sûre
De cet auteur de la nature
Les bienfaits toujours renaissans :
Mais sachez qu'une main impure
Peut souiller le plus pur encens.

Intermingled rhymes were formerly used in several kinds of little pieces, which are to be found in the ancient poets, such as the sonnet, the rondeau, simple and redoubled, the triolet, the ballad, the chant-royal, the lai, the virelai and the villanelle. These little pieces had rules for the intermingling of the rhymes, but as they are now entirely out of use, we will not speak of them.

§ II.

On Irregular Verses.

We call irregular verses, vers libres, those which have no uniformity either with respect to the number of the syllables or the intermingling of the rhymes, and which are not divided into stanzas; that is to say, that in irregular verse the rhymes may be intermingled agreeably to the will of the writer, who may give to each line the number of syllables he thinks proper, without following any other rules than the general rules of versification.

Irregular verses are used for subjects that require only a simple familiar style: such as fables, tales, and sometimes even comedies; or poems intended to be sung, such as operas and cantatas.

In irregular verses, particularly in those written for music, it is allowed to make three lines rhyme together, whether masculine or feminine.
CONTENTS.

The sounds of the French tongue .......................... 1
General observations ...................................... 2
Table I. The seventeen simple sounds .................. 3
Table II. Coalition of letters representing several of the
seventeen simple sounds .................................. 6
Observations upon the two first tables .................. 11
Table III. The Diphthongs ............................... 13
Of the Y. .................................................. 21
Of consonants ............................................. 22
Of gender .................................................. 36
Table of substantives that the masculine in one signification
and feminine in another .................................. 37
Gender of nouns mostly depending on their termination ..... 41
Table shewing the gender of all words not ending in a mute ib.
Explanation of the abbreviations used in the exercises ...... 44
Introduction to the exercises ................................ 45

PART I.

Of Words considered in their Nature and Inflections.

CHAPTER I.

Of the substantive ......................................... 50
Substantive common ....................................... ib.
Substantive proper ....................................... ib.
Collectives ............................................... 51
Masculine gender ......................................... ib.
Feminine gender ......................................... ib.
Singular number .......................................... ib.
Plural number ............................................ ib.
Of the formation of the plural ............................ 52
Rule .......................................................... ib.
Exceptions .................................................. ib.

CHAPTER II.

Of the article ............................................. 53
Elision of the article ...................................... 54
Contraction of the article ................................ 55
Cases in which contraction does not take place .......... 56
General rules of the article ................................ 57
Of the article in a partitive sense ....................... 58

CHAPTER III.

Of the adjective .......................................... 59
Of the formation of the feminine of adjectives ........... 60
Exceptions .................................................
Contents.

Of the formation of the plural ........................................ 63
Of the degrees of signification of adjectives .................. 64
Of the positive ............................................................... 65
Of the comparative of superiority .................................... 65
Of the comparative of inferiority .................................... 65
Of the comparative of equality ....................................... 65
On meilleur, meillère, and fire ........................................ 66
Of the superlative ........................................................... 67
Agreement of the adjective with the substantive .............. 68
Nouns and adjectives of number ....................................... 70

Chapter IV.

Of the pronoun .................................................................. 73
1. Of personal pronouns .................................................. 73
   Pronouns of the first person ....................................... 73
   Pronouns of the second person .................................... 74
   Pronouns of the third person ....................................... 75
2. Of reflexive and reciprocal pronouns of the third person 77
   Of lui ................................................................. 78
   Of le ................................................................. 79
   Of en ................................................................. 79
   Of y ................................................................. 79
3. Of possessive pronouns ................................................. 80
4. Of relative pronouns .................................................. 82
5. Of demonstrative pronouns .......................................... 84
6. Of indefinite pronouns ................................................. 85
First class ........................................................................ 86
Second class ...................................................................... 88
Third class ........................................................................ 89
Fourth class ....................................................................... 90

Chapter V.

Of the verb ........................................................................ 90
Characteristics of verbs .................................................. 91
The five kinds of verbs .................................................... 92
Of conjunctures ................................................................ 94
Of the auxiliary verb avoir ............................................... 95
   The same with a negative ............................................ 95
   The same verb interrogatively and affirmatively ............ 102
   The same verb interrogatively and negatively ............... 104
Conjugation of the auxiliary verb etre .............................. 105
1st Conjugation in er ..................................................... 112
2d Conjugation in er ....................................................... 112
1st, 2d, 3d, and 4th Branches .......................................... 121
2d Conjugation in ou ....................................................... 127
4th Conjugation in er ...................................................... 131
1st, 2d, 3d, 4th, and 5th Branches ................................. 132
Conjugation of the pronominal verbs ................................ 132
Conjugation of the passive verb ..................................... 135
Contents.

Conjugation of some neuter verbs - - - - - 146
Of the impersonal verbs - - - - - - - - - 147
Conjugation of the impersonal verb FALLOIR - - - - - 148
Conjugation of the impersonal verb Y AVOIR - - - - - 150
Of the irregular verbs - - - - - - - - - 151
Irregular verbs of the first conjugation - - - - - ib.
Irregular verbs of the second conjugation - - - - - - 153
Irregular verbs of the third conjugation - - - - - - 180
Irregular verbs of the first branch of the fourth conjugation 166
Irregular verbs of the second branch - - - - - - 171
Irregular verbs of the third branch - - - - - - 173
Irregular verbs of the fourth branch - - - - - - 174
Table of the primitive tenses of the four regular conjugation 180
Primitive tenses of the regular with some reflective verbs. 181

CHAPTER VI.
Of prepositions - - - - - - - - - - - 183

CHAPTER VII.
Of the adverb - - - - - - - - - - - 190

CHAPTER VIII.
Of conjunctions - - - - - - - - - - - 195

CHAPTER IX.
Of interjections - - - - - - - - - - - 199

PART II.

THE SYNTAX, OR WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR CONSTRUCTION.

CHAPTER I.
Of the substantive - - - - - - - - - - - 201
Of compound words - - - - - - - - - - - ib.

CHAPTER II.
Of the article, and some idiomatical differences - - - - - 203
A table on the use of the article - - - - - - 204

CHAPTER III.
Of the adjective - - - - - - - - - - - 207
Difference of construction between the English and French languages - - - - - - 209
Regimen of the adjectives - - - - - - - - 210

CHAPTER IV.
Of the pronouns - - - - - - - - - - - 213
1. Of personal pronouns - - - - - - - - - ib.
Of the place of personal pronouns - - - - - - ib.
Of personal pronouns used as subject - - - - - - ib.
Of personal pronouns used as regimen - - - - - - 214
2. Of the relative pronouns - - - - - - - - - 218
3. Of pronouns absolute - - - - - - - - - 222
4. Of demonstrative pronouns - - - - - - - - 225
5. Of indefinite pronouns - - - - - - - - - 227
Contents.

First class ........................................ 238
Second class ....................................... 239
Third class ........................................ 233
Fourth class ....................................... 227

CHAPTER V.

Of the verb
Agreement of the verb with the subject ........................................ 242
Of the regimen of verbs ........................................ 242
Of the nature and use of moods and tenses ........................................ 241
Of the indicative ........................................ 241
Of the conditional ........................................ 241
Of the imperative ........................................ 241
Of the subjective ........................................ 241
Of the infinitive ........................................ 241
Of the participle present ........................................ 241
Of the participle past ........................................ 241
Agreement of the participle past with its subject ........................................ 241
Agreement of the participle with its regimen ........................................ 241

CHAPTER VI.

Of the adverb ........................................ 262
The place of the adverb ........................................ 262

CHAPTER VII.

Of the conjunction ........................................ 264
Of the conjunction qui ........................................ 264
Government of conjunctions ........................................ 264
Conjunctions that are followed by an infinitive ........................................ 264
Conjunctions that govern the indicative ........................................ 264
Conjunctions that govern the subjunctive ........................................ 264

PART III.

OF WORDS CONSIDERED IN THEIR PARTICULAR RULES OR IDIOMS.

CHAPTER I.

Of the substantive ........................................ 273

CHAPTER II.

Of the article ........................................ 276
Cases in which the article is to be used ........................................ 276
Cases in which the article is not to be used ........................................ 276

CHAPTER III.

Of the adjective ........................................ 286
Of the adjective with the article ........................................ 286
The place of the adjective ........................................ 288
Regimen of the adjective ........................................ 288
Adjectives of number ........................................ 288

CHAPTER IV.

Of the pronoun ........................................ 295
PRONOUNS PERSONAL, their office ........................................ 295

## Contents

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>On the pronoun soi</td>
<td>309</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cases where the pronouns elle, elles, eux, lui, leur, may apply to things</td>
<td>303</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>A difficulty about the pronoun le cleared up</td>
<td>305</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repetition of the personal pronouns</td>
<td>308</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relation of the pronoun of the third person to a noun expressed before</td>
<td>311</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Explanation of some difficulties attendant on the possessive pronouns</td>
<td>312</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relative pronouns. Of qui</td>
<td>317</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of que</td>
<td>320</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of lequel and dont</td>
<td>321</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of quoi and ou</td>
<td>322</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Absolute pronouns</td>
<td>324</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Demonstrative pronouns</td>
<td>326</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indefinite pronouns. Of on and quiconque</td>
<td>330</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of chacun</td>
<td>331</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of personne, l'un et l'autre, and ni l'un ni l'autre</td>
<td>332</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of tout</td>
<td>333</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of quelque que and quel que</td>
<td>335</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Chapter V.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Of the verb. Agreement of the verb with its subject</td>
<td>336</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of the collective partitive</td>
<td>338</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Place of the subject with regard to the verb</td>
<td>340</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Government of verbs</td>
<td>344</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of the use, proper or accidental, of moods and tenses.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Indicative</td>
<td>346</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Use of the conditional</td>
<td>353</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Remark on the use of the conditional and future</td>
<td>355</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Use of the subjunctive</td>
<td>356</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relations between the tenses of the indicative</td>
<td>359</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relations between the tenses of the subjunctive and those of the indicative</td>
<td>361</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Relations between the tenses of the different moods</td>
<td>366</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Of the infinitive</td>
<td>370</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Chapter VI.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Of prepositions</td>
<td>373</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The use of the article with prepositions</td>
<td>375</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Repetition of the prepositions</td>
<td>276</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Government of prepositions</td>
<td>377</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

### Chapter VII.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Section</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Of the adverb. Of the negative ne</td>
<td>378</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Where is the place of the negative ?</td>
<td>ib.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>When is pas to be used in preference to point</td>
<td>379</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>When may both pas and point be omitted</td>
<td>380</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>When ought both pas and point to be omitted</td>
<td>ib.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On plus and avantage</td>
<td>385</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>On si, amini, tant, and autant</td>
<td>386</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
### Contents.

**Chapter VIII.**
- Of grammatical construction 386
- Of inversion 391
- Of the ellipsis 392
- Of the pleonasm 392
- Of the syllepsis 393

**Chapter IX.**
- Of grammatical discords 394
- Of amphibologies 395
- Of gallicisms 396
- Free exercises 400
- Phrases on some difficulties of the French language 411
- On the collective partitive 412
- On some verbs which cannot be conjugated with AVOIR 416
- On words of quantity 412
- On the personal pronouns 412
- On SOI, EU, SOI-MÊME and EU-MÊME 413
- On the relative pronouns 414
- On the demonstrative pronouns 415
- On the verb AVOIR employed impersonally 416
- Miscellaneous phrases 418
- Phrases in which he article is omitted 423
- On the pronoun LE 425
- On the participle past 427
- On the principal relations of moods and tenses 429
- On the negative NE 432
- On some delicacies of the French language 435
- Treatise on French Versification 435

**Article I.**
- On the construction of French verses 435
  1. On the different kinds of verses 435
  2. On the rhyme 435
  3. On the cæsura 436
  4. On the junction of vowels 438
  5. On vowels forming or not forming diphthongs 439
  6. On the running of verses 440
  7. On poetic licences and words not to be used 441

**Article II.**
- On the intermingling of verses 443
  1. On stanzas 444
  2. On irregular verses 448

**Finis.**